



*Library* of the *Theological Seminary.*

PRINCETON, N. J.

Collection of Puritan Literature.

*Division*

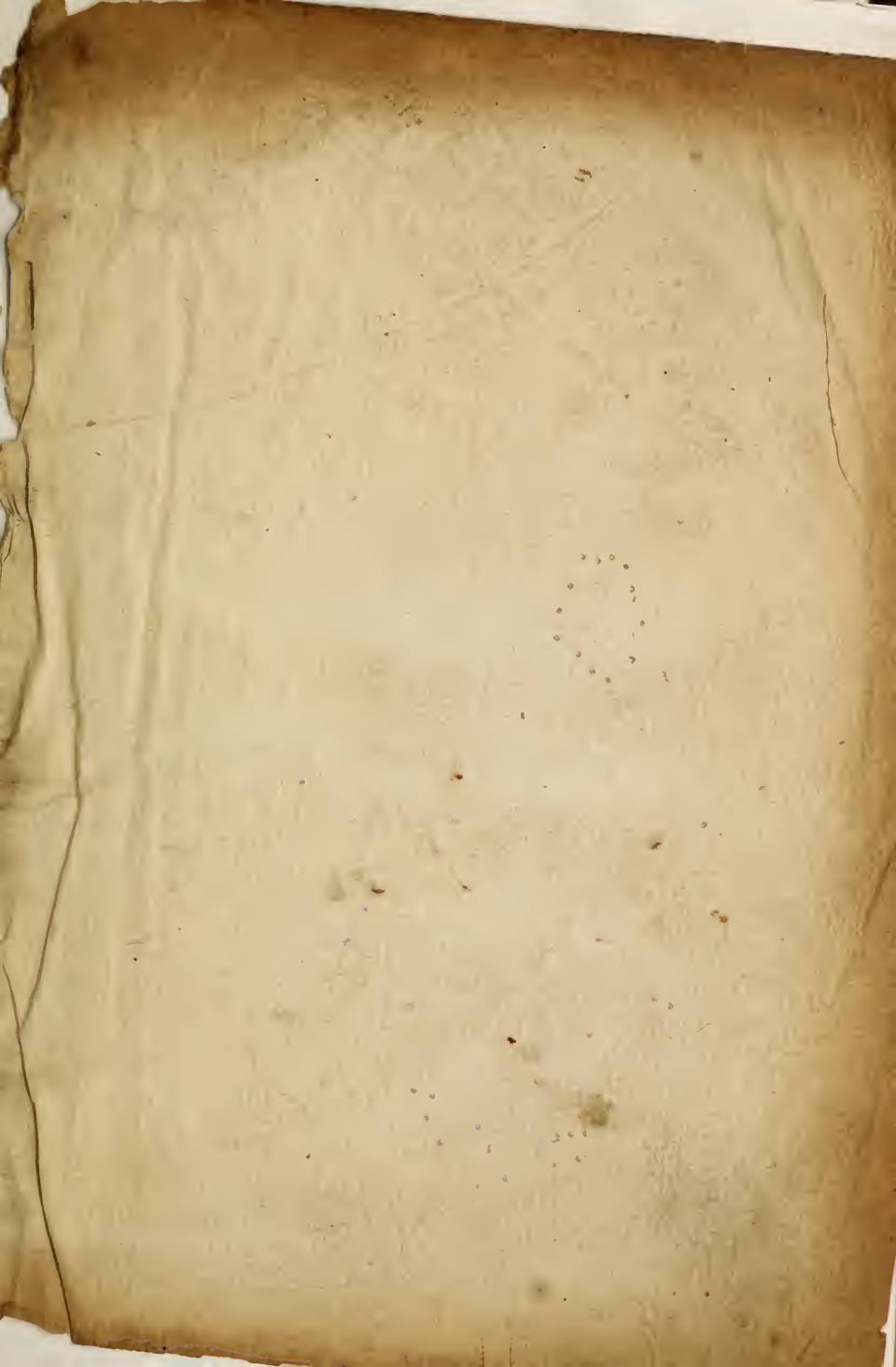
*Section*

*Number*

SCC

9183







THE  
NEW COVENANT,  
OR  
THE SAINTS  
PORTION.

*A Treatise*  
Unfolding the All-sufficiencie of  
GOD, Mans uprightness, and  
the Covenant of grace.

*Delivered*  
In fourteen Sermons vpon Gen. 17. 1. 2.  
*whereunto are aduyned*  
Foure Sermons vpon Eccles. 9. 1. 2. 11. 12.

By the late faithfull and worthy Minister  
of Iesus Christ,

JOHN PRESTON.

Dr. in Divinitie, Chappaine in ordinary to his  
Maieſtie, Maſter of Emmanuel Colledge in Cam-  
bridge, and ſometimes Preacher of Lincolnes Inne.

The ſixth Edition, corrected.

He hath given a portion to them that feare him: he will  
ever be mindfull of his Covenant. Plal. 133. 5.

LONDON

Printed by I.D for Nicolas Bourne, and  
are to be ſold at the South entrance  
of the Royall Exchange. 1621.



THE BATHS  
HOT SPRING





ILLVSTRISSIMIS, ET HONORATISSIMIS VIRIS,  
THEOPHILO COMITI LINCOLNIENSI,  
ET  
GVLIELMO VICE-COMITI SAY, ET SELE,  
DOMINIS SVIS SVBMISSISSIME COLENDIS  
HAS  
IOHANNIS PRESTONI SS. THEOL. DOCT.  
ET  
COLLEGII IMMANVELIS MAGISTRI  
PRIMITIAS  
DEVOTISSIMI, TAM AVTHORIS, DVM VIVERET,  
QVAM IPSORVM, QVI SVPERSVNT, OBSEQVII  
TESTIMONIVM  
L. M. D. D. D.  
RICHARDVS SIBS.  
IOHANNES DAVENPORT.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
LIBRARY

PHYSICS DEPARTMENT  
5712 S. UNIVERSITY AVENUE  
CHICAGO, ILL. 60637

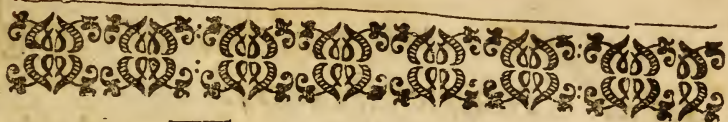
RECEIVED  
MAY 15 1964


FROM  
DR. J. J. KATZ

200 EAST TRINITY AVENUE  
CHICAGO, ILL. 60611

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
LIBRARY

PHYSICS DEPARTMENT  
5712 S. UNIVERSITY AVENUE  
CHICAGO, ILL. 60637



 To the Reader.



*I had beene much to  
haue beene desired (if  
it had so pleased the  
Father of Spirits )  
that this worthy man  
had survived the pub-  
lishing of these, and other his Lectures: for  
then, no doubt, they would haue come forth  
more refined, and digested ; For, though  
there was very little or no mistake in ta-  
king them from his mouth, yet preaching,  
and writing, haue their severall graces.  
Things livened by the expression of the  
speaker, sometimes take well, which after,  
vpon a mature review, seeme either super-  
fluous, or flat. And we oft see men, very  
able*



T O T H E

able to render their conceipts in writing,  
yet not the happiest speakers.

Yet we, considering (not so much what  
might haue beene, as) what now may be for  
the service of the Church, thought good ra-  
ther to communicate them thus, then that  
they should die with the Author. He was  
a man of an exact judgement, and quicke  
apprehension, an acute Reasoner, actiue in  
good, choyce in his notions, one who made  
it his chiefe ayme to promote the cause of  
Christ, and the good of the Church, which  
moued him to single out arguments answe-  
rable, on which he spent his best thoughts.  
He was honoured of God to be an instru-  
ment of much good, whereunto he had ad-  
uantage by those eminent places he was  
called vnto. As he had a short race to  
run, so he made speed, and did much in a  
little time. Though he was of an higher e-  
levation,



R E A D E R.

levation, and straine of spirit then ordinarie, yet out of loue to doe good, he could frame his conceits so, as might sute with ordinary vnderstandings. A little before his death (as we were informed by the Right Honourable the Lord Viscount Say, and Sele, in whose pietie, wisdom, and fidelitie, he put great repose) he was desirous that we should peruse what of his was fit for publike vse.

We are not Ignorant, that it is a thing subject to censure, to seeme bold, and wittie in another mans worke, and therefore as little is altered, as may be. And we desire the Reader, rather to take in good part, that which is intended for publike good, than to catch at imperfections, considering they were but taken, as they fell from him speaking. And we intreate those, that haue any thing of his in their hands,  
that

T O T H E R E A D E R .

that they would not be hastie, for private respects, to publish them, till we, whom the Author put in trust, haue perused them. Wee purpose ( by Gods helpe ) that what shall be judged fit, shall come forth. Wee send forth these Sermons of Gods All-Sufficiencie, Mans Vprightnes, and the Covenant of Grace first, as being first prepared by him that had the Copies, and because, the right vnderstanding of these poynts hath a chiefe influence into a Christian life. The LORD giue a blessing answerable, and continue still to send forth such faithfull Labourers into his Harvest.

R I C H A R D S I B S .

I O H N D A V E N P O R T .

A Briefe Collection of the Prin-  
cipall heads in the ensuing Treatise.

DOCTRINE I.

**D**oubting of GODS All-sufficiencie, the cause  
of all unevenesse in our wayes towardes  
God. Pag 4

Proved by instance in three sorts of men. 5

REASONS.

1. From the desire of happinesse. 9
2. From the nature of sinne. 10
3. From the nature of sinceritie. 10
4. From the nature of faith. 12

V S E.

Shewing the nature, and cause of sinne, in diverse  
instances. 15

DOCT. 2.

God is All-sufficient.

REASONS.

1. God is the originall and universall cause of all  
the excellencie, that is found in the Creatures. 27
2. God is the onely Author of good and evil that  
is done to the Creatures. 29

Difference betweene the All-sufficiencie of God,  
and that of the creature in two things. 36

Gods All-sufficiencie in himselfe, proved by six  
things. 40

Gods All-sufficiencie to vs. ibid

1. In keeping vs from evil. 42

2. In filling vs with all good. 43

The insufficiencie of the creature to make vs hap-  
pie



# THE CONTENTS.

*pie, proved by six reasons, and cleared by Scriptures, and instances.* 44

## V S E S.

- |   |     |
|---|-----|
| 1. Teaching how to guide our comfort.   | 61  |
| 2. To be content with God alone.  | 67  |
| 3. To looke onely to God in our wayes.  | 84  |
| 4. To comfort vs in our imperfect obedience.  | 102 |
| 5. To perswade vs to enter into Covenant with God, wherein is expressed, Gods All-sufficiencie. | 107 |
| 1. To forgive our sinnes.   | 109 |
| 2. To sanctifie vs.   | 117 |
| 3. To provide outward good things for vs.   | 126 |

Two deductions from what had  
beene delivered before.

### 1. Deduct:

- |   |     |
|---|-----|
| <i>There is an insufficiencie in the creature, proved by 7. arguments more, whereof 3. are taken from reason, and 3. other, out of Ecclesiastes, and the seventh, from Salomons experience.</i> | 135 |
| <i>Of the vanitie of wisdom.</i>  | 147 |
| <i>Of follie.</i>   | 148 |
| <i>Of outward things, six specified.</i>  | 149 |
| <i>Seaven inconveniences, in outward things.</i>  | 151 |
| <i>Two things acknowledged in the Creature by Salomon.</i>  | 154 |

### 2. Deduct:

- |  |     |
|--|-----|
| <i>There is All-sufficiencie in God, proved by his providence.</i> | 158 |
| <i>Seaven tryals of beleeving Gods All-sufficiencie.</i>           | 163 |

DOCT: 3.



# THE CONTENTS.

## DOCT. 3.

*Men are more or lesse perfect, as they are perswaded of Gods All-sufficiencie.* 175

### REASONS.

1. *It is Gods argument to perswade to perfectnesse.* ibid

2. *This persuasion heales inordinate selfelove.* 176

### V S E.

*To labour to be perswaded.* ibid

## DOCT. 4.

*A Christians life like a walke.* 181

*A Christians life agreeing with a walke in six things.* 184

### V S E.

1. *To consider the end of our being in the world.* 193

2. *To ponder every step.* 195

3. *Not to judge men by some particular actions.* 210

## DOCT. 5.

*Whosoever hath interest in Gods All-sufficiencie, must be a perfect man.* 214

### REASONS.

1. *Else the first Adam should be more powerful to communicate sinne, then the second to instill grace.* ibid

2. *Else the workes of redemption should not be perfect.* 215

3. *Else Gods commands should be impossible.* 216

4. *Else the Covenant were not mutuall betweene God and vs.* 217

5. *Else all that we doe is to no purpose.* 218

# THE CONTENTS.

*Sinceritie, or perfectnesse, set forth by fine expressions.* 219

## V S E.

*To examine whether we be perfect, or no.* 235

*Six Properties of a perfect heart.* 236

*Six effects of sinceritie, or perfectnesse.* 281

## DOCT. 6.

*God enters into Covenant with all those that are faithfull.* 317

*A three-fold difference betweene the Covenant of workes, and of grace.* 318

*Six differences betweene the Old and New Testament.* 326

## V S E S.

1. *Shewing the goodnesse of God, in entring into Covenant with us.* 330

2. *To labour for assurance of forgiuenesse.* 333

3. *Shewing that spirituall things are better then temporall.* 336

4. *To know on what ground wee looke for salvation.* 364

### 5. Things in the Covenant.

1. *The Covenant it selfe.* 368

2. *The condition of it, namely, Faith, 4. reasons why it is so.* 371

3. *The confirmation of it in 4. things.* 351

4. *The parts of the Covenant, which are 3.* 357

5. *The objections against it.* 382

*How to know whether wee be in the Covenant, three wayes.* 388

1. *By faith.* *ibid*

2. *If we be in Christ, and haue his spirit.* 392

3. *Wayes*

# THE CONTENTS.

3. Wayes to know whether we haue the spirit.	
1. By that which goes before, namely, the spirit of bondage.	ibid
2. By the things which accompany it, which are	3. 394
3. By the consequents of the spirit, which are	6. 417
The third way to know whether we be in the Covenant, by our owne knowledge.	
Two properties of saving knowledge.	426
V S E.	
To labour for saving knowledge.	444
When the Covenant is broken.	458
Two rules to know whether wee haue broken the Covenant.	
V S E.	
To comfort our selues in the promises of the Covenant.	460
1. The promises of justification.	
2. Of sanctification.	467
3. The promises of the things of this life.	473
Instances of applying the promises.	476
Difference betwixt the wicked and godly in the same tryall.	478
DOCT. 7.	
It is a hard thing to be perswaded of Gods All-sufficiencie.	
483	
REASONS.	
1. God is onely wise, and therefore onely able to perswade.	
2. God onely knowes the severall turnings of the heart.	489
3. God onely can amend the heart.	490
V S E.	
Shewing why one man trusteth God, when another doth not.	
491	
492	



# THE CONTENTS.

## DOCT. 8.

- All things are in Gods hands.* 498  
*In what manner all things are said to be in Christs hands.* ibid  
 Reasons why all things are committed into Christs hands.  
 1. *That we might honour the Sonne.* 501  
 2. *That God may dispence his All-sufficiēcy in a way be seeming himselfe, & sutable to our frailtie.* ib:  
 3. *That our estate might be sure.* ibid  
 4. *That no flesh should rejoyce in it selfe.* 502

### VSES.

1. *Not to come to God without Christ.* 503  
 2. *To come with confidence in him.* 504  
 3. *To teach vs thankfulnessse.* 506

## DOCT. 9.

- All men divided into two rankes.* 507  
 3. *Reasons of it.* ibid

### VSES.

1. *Shewing that there is no Purgatory or Limbus.* ibid  
 2. *To trie in which ranke we are.* 508  
 3. *Tryals to know in which condition we are.* 510

## DOCT. 10.

*Things fall out alike to good & bad, in this life.* 529

### REASONS.

1. *God will haue it so to trie men.* 534  
 2. *To spare men.* 535  
 3. *To hide events from men.* 536  
 4. *To bring forth his treasures of wrath and mercy.* ibid  
 5. *Because this life is the time of striving.* 539  
*God will not dispense things promiscuously alwayes, for foure Reasons.* 540

### VSE.



# THE CONTENTS.

## V S E.

1. *Not to be discouraged in the Churches misery.* 543
2. *Not to account prosperitie and adversitie truly good, or evill.* 551
3. *Not to judge of Gods love or hatred by outward things.* ibid

## DOCT. II.

*All things under the Sunne, are subject to vanitie.* 555

1. *Naturall things.* 556
2. *Morall things,* 3. *instanced in.* ibid
3. *Great places.* ibid

## V S E S.

1. *To see the change that sinne hath made in the world.* 558
2. *To see the vanitie of man.* 559
3. *Shewing what an evill choise it is to loose heaven, to gaine the creature.* 560
4. *Not to desire outward things over-much.* 561
5. *To labour to be weaned from them.* 562
6. *To see vanitie in all earthly things.* 563

## DOCT. 12.

*Men of greatest abilities often disappointed of their ends.* 561

## REASONS.

1. *Because no man is strong in his owne strength.* 561
2. *Because men misse their times.* 564
3. *From the Changes appointed by God.* 565
4. *From suddaine accidents.* 567

## V S E S.

1. *Not to boast.* 569 God

# THE CONTENTS.

God delights to crosse men in carnall confidence,  
for three reasons. 27

2. Not to be discouraged in want of outward pre-  
parations, for three Reasons. 574

3. Not to joy or sorrow over-much for good or ill  
successe. 581

4. Not to make flesh our arme. 584

## DOCT. 13.

There is a time allotted to every action, 3. sorts of  
actions mentioned. 591

## REASONS.

1. Things cannot be done in any other time. 593

2. Things are beautifull in their time. ibid

3. It is Gods prerogative to appoint the times. 594

## DOCT. 14.

It is hard to finde out the right times. 594

The times are kept secret. ibid

## REASONS.

1. To teach us watchfulnesse. ibid

2. To teach us to feare, and depend upon  
God. 595

## DOCT. 15.

Because men misse the time, they fall into mise-  
ric. ibid

Instances of missing the right time. 596

## VSE.

To watch our times in doing actions, 11. particu-  
lars mentioned. 600

5. Causes of missing the right time. 605

2. Directions to finde out the right time. 606

# FINIS.



# OF GODS ALL-SVFFICIENCY.

GENESIS 17. 1.

*I am GOD All-sufficient.*



Because in the performance of all the Duties of Sanctification, *Sinceritie* is all in all, therefore I haue chosen this Text, that you may not be deceived. It is true; many things are very excellent

Sinceritie is  
required in all  
Duties.

if they be right. There is no question but the Diamond is very precious, if it be a true Diamond, but if it be false, it is nothing worth: If you take a precious Balme, you make no question of the thing, and of the excellencie of it in generall, all the question is, whether it be right or no, and so in the graces of *Gods* Spirit, especially, seeing they concerne our saluation; It much



The ground  
of sinceritie.

concernes vs, to know whether they be right or counterfeit; and therefore you see the condition that *God* requires here of *Abraham*, is, that he be upright, and perfect, without *hypocrisie*; (so the word signifieth) *Walke before me without hypocrisie*. Now we haue rather chosē this Text then any other, because it sets forth the ground of all sinceritie, and perfect walking with *God*, which is, even this apprehension well settled in the heart, that *God is All-sufficient*: for this is the *Lords* precept, *walke before me, and be thou perfect*, or upright, or sincere, let it not be in *hypocrisie*: and this is the motiue that he useth to perswade him to it, *I am All-sufficient*; As if hee should say, if there were any defect in me, if thou didst need or couldest desire any thing that were not to be had in mee, and thou mightest haue it else-where, perhaps thy heart might be imperfect in walking towards me, thou mightest then step out from me to take in advantages else-where; but seeing *I am All-sufficient*, since I haue enough in me to fulfill all thy desires, since I am every way an adæquate object, that if thou lookest about, and considerest all that thy soule can wish for, thou maiest haue it in me, why then shouldest not thou consecrate thy selfe to me alone? Why then shouldest thou be vneuen in thy wayes, serving mee sometimes by fits, and sometimes the Creature? For there is nothing in the Creature, but thou maiest finde it in me, *I am All-sufficient, I am All-sufficient*, therefore *walke before mee, and be perfect*.

Yet

Yet these words containe somewhat more, which you may see by that which follows, *I will make my Covenant betweene me and thee, and I will multiplie thee exceedingly.* The ground of all our sinceritie is the *Covenant*, that is between *God* and vs. Now these words doe the most briefly that I finde of any in the Scriptures, expresse the *Covenant* betweene *God* and vs on both sides, for they are but the summe of the *Covenāt*, which in other places of Scripture is explicated, and set forth more at large; so that the opening of the *Covenant* on both sides, is the ground of all the *sinceritie*, of all that obedience that we yeeld to *God*: And therefore, I say, you shall not onely haue occasion from this Text to examine the graces of *Gods* spirit in you, and the actions that flow from them, whether they be *sincere & perfect*, but likewise we will shew you y<sup>e</sup> ground of this *sinceritie*, whence it ariseth, and how it is wrought in every mans heart. And thus these words containe the *Covenant*, sayth the *Lord* to *Abraham*, *I will be thy God.* On the other side, *thou shalt be mine.* Now hee shewes what a kinde of *God* he will be to him, *I will be All-sufficient* to thee, which consists in two things, if you compare this with *Gen. 15. 1.* *I will be thy Buckler to preserue thee from all euill:* And againe, *I will be thy exceeding great reward:* that is, I will not only be a *Shield*, but I will be a *Sunne* to thee; I will both preserue thee from all euill, & I will fill thee with all good things, *I will compass thee about with mercy and louing kindnesse:* so that thou shalt finde, that *I will be an exceeding*

*Gen. 15. 1.*  
All sufficien-  
cy of *G O D*,  
wherein it  
consists.

great reward. So God expresseth himselfe to *Abraham*. And this is the *Covenant* on *G O D S* part. Now that which is required on *Abrahams* part, is, that he be the *Lords*, as the *Lord* is his, for so you see in the words following. The question onely is, in what manner *Abraham* shall be the *Lords*; how that shall be declared? Sayth he, It is not an empty relation, but thou must shew that thou art mine by *walking before me*. And yet it must not be any kinde of *walking before the Lord*, but it must be a *perfect walking before him*. *Walke before me, & be perfect*, and therefore it is added, *I will make my Covenant*, that is, this is the *Covenant*, of which *Circumcision* was but a *Signe*, for it was instituted presently, as we see in the words following.

There are three especiall poynts that we will gather out of the words.

The first is from the connexion, and wee will begin with that, because it is a preparation to the other two: In that the *Lord* vseth this as an argument to *Abraham*, *I am All-sufficient*, therefore *Walke before me, and be thou perfect*; we may obserue this; that

Doct. 1.  
Doubting of  
Gods All-suffi-  
ciency, the cause  
of departure  
from GOD,  
and of vneven  
walking with  
him.

*The cause of all departure from God, of all vnevennesse in our wayes towards God, is from hence, that wee do not thinke God to be All-sufficient.*

As on the other side, the cause of all our *sinceritie and perfectnesse*, ariseth hence, that we doe apprehend him to be *All-sufficient*. This you see evidently



vidently ariseth from the words; for thence is the force of the Argument, *I am All-sufficient*, therefore *walke before me, and be perfect*. My Beloved, it is evident, that the cause of every mans keeping off from *God*, the cause of his vnevennesse after he is come in to him, is from hence, that men thinke not *God* to be *All-sufficient*; for if a man had enough in the *Lord*, he would never goe out from him; but because he wants something, he desires something that is not in him, or he feares something, that he thinkes hee cannot keepe off from him: hence it comes to passe that he steppes out from *God*, he goeth out of the wayes of his Commandements. And therefore I say, the cause of every mans departure from *God*, the cause of his keeping off from *God*, or of his vnevennesse in the wayes of *God*, is from hence, that he thinks not *God* to be *All-sufficient*; and this you shall see in three sorts of men.

As in three  
sorts of men.

First, there is a generation of men, that liue as *without God in the world*, and that looke not towards *God* at all, that make conscience of nothing, and what is the reason of that? but because they thinke, they haue sufficient of their owne, and therefore they *walke in their owne wayes*, and stand vpon their owne bottome, and they loue themselves, & serue themselves altogether; and apply not themselves to the *Lord* at all: and therefore whensoever any man is brought vnto *God*, the worke is, to take him off from his owne bottome, to shew him his owne *insufficiencie* in himselfe, and the emptinesse of himselfe, and of every creature,

Such as per-  
forme no du-  
ties to God.

Luke 15.

Acts 16.

Acts 2.

Acts 9.

ture, and the *All-sufficiencie* that is in *God*, and vpon this ground, he comes in to *God*. As you know, the *Prodigall Sonne*, when he saw that he could not subsist longer, but he must perish, if he stayed where he was; and saw againe, if he went home to his *Fathers house*, there was meate enough; this was that that moved him to goe home: this course the *Lord* takes with all whom hee brings home to him; as we see in the *Taylor*: and in those *Act. 2. They were pricked in their hearts*; and in *Paul*, when the *light* shined about him, and he was stricken from his horse, *Act. 9.* It was all but to shew them their vanitie, to take them off from their owne bottoms, to shew them their owne *insufficiencie*, and then he discovered that *All-sufficiencie* that was in himselfe; for no man will change but for the better, he will not deny himselfe, and leaue what he hath, till something that is better be propounded vnto him: So, I say, the cause why men come not in, is, because they haue an opinion of *sufficiencie* in themselues, and in the creature, and they apprehend not an *All-sufficiencie* in *God*: that is, an *All-sufficiencie* to be in him alone.

2  
Such as doe somewhat, but not thoroughly.

Math. 13.

A second sort of men are such as doe come in, and performe many things, and *bring forth some fruit*, and become professors of the feare of *God*, and yet they do it not throughly, but by halues; the cause of this is likewise from hence, that they doe not apprehend *God* to be *All-sufficient*; for if they did, they would be *perfect* with him; as we see the *Second* and *Third Ground* ( for that *Parable* doth



doth but shew you the kindes of Professors) they were all such as professed *the feare of the Lord*, that are there spoken of, for we see, they *brought forth fruit, They received the Word with Ioy*. What was the reason the *second Ground* was not perfect with the *Lord*? Because they thought him not to be a *Buckler* strong enough to beare off all evils, to beare off all persecutiō. What was the reason the *Third Ground* did it not? Because they thought there was something in *riches*, in *pleasures*, in *divers lusts*, that they could not haue in the *Lord*, so they departed from him: Onely the *Fourth Ground* kept close, because they did apprehend all to be in the *Lord* that they desired, they did apprehend him to be strong enough to deliver them from all the things they feared.

Note.

The third sort of men are such as are regenerate, which yet are subject to many slips and fals, to many turnings aside: And the cause of all this is, that they apprehend not *God* to be *All-sufficient*. As for example, what was the reason that *Abraham* when he went downe into *Egypt* (being driven thither by reason of *Famine*) saved himselfe with a lye, saying that *Sarah* was his *Sister*, and not his wife? but because he thought *God* was not able to keepe him and defend him. If he had thought him to haue beene *All-sufficient*, hee would not haue done it. What was the reason that *Moses* when *God* sent him on a message into *Egypt*, was so backward to performe it? But because he thought that the *Lord* was not *All-sufficient*; For he hath two reasons why he would not

3  
Such as are regenerate.

Instances.



goe; One was, he wanted speech, he wanted abilitie and gifts; *He was of a stammering tongue*; And the other was, those were aliue, *that* (he thought) *sought his life*: If he had thought that *God* was able to haue beene with his tongue, to haue strengthened him, and to haue improved his gifts, and to haue inabled him to y<sup>e</sup> seruice: if he had thought likewise, that he had been able to haue defended him from those *that sought his life*, he would neuer haue disobeyed the Commandement of *God*, and beene backward to performe it as he was.

And so likewise *Rebecca*, What was the reason she vsed that wyle & shift, that inordinate meanes to bring a good thing to passe, to obtaine the *bles-sing*, when *Iacob* and she joyned in lying to *Isaack*, but because they thought *God* was not *Sufficient* to performe that Promise? For the *bles-sing* belonged to *Iacob*, & no doubt but he should haue had it in due time. And so it is in all the faults of the *Saints*; which are hence, because they apprehend not *God* to be *All-sufficient*; even as it was in the first sinne of *Adam*, and the *Angels*; what was the reason that *Adam* fell from *God* at the first? It was because he desired something that he thought he could not finde in the *Lord*, he desired to *know good and euill*, which he thought he should not haue in the *Lord*, hee thought the *Lord* had kept it from him, and therefore he stepped out from the *Lord*, to *eate that Apple*, vsing that as a meanes to obtaine his desire. And this, indeede, was the cause of his falling away. So likewise the cause of the falling of the *Angels*, 1 *Tim.* 3. 6. the Apostle sayth

sayth there, that a Minister was not to be a yong Scholler, least *he be puffed vp; and fall into the condemnation of the Divell*: That is, least he be puffed vp, and fall into the same sinne, for which the *Devill* was condemned, that is, to be puffed vp, that is, to haue the desires enlarged beyond the bounds which *God* hath set them, to desire more then they should haue, to be *exalted above measure*, that measure, that *God* had appointed them, that is, they desire more, they looked after more, they thought there was not an *All-sufficiency* in *God* for them: This was the sinne of the *Angels* that fell. And as it was the cause of their first fall, so it is the cause of all the sinnes that haue beene committed since. And the reasons of it in briefe are these.

First, it ariseth from the desire of happines that is implanted in every mans nature. Happines, you know, is a compound which consists of all good things, so that none must be wanting; there is no good thing but it must be an ingredient into it. Now the nature of man is made by *God* to desire happines, every man naturally desires happines, and may desire it, if there be any scantnes in this, if there be any evill that lies vpon him that is not removed, or if there be any good that he desires and wants, that he doth not enjoy; (I say) his heart cannot rest, for he desires happines; therefore if he find not an *All-sufficiency* in *God*, so that nothing be wanting, that his heart can desire or looke after, it is impossible he should cleave close vnto him, but he will be ready to step out from him.

1 Tim. 3. 6.

The Devils sinne, what.

I  
From mans  
desire of hap-  
pines.



2

From the nature of sinne.

Secondly, this will appeare from the nature of sinne: the definition that the *Schoole-men* giue of sinne, ( which we may receiue ) is this, that it is the conversion of a man from *God* to the Creature, from the *immutable God* to the mutable creature: In every sinne there is such a turning of the soule from *God* to the Creature. Now, it is certaine, if a man did finde an *All-sufficiency* in *God*, he would never turne from him, nor seeke to the Creature; even as the *Bee*, if it did finde hony enough in one flower, would not hasten to another, but because it doth not, it goes from flower to flower: And so is the nature of man (as *Salomon* expresseth it, saying, that ) *He hastened to outward things*, that is, when he fell vpon one he found not enough in it, he made hast to another and to another, so the nature of man, if it did finde sweetnesse, and comfort, and contentment enough in *God*, it would not turne from him to the creature; but because, in his sence, the object is too narrow, there is somewhat he would haue more, he looks over the Pale, as it were, he seeth something that he desireth, and that causeth him to step out, whereas if he had enough at home, if he had enough in the *Lord*, hee would not goe out from him, to turne inordinately to the Creature vpon any occasion.

Simile.

3

From the nature of sinceritie.

Thirdly, this will appeare likewise from the nature of *sinceritie*, and *perfect walking with God*, for to walke perfectly with *God*, is nothing but this, when a man chooseth *God*, so that he cleaues to him alone, whereas doublenesse of minde stands

in



in this, when a man is distracted betweene *God* and some other object; I say, betweene *God* and riches, betweene *God* and credit, betweene *God* and pleasure, and is sometime applying himselfe to one, and sometime to another, and so he goes a double way. So that when a man hath two principall objects, & two principal ends, vpon which his eye is set, when he hath two inward principles within, that are the cause of his motion, this way and that way, such a man is a *double minded man*; he is a single hearted man that chooseth *God* alone, & though he walke imperfectly with him, yet he chooseth him.

Now if a man apprehend *Gods All-sufficiency*, he will choose him alone, if he doe not, it is impossible he should choose him alone; but he will joyne somewhat else with him; for if he thinke there is but a partiall *sufficiency* in *God*, and that there is some *sufficiency* in any Creature besides, it must needs be that he must haue an eye vpon both, and then his wayes will be vneuen, then his way is *vnsstable*; and, therefore, I say, the cause of that instabilitie to which men are subject, is, because they doe not apprehend *God* to be *All-sufficient*, for you must know this by the way, that there is a double instabilitie (that word is vsed in *Iam. 1. 8.* *A double minded man is vnsstable in all his wayes.*) One is an instability between two objects which makes vp all the *sufficiency* that he desires, so that there is a part of that *sufficiency* in one, & part of it in another. The second is an instabilitie in following one object that hee hath chosen.

A double minded man, who.

Instabilitie double: *Iam. 1. 8.*

Indeede, the second instabilitie all the *Saints* are subject vnto, all regenerate men are vnstable thus *in all their wayes*, they cannot sticke fast to *God*, and walke perfectly with him. But herein is their *sinceritie*, they choose him, they pitch vpon him. Now the ground of it is, they apprehend him to be *All-sufficient*; though this apprehension be not alwayes kept strong, it is not alway liuely, and actiue in their mindes, their perswasion is not alway full and present, and therefore they are ready to step out. So the latter instabilitie befalls the *Saints*, the former befalls hypocrites, and both the one and the other instabilitie still proceede from hence, that we apprehend not *God* to be *All-sufficient*. Holy men haue that apprehension in the maine, but not in a constant tenour at all times; Hypocrites haue it not so much as in the maine.

4  
From the nature of faith.

Heb. 3. 12.

Gen. 15.

Fourthly. This truth will likewise appeare from the nature of *faith*: that which makes a man *righteous*, that which sanctifies a man throughout is *faith*: That which is the cause of all vnrighteousnesse in vs is vnbeliefe, for it causeth a man to depart from the Lord: as Heb. 3. 12. Take heed least there be in any of you an euill heart of vnbeliefe to depart from the living God. In this sence *faith* is said to be accounted for *righteousnesse*. Abraham beleued God. Gen. 15. God indeede made the same propposition that he doth here, for substance, he tels him what he would doe for him, and, sayth the Text, *Abraham beleued God, and it was accounted to him for righteousnesse*. Now, it was accounted  
to



Rom. 4.

to him for *righteousnesse*, chiefly, in this sence, as it is interpreted *Rom. 4.* that his very taking of the *promise*, and his accepting of the *Covenant*, in that he did receiue that which *God* gaue, that put him within the *Covenant*, and therefore the *Lord* reckoned him a *righteous* man, even for that very acceptance, and beleeving. But that is not all: but likewise he accounted *faith* to him for *righteousnes*, because *faith* doth sanctifie, and make a man *righteous*: and therefore *Beloved*. (by the way) wonder not at this, that we put so much vpon *faith*: for let a man beleeve, that *God is All-sufficient*, which is the *Covenant*, for *justifying faith* is but a beleeving of that part of the *Covenant*, and inabling a man to keepe the other part which is required; and, I say, it makes a man *righteous*: for when a man beleeves that *God is All-sufficient*, it will cause a man to giue vp himselfe to the *Lord* againe, when he beleeves the *Lord* to be all in all things to him, it inableth him to be all in all things to the *Lord* againe, that is, to be *holy to the Lord in all manner of conversation*. It knits his heart vnto the *Lord*. It sanctifieth a man throughout, it makes him *peculiar* to the *Lord*, it makes him wholly to him. This is the nature of *faith*. Now, (marke it) *faith* could not thus sanctifie, if it did not beleeve *Gods All-sufficiencie*. Againe, vnbeliefe could not cause our falling or *departing from God*, if it were not hence, that wee fayle in beleeving some promise of his, or some threatnings, we thinke there is not an *All-sufficiencie* in *God*: you know his promises containe all good things,



if we cleave vnto him, and his threatenings all euill things, if we depart from him. If this were fully beleued, our hearts would keepe neare to him: as farre as it is not beleued, so farre we step out. Now, I say, hence *faith purifieth the heart*: It sanctifieth, it is the cause of all righteousness that is wrought by vs: and vnbeliefe is the cause of all vnrighteousnes that is wrought by vs. Hence we gather then, that the perswasion of *Gods All-sufficiencie* keeps a mans heart *perfect* with *God*: and as farre as you come short of this perswasion, so farre you are ready to depart from him.

Vaine hopes  
and feares  
draw vs from  
God.

And the ground of it is, because that which drawes vs from the *Lord*, is either vaine feares, or vaine hopes. Those are the two cares as it were by which Sathan takes every man, whereby hee drawes him away, out of the wayes of the *Lords* Commandements. Now if a man did beleue that *God* were *All-sufficient*, he would be subject to none of these false feares, if he did apprehend him to be a *Buckler*, that could keepe him from all ill. Againe, on the other side, if he did beleue *God* to be an *exceeding great reward*, that is, so great a *reward* that there can be nothing wanting in him, that there is a *length, and breadth, and depth, and height*, in that *reward*, that his heart hath latitude enough to walke in, he can desire nothing out of it: this would free a man from all vaine hopes, so that the apprehension of it would keepe his heart *perfect*. Contrariwise, as farre as you fayle in either, so farre you are subject to those two, either false feares, or vaine and sinfull hopes:  
and

and that is the cause of our vneven and vnequall walking with God, that we are not upright and perfect.

Hence you may see both the nature, of sinne, & the cause of all sinne; for it is profitable for vs Beloved, (nothing more profitable than) to finde out the cause of sinne. It is a Rule that *Physitians* haue, that a disease, when it is throughly known, (that is, when the cause of it is fully knowne) it is halfe cured; so it is in the disease of the soule, to know the very root and rise, from whence it proceeds, or commeth, to know the principle from whence it ariseth, it is a great helpe to vs to prevent it, to heale it. But I say, this will both shew the nature of sinne, and the cause of sinne in vs.

First, it shewes the nature of sinne, how evill a thing it is, yea worse, than, for the most part, we apprehend it to be; for if there be no sinne committed, but it comes from hence, that you apprehend not God to be *All-sufficient*, then there is *Idolatry* (in a manner) committed in every sinne, that is, you take from God and adde another God to him, if you thinke him not to be *All-sufficient*; whatsoever you seek to, and joyne with him, you make it a God as well as he; If it be credit, if it be honour, if it be pleasures, if it be riches, yea whatsoever it is, I say, there is a bitter root of *Idolatry* in the commission of every sin, that makes it *out of measure sinfull*. This we may consider by the way, but this I purpose not to stand on, the thing that I would chiefly presse, is to find out the cause of sinne, the cause of that hollownesse, and that

*Use 1.*  
Shewing the  
cause of sinne.

I  
The nature

Idolatry in  
every sinne.

2  
The cause  
of sinne.

*Simile.*

imperfectionesse, and insinceritie that is in the hearts of men towards *God*, which, I say, ariseth from hence, that they apprehend not *God* to bee *All-sufficient*, for this ( for the most part ) is the case of men, if they did not apprehend some sufficiency in him, they would not seeke him at all; againe, if they did apprehend him to be *All-sufficient*, they would serue him *perfectly*: but this middle apprehension in men, that they thinke there is a sufficiency in the *Lord*, but not an *All-sufficiency*, this is the cause why the hearts of men are hollow towards the *Lord*. Even as when a man lookes towards a great man, that is a man of some power, able to doe him hurt, and that hath some abilitie to doe him good: this makes him to feare, it makes him carefull to please him, and to abstaine from what may offend him: yet, because he thinks he is not perfect with him, that his heart is but hollow towards him, he doth it not fully. So it is in our walking before *God*. Because we apprehend him not to be *All-sufficient*, therefore it is that our hearts are not *perfect* with him.

We shall best shew you this in instances; for example; What is the reason, that a man is discouraged in seeking to *God*, in praying to *God*, in depending vpon *God* in any great case of difficulty, where there is more then ordinary difficulty, there is more to be suffered, there is more to be done, what is the reason of it? because we apprehend him not to be *All-sufficient*. You know the turning of men away from *God*, commonly it ariseth.



seth from this, they meete with some rub, some crosses, some barre, some *Lyon in the way*, which they are not able to grapple with, it is too strong for them: and then they turne out of the way; the reason, I say, of all sinne and departure from the *Lord*, is because we doe not apprehend him to be *All-sufficient*: for if we did, why should not a man in an easie case, turne from him as well as in the most difficult?

As, for example; *David* followed the *Lord* long, yet when *Saul* grew exceeding strong, and he very weake, then he stepped aside, and sayd in his heart, *I shall perish one day*; and so he goes out of *Gods wayes*, and flyeth to *Achis*, to the *Philistines*: This was from hence, that he did not apprehend the *Lord* to be *All-sufficient* and *Almightie*, for the word signifieth both.

And so likewise *Moses*, *Numb. 11.* what was the reason that hee started aside, that he did not beleeue as at other times? When *God* sayd to him, that he would giue them flesh for a moneth together; what sayth *Moses* againe? *shall six hundred thousand men be fed with flesh, shall all the Beeves and Sheepe be slaine, or shall all the fish in the Sea be gathered together?* He could not beleeue the *Lord*: here was a difficultie, that *Moses* was not able to reach, that there should be so many fed with flesh and that in the *wildernesse*, and that for a moneth together: hee thought it impossible to be done, that all the fish in the Sea should be gathered together, and all little enough to serue such a turne. Now marke the *Lords* answer there, *is the Lords*

D

hand

The cause  
why men  
turne from  
God.

Instances, of  
doubting in  
difficult cases.

*Numb. 11.*

*hand shortened?* You may know by the medicine, what the disease was. *Moses* (saith he) thou thinkest I am not able to doe it, thou thinkest my hand is shortened that I cannot doe it. And the like was when he came to draw water out of the *rock*: you shall see *Moses* there sticke: for the case was a case of difficulty. If it had been out of the earth, where there had beene probabilitie, it had not beene so much: but *Moses* makes two arguments against it, (you know how great the sinne was for the which he lost going into the Land of *Canaan*, I say, he makes these two arguments against it.) First, sayth he, the people are *rebels*, and will the *Lord* giue them water, that haue carried themselves in such a manner? that was one thing that caused his infidelitie at that time. Another was; *What? shall I giue you water out of the rocke?* As if he should say, That is a difficult thing. So that put these two together, *out of the rocke*, and *unto rebels*, there his sayth fayled, for it was difficult: and whence came this? Because hee thought the *Lord* was not *All-sufficient*.

And so, likewise, *Martha*, and *Mary*, when they came to *Christ* for *Lazarus*, when he was dead, they were out of hope: the reason was, because there was a difficultie now more then before; so that, I say, the commō cause of our turning aside from the *Lord*, is, because wee meete with some difficulties which our faith is not able to grapple with, & it ariseth from hence, that we forget this, that the *Lord* sayth to *Abraham*, *I am God Almighty* or *All-sufficient*. I am able to doe whatsoever I will.

Besides

Besides this: what is the cause that men seeke after vaine-glory, that they are subject to envie? (*the spirit that is in vs is subject to envie*) for every man envieth another, because he desireth vaine glory too much to himselfe: this ariseth from hence, that he reckoneth not *God* to be *All-sufficient*. That is. If we did reckon it enough to haue praise with *God*, if we thought that his knowledg of our vprightnes were sufficient, though no man in the world knew it besides, wee would be content with that honor that we haue, which he hath allotted to vs within our owne compasse, but, because we thinke him not to be *All-sufficient*, wee would haue something, likewise, from the Creature, we would haue honor, loue, & respect from men, which sinne ariseth hence, that we apprehend not him to be *All-sufficient*; so doth that, likewise, which is contrary to it, (for they are sins of y<sup>e</sup> same nature, and they arise both frō the same ground) when men are so sensible of shame, and reproach, and disgrace, & disparagement, doth it not arise hence, that we reckō *mans day* too much and *Gods day* too little? Wee apprehend not *God* enough in his greatnesse; as the Apostle sayth, *I reckon not to be judged by mans day*. As if he should say. It is but a day, it is but a time that man hath to judge: there is another day, the *Lords day*, that great day. If a man did apprehend that which is in *God*, if he did see his *All-sufficiency*, he would not regard to be judged by mans day, as long as he were not judged by y<sup>e</sup> *Lord* he would not care what his fellow-prisoners thought of him, as

2  
Seeking praise  
with men the  
cause of it.

Why we are  
so sensible of  
reproach.



3  
Indire& cour-  
ses taken to  
bring enter-  
prifesto passe.

Instances of  
vsing good  
meanes.

long as the Iudge, and the Law cleared him.

And so likewise, what is the reason of the vn-  
even wayes of men, which they take to bring  
their enterprifes to passe? Is it not hence, that  
they apprehend not *God* to be *All-sufficient*? *Da-  
vid*, when he was in a strait, when the Kingdome,  
you know, was promised him, and many oppor-  
tunities he had to haue gotten it, if he would haue  
vsed evill meanes, when sometimes the *Lord* put  
*Saul* into his hand, yet would not touch him,  
but committed it to the *Lord*, for he thought him  
to be *Almightie*, able to bring it to passe, as also  
he did bring it to passe.

And so likewise, *Daniel*; there might haue  
beene meanes vsed for him to haue escaped; you  
know when he was in danger, when he refused to  
eate of the Kings meate, he was in danger againe,  
when they *obtained of the King, that if any man did  
make any request to any God or man, but the King for  
thirty dayes, he should be put to death: yet he tru-  
sted in God, he thought him to be All-sufficient,*  
able to keepe him, and therefore he stepped not  
out of his way. And so *Paul*, when he saw that *Fe-  
stus* thought to haue had money given him, yet  
doubtlesse, in those circumstances, he thought it  
not lawfull to do it, & therefore he *trusted in God*;  
though no doubt, hee might haue made friends,  
to haue gathered the money: It is likely *Festus*  
thought there was a probability for it, because he  
hoped for it, but *Paul* would not do it, because he  
thought the *Lord* was able to deliver him.

Instances of  
vsing evill  
meanes.

But on the other side, *Ieroboam* when he had

a businesse to doe, you know what course hee rooke, he joynes them together, he addes to Religion, hee corrupts it, that he might keepe his Kingdome. And so *Saul*. (But I neede not giue you instances) I say, the cause of all indirect waies we take to bring our enterprises to passe, it comes from hence, that we trust not in *God*, wee thinke him not to be *All-sufficient*, not able to doe it, except we helpe him with wyles, and tricks, and devises of our own. What is the reason of that lying & dissembling, that is vsed likewise, for the same purpose? Is it not from hence, that men apprehend not *God* to be *All-sufficient*? *Peter*, when he denied *Christ*, was it not from feare? And from whence was that feare, but because he reckoned not *God*, to be a *Buckler* strong enough, and sure enough? And so *Sarah*, when shee denied, that shee laughed, sayth the Text, *for shee was afraid*, and therefore shee said, no, *I did not laugh*, when shee did, and was charged for doing of it. I might giue you many other Instances, but I shall not need. Goe through all varieties of finnes, and you shall see they arise hence, that we reckon not *God* to be *All-sufficient*.

The satisfiying of sinfull lusts, doth it not arise from hence? He that is given to any pleasure, to any delight, of what kinde soever, if he did beleeue those two things, that the *Lord* is able to fill him with joy, and comfort sufficient, that the *Lord* is able to mortifie those lusts, & to heale them in him, he would keepe close to him, and would not goe out from him: for he need not, the *Lord*

4  
Satisfiying of  
sinfull lusts,  
whence it is.

is *All-sufficient*. That is. He is able to satisfie him, he is able to fill him with *joy and peace, through believing*, which should be enough to satisfie his heart with contentment; hee is able, likewise, to mortifie that lust, so that, as he is forbidden the satisfiing of it, so, likewise, hee should haue no such prevailing desire to it. And therefore the way to keep our hearts perfect with *God* (for that is the thing for which I presse all this, for which I bring all these Instances) it is to come to this, to set downe this conclusion with our selues, that he is *All-sufficient*: No man is ever fit to serue him without this: except a man be content to haue *God* alone for his portion; if he will joyne any thing with him, if he will joyne *God*, and credit together, *God*, and riches together, *God*, and pleasures together, hee will never keepe close to him: for one time, or other there will fall out a separation betweene *God*, and these things, & who-soeuer doth not resolue thus with himselfe, I will be content with *God* alone, though he strip me of all things in the world, I say, he will never keepe close to the *Lord*, but his wayes will be vneuen towards him.

<sup>S</sup>  
Apostasie the  
ground of it.

The yong man, in the *Gospel*, would never haue gone away sad, if he had thought *God* had bene *All-sufficient*: but he thought, when his riches were taken away, that somewhat was taken from him that belonged to his happines, that he could not haue bene so well without it. Againe, *Abraham*, on the other side, would never haue bene willing to haue offred *Isack*, if he had not thought that



that *God* was *All-sufficient*: as we see *Heb. 11. 19.* It is said there, that, though *Isack* were the sonne of the promise, yet he willingly offered him; why? for he thought *God* was able to raise him from the dead againe, from whence he also after a sort received him: As he received him from *Sarabs* dead wombe, so he thought he might be raised againe from the dead ashes. What was the reason that *Paul* served the *Lord* with a perfect heart? You see in *1 Tim. 4. 10.* that he trusted in *God*, and therefore (sayth he) we labour, and suffer rebuke; those are the two parts of new obedience, (to doe, and to suffer) and therefore, saith he, we do it, because we trust in the living *God*: that is. Wee trust in him for all things: I belecue him to be *Almightie*, and *All-sufficient*, every way, both to defend me from all evill, and also to provide all good things for me, and therefore I serue him, and labour in his service, and suffer rebuke. What was the reason, on the other side, that *Demas* turned from the *Lord*? was it not, because he thought there was not enough in him? And therefore saith the Text, he embraced this present world: the way therefore to keepe our hearts perfect with *God*, is to consider well the great power of *God*, and the great goodnesse of *God*, for in these two his *All-sufficiencie* towardes vs consists; Consider his mightie power, and say, thus with thy selfe, he is able to doe all things for me, consider withall, the greatnesse of his goodnesse, and mercy, and say, he is my Father, he is willing to doe all things for me. Indeede, that conclusion wee should fet downe with

*Heb. 11. 19.*

*1 Tim. 4. 10.*

The parts of  
obedience.

How to keepe  
our hearts  
perfect.

Our present  
estate best  
for vs,

with our selues, (if any thing be not done, if we want any thing, if any crosse lie vpon vs at any time,) to be ready to say, this is not because the *Lord* cannot doe it; for he is *Almightie*. Againe, it is not because the *Lord* will not doe it; for he is as infinite in loue to me, as he is in power: What is the reason of it then? Because it is not best for me. So shuld every man say, if there be any want, if there be any crosse, it is best for me. It is better for thee, it may be, to be in a low estate, then to be in a high: it is better for thee to be pinched with povertie, than to liue in abundance, it is better for thee to lye vnder temptation, (though it be a great vexation to thee for the present) then to be freed from it: it is better for thee, (it may be) to haue meane gifts, than to haue high gifts: it is better for thee, to be in a low place, than to be in eminent place: it is better for thee to be crossed in thy name, in thy estate, it is better for thee to be sicke in bodie, it is better for thee to be troubled (sometime) in minde, than to be freed from it. *Beloved*, this we must come to, and yet we must thinke the *Lord* to be *All-sufficient*. For if it be so, thou oughtest to say thus with thy selfe, it is best for me to be so. You will say, how shall we doe to be perswaded of it? There are many cases, wherein we are in such a condition, which wee thinke worst for our selues, which many times is the best, nay, alwayes it is best for every man that is in covenant with *God*. For this rule must be kept, he is *All-sufficient* to his children, and they finde him so, he hath performed it, and made it

Digress.

good



good to their experience, and therefore, whensoever they finde any want, it is best for them to be so; It is not either defect in the power of *God*, or in the loue of *God*: For example, *Abraham* thought it a hard thing, a great crosse, that he was put to expell *Ishmaell* his sonne, whom he loved; Was it not better for *Abraham*? had he not another sonne that was fitter for him, borne of his owne Wife? And so *Moses* thought it a hard thing, to be barred from comming into the land of *Canaan*, but what lost he by it? was he not led into a better *Canaan*, into *Paradise*, into a more glorious condition? So likewise, when he went downe into *Egypt*, if he had had a tongue of eloquence giuen him, to his will, that would haue satisfied him: but was it not better for *Moses* to haue a stammering tongue, and yet to haue the worke done as well, *Aaron* and he being joyned together? For by that meanes *Moses* was kept humble, and his loue likewise was increased. For that mutuall indigence knits men together, when they haue need one of another. In like manner, *David* had an exceeding great desire to build the *Temple*, when it was not *y* *Lords* will, that he should doe it, was he a looser by it? *David* was at that time not fit to haue done it, he was not able to haue done it, as circumstances were: but was he a looser by it, had not he a house built him, as well as if he had built the house of *God*? had not he as great a reward, as if he had performed it? So likewise in the losse of his child, it was exceeding grievous to him, yet, was it not better that

E

that

Instances.

Nothing lost  
by obeying  
God.



that childe should be taken away, and that another should be given him, that was legitimate? Did not the *Lord* recompence it abundantly to him, when *Salomon* was given to him in his stead? And so *Paul*, he was exceeding desirous to be freed from that temptation, which no-doubt was very grievous to him, that did gall and vexe his minde continually, even as a *pricking of the flesh* doth: yet it was much better for *Paul*, it was not because *God* was not *All-sufficient*, either in power, or in loue to him: but hee was an exceeding great gainer by that meanes, he was emptied of himselfe: for that is the scope of *God*, in the wayes of his providence towards his children, even to magnifie himselfe towards them, which cannot be without emptying them of themselues, by discovering to them their owne insufficiencie: and that is done partly, by affliction, and partly by sinne, but chiefly by sinne, because that workes more immediately vpon man, it makes him to see how little excellency, and how little worth, there is in him: it makes him againe to see the glorie, and the power, and the purenesse of *God*, to magnifie him, and to humble himselfe; this *Paul* got by it, and it was better for him, he was in a better condition by it. Therefore, I say, this conclusion must be set downe, that the *Lord* is *All-sufficient*, & when we fall short of any thing that we desire, lay it not vpon *God*, that the *Lord* is short of his performance, of any promise, that *he compasseth vs not about with mercie, on every side*, as much as we need, that he *delivers vs not from every euill*:

for

The meanes  
of emptying  
man of him-  
selfe.

for he will make that good alway, that *no good thing shall be wanting to them that lead a godly life*: He is a *Sunne and a Shield* to them. And whensoever it is otherwise, it is because it is not best for them: but this is a digression; the thing we haue to doe (for all this is but a preparation) is to perswade you now that the *Lord is All-sufficient*: as we told you, we handle this poynt first, because it is a preparatiue to the rest: It shewes you of what moment it will be so to be perswaded, and of what euill consequence it is, not to be so perswaded. Now I will adde a word of the second point; that

*GOD is All-sufficient.*

To proue that he is so, I will propound to you but these two reasons;

First, consider that all that is in the creature, all the comforts, all the excellencie, all the beautie that is to be found in them, it is but borrowed, and derived: *God* is the primitiue, he is the originall, he is the first, the vniuersall cause, the generall cause of all: hence we gather this, that there is an *All-sufficiencie* in him, and in him onely, he is *All-sufficient*, exclusiuelly: so that no creature hath any sufficiencie at all in it selfe: for, you must know, that the creature addes nothing at all to his sufficiencie, but all sufficiencie is comprehended in him; for if they be all derived and borrowed things, then they are in the Creature, but as farre as it pleaseth him to communicate the

*Doct. 2.*  
God is All-sufficient.

*Reas. 1.*  
The excellency of the creature is borrowed.



Ier. 2. 13.

The comfort  
in the Crea-  
ture is

1

Derived.

2

Mixed.

3

A dead com-  
fort.

4

A broken  
Comfort.

same to them: now that it is so, see *Ier. 2. 13.* *My people (saith the Lord) haue committed two evils, they haue forsaken me the fountain of living waters, and (secondly) haue digged to themselves pits that hold no water:* Where we may briefly obserue: First, that *God* is the Spring, from whom all comforts come originally, the *pits*, you know, haue y<sup>e</sup> water, but borrowed and derived from the *fountain*; secondly, there is something in this, that he calleth them *pits*, that is, the comfort in the creature is a mixed comfort, it is like water in a *pit*, it is muddie, and not pure and cleare, like the water in the *fountain*: That is, the comfort that comes meereley from the creature (if you receiue any comfort in the creature, if *Gods* hand be not in it) it is alway mixed with some sorrow, with some euill, but if it come from the *Lord*, it is a pure comfort: *he giues riches, and no sorrow with them.* Thirdly, the comfort that is in the creature, it is but a dead comfort, compared to that which is in the *Lord*, and therefore he is said to be a fountain of living water, that is, running water. The comfort that is in the creature, it is able to doe little, it is quickly spent, and when it is spent, there is no more in it: but the comfort that is in *God*, it is like water that commeth out of the Spring, which is still renewed from day to day, and therefore it is called living water, there is no end of it, but still it flowes more and more. Last of all, they are broken pits that cannot hold the comfort that they haue, though there be comfort yet it is like liquor in a brittle glasse, that is not able



able to hold this comfort in the creature, it is but borrowed comfort, and therefore we see 1 Tim. 6. 17. (where an instance is given of riches.) *Charge those that are rich in this world, that they be not high minded, that they trust not in vncertaine riches, but in the living God, that giveth all things abundantly to enjoy.* Marke (you shall see there the difference,) that they trust not in vncertaine riches, but in the living God, that is, riches are but dead things, God is the *living God*: they are able to doe but *some* things for you; God giues *you all things*, and giues *abundantly*. And againe, if riches doe something, yet the enjoying they are not able to giue, but the *Lord* giues vs all things abundantly to enjoy. Now, when we consider, that whatsoever is in the Creature, it is but a borrowed and derived comfort, then the sufficiency is wholly in the *Lord*, he is the *God of all comfort*; as the Sunne is the cause of all light, whatsoever the ayre hath, it is derived from the Sunne, so whatsoever, is in the creature, it is derived from *God*: and therefore this is one ground, why wee should perswade our selues, that he is *All-sufficient*.

The second, is this, he is *All-sufficient*, because he onely can be the author of good and euill: that (you know) which can doe neither good nor euill, there is no sufficiency in it at all. Now it is the propertie of the *Lord*, to doe both, as we see Ier. 10. 5. a place worthy our consideration; *The Idols stand up as a palme-tree, but they speake not; they are borne, because they cannot goe, feare them not, because they can doe neither good nor euill*: This is the argument,

1 Tim 6. 17.

Simile.

Reas. 2.  
God onely  
the Author of  
good & euill.

Ier. 10. 5.

gument, whereby the *Lord* proveth them to be Idols, because they can do neither evill nor good: as if he should say, if they could doe either evill or good, they were *God*, and not Idols. The same we may apply to any creature, considered in it selfe, without the influence and concurrence of *God*: If it were able to doe either good or evill, you might worship it as *God*, for *God* onely can doe good and evill of himselfe. *Beloved*, if we could bring our hearts to this perswasion, that it is the *Lord* onely that can do good and evill, we would then cleave to him, it could not be that we should depart from him vpon any occasion, for that which is able to doe neither good nor evill, wee contemn: if your opinions were such of the creature, that it were, without *God*, neither able to doe good or evill, you would never turne from *God* to any creature, vpon any occasion: for certainly, he is able to doe both good and evill, he onely can make every mans life, comfortable, or vncomfortable: it is his prerogative royall, it belongs to him alone. In *Mat. 5.* it is sayd, a man is *not able to make one haire white or blacke*; so small a thing he is not able to doe: and in *Luk. 11.* it is sayd more plainely, if we be not able to doe the least thing, we be not able to doe the greatest. You know that place *Amos 3. shall there be evill in the Citie, and the Lord hath not done it?* The Scripture is plentifull in this; I should loose time to vrge places; I say, there is no creature in heaven or earth, that is able to be the author of the least good, or the least hurt.

*Math. 5.*

*Luk. 11.*

*Amos. 3.*

But



But you will say to me, we find it otherwise in experience; we finde that they are able to doe vs good, and to doe vs hurt.

You haue an answer for that, *Ioh. 19. 11.* when *Pilate* saith to our Saviour, *haue I not power to crucifie thee, or to loose thee?* He answereth, no: thou hast none at all of thy selfe: Indeed, thou hast a power, but it is *giuen thee from above*, thou hast not a jot more then is distributed to thee: if you compare that with *Act. 4. 28.* you shall see it was so: *Pilate* and *Herod* joyned together, to do whatsoeuer *God* had appointed before: they did not the least euill, but *God* had appointed it: And so it is with all the creatures, the principall creatures, that we haue to doe with, and that we see before vs, even men, they doe vs not (without his commission) the least good, nor the least hurt. When *Shimei* cursed *David*, you know, what expression he vsed; *the Lord hath bid Shimei curse*, as if he should say, neither *Shimei*, nor any man els in the world, could moue his tongue, if *God* did not say to such a man, goe curse him, goe and reproach him. It is sayd of *Pull* and *Tiglah-pilesar*, Kings of *Assyria*, that *ÿ Lord* stirred them vp, & they carried his people away captiue: if *God* had not stirred vp their spirits, they had not done the least thing. You know, oft it is sayd, the King of *Asshur* the staffe in my hand, and so *Cyrus* is sayd to be his seruant, he stirred him vp, he was his Shepheard, to doe whatsoeuer he desired to his sheepe. *Isa. 44.* Now if a man be able to doe nothing, but as farre as *God* sets him on worke, then much lesse can o-  
ther

*Ob.*

The creatures haue no power but from *God*.

*Answ.*

*Ioh. 19. 11.*

*Act. 4. 28.*

*Isa. 44.*



thar things, as riches, and the like, they can doe no more then men can doe: for what serue they for, but to set men a worke: so, honour, and credit, and estimation, which men so much esteeme, they can doe no more then they can doe; for they set men on worke to doe good, as reproach sets them on worke to doe hurt. Now if there be no man, nor no creature in heauen or earth, that can doe good or hurt; Why should we be servants to men? Why should wee be subject to carnall delights? to carnall feares? to carnall hopes, and the like? surely it is hence, wee over-value the Creature, wee thinke it is able to doe something, we thinke that there is some sufficiency in that, and not *All-sufficiency* in God: certainly, all the Commandements of GOD, are grounded vpon cleare reason, if we were able to finde it out: But now when the *Lord* requires at our hands, that we worship him altogether; *thou shalt haue no other Gods but me*, thou shalt serue me onely, thou shalt bestow thy selfe wholly vpon me, thou shalt be *perfect* with me, as you see here: surely, it is vpon this ground, thou shalt haue all from mee, and therefore thou shalt do all to me. If any creature were able to doe good or hurt, without the *Lord*, if they had any part or portion with him in being authors of our good, certainly, they should haue a portion of our seruice: for there is reason and equitie in it, that that which doth vs good, in such manner, we should seeke vnto it, we should serue it: and likewise, if it could doe vs hurt; but now in that the *Lord* challengeth all to himselfe,

(I say)

All GODS  
Commande-  
ments groun-  
ded on reason.

(I say) it is vpon this ground, *I am All-sufficient* : there is no creature is able to adde to me more or lesse : and therefore consider the ground of it, and let the equitie of it establish your hearts to be *perfect* with *God*, that he onely is able to make your liues comfortable or vncomfortable. Put the case, a man hath a great addition to his estate : put the case he hath much credit, and esteeme among men : put the case, he haue the fauour of Princes, that are most able and powerfull among men : if the creature be able alone, to doe neither good nor hurt, they shall not make the least addition to his happinesse; and if it bee so, why should we esteeme it so much? if on the contrary side, it turne against vs, it shall not doe vs the least hurt.

Should not this free vs, from fearefull perplexities, from vaine hopes, and vaine feares? Should it not keepe our hearts *perfect* with *God*, if wee were thus perswaded? for, what are all the creatures? are they not like servants in the great house of the world, and we as children? and the servants are all at the Masters command, to doe whatsoeuer he hath appointed : if we want any thing, hee can appoint them to provide for vs; there is not any creature in heaven or earth, that stirreth without a command, without a warrant from the Master of the house : if he doe command them, they goe: they are ready and nimble to doe vs any service: this is the nature of all the creatures we haue to doe with. Thinke with your selues then, it is no great matter for them; if the Master of the

F house

*Simile.*

The creatures  
Gods servants  
at his com-  
mand.



Ioel 2.

The Creature  
cannot helpe  
to eternall  
happines.

house be our friend, they are all at his command; you know those meane creatures, the *Caterpillers*: are they not all the *Lords* host, that goe and come as he bids them, as *Ioel 2*? So the meanest creatures, the fire, and the ayre, and whatsoeuer they are, they are all at the *Lords* command: and therefore thinke not, that the creature is able to doe any thing for vs.

There are but two things that we need in, one is our everlasting happinesse; the other is for the things of this life: for the first, there the Creature by fruition of it selfe, is able to do nothing, there it is wholly excluded, for it is inferiour to vs. Besides, there is a curse vpon the creature, there is an emptinesse in it: besides, *it is vnder the Sunne*, and therefore it cannot helpe to the happines, that is aboute the Sunne. These arguments you shall find in *Ecclesiastes*. Besides, it is temporall, whereas we must haue an eternall happines, for our soules are eternall, and therefore, for eternall happines: for the chiefe good of man, the creature is nothing at all, it helpeth but in particulars.

They helpe  
but in particu-  
lar cases.

Take credit, it doth but helpe against ignominy and obscuritie: learning doth but helpe against ignorance: health is but a remedie against sicknesse, and distemper of bodie: riches are but an helpe against povertie: and so goe over all the creatures in the world. But the *Lord* is vniuersally good, he giues vs all things, and therefore *godlines is profitable for all things*: he giues vs all things to enjoy: that is, hee fills the soule of man every way, not *Beloved*, that simply an infinite



nite object is necessary, as it is vsually vnderstood ( I see no ground for that ) I see it not necessary, that a finite facultie, should haue an infinite object, if that which is proportionable be enough; but this I affirme, withall, that vnlesse *God* were infinite, he could not satisfie the soule of man, for this is the nature of the soule, if it finde a bottom in any particular, it passeth over that, and hasteth after more, and, therefore, in all particular Creatures ( you see ) when we haue had once triall of them, when we haue had the enjoying and possessing of them, we leaue them and seek after that which we want. Now the *Lord* giues vs satisfaction, because the contentment, the happinesse, that we haue from him, is without a bottome, it is without limits, that, when we haue had never so much, still there is more to be found in him; and hence it is in regard of that vniversallity that is in him, he hath all things in him, he is *All-sufficient*, and, in regard of the latitude, for when we enjoy never so much, still there is more behinde him, and therefore he onely hath to do in that busines, in making vs eternally happie, in giving vs that *summum bonum*.

For the second, the helpe that the Creature giues for the things that belong to this life: there, I confesse, the Creature hath somewhat to doe, but it doth it as an instrument, and if it doth all as an instrument, then the creature doth nothing in a manner; wee thanke not the hand, but the minde within that moues the hand to doe a good turne, much lesse doe we thanke a dead, inanimate

No finite thing, can satisfie the Soule.

The creatures Gods instruments.

*Simile.*

instrument. Let vs looke vpon every Creature, and every man as *Gods* instrument, when any man doth you a kindnesse, when any man doth you a fauour, or doth you good, say as the Scripture phrase is ; *The Lord hath given mee fauour in his sight; he stirred vp his spirit.* And so, when he doth vs hurt, say such a man is but a meere *vi*all, an instrument, whereby the *Lord* hath powred out some part of his displeasure vpon me. This will cause your eye to be vpō the *Lord* altogether ; you will over-looke men, not regarding preferment, or advancement by them ; nor the contrary ; for in all these things they are but Instruments.

So much for this time.

---

F I N I S .

---



THE  
SECOND  
SERMON.

GENESIS 17. 1.

*I am GOD All-sufficient.*



He second doctrine that we haue delivered out of these words, and are now to insist vpon, was, that

*God is Almighty, or All-sufficient.*

I put them both together; for, the word, in the originall signifieth as much, *El-shaddai*, *El* signifieth the strong, the mightie *God*, and *Shaddai*, properly signifieth, *All-sufficient*; when one hath all in his owne compasse, that he needeth not goe out to fetch in, or borrow any commoditie, any comfort, or any advancement, or any excellencie from any other; and, therefore, that is the fittest translation, and most agreeable to the word,



in the originall, *All-sufficient*, (though some translations haue it, the *Almightie*) and, this is a poynt that will well sute with the present occasion of the *Sacramēt*, for, as I told you these words containe the *Covenant* on both sides, sayth the *Lord*, this is the *Covenant* that I will make on my part, *I will be thy God*; and I will tell you what a *God* I will be vnto you, *I will be a God All-sufficient*. That is; you shall haue all things in me that your hearts can desire. The *Covenant*, againe, that I require on your part, is, that you be *perfect with me*, that you be *vpright*, that you be without *hypocrisie*; for so the word signifieth in the originall, that the heart be single, so that though a man be subiect to infirmities, yet, if he haue a single heart an vpright heart, the *Lord* accepts it; and therefore, when you are to take the seale of the *Covenant*, how can you be better exercised, and prepared for the worke, than by considering the *Covenant* it selfe? that is the poynt then, that *God is Almighty*, or *All-sufficient*, wherein two things are to be considered;

First, that the *Lord* is so in himselfe.

Secondly, that he is so in every one of his children.

First, I will shew that he is so in himselfe; for except he haue an *All-sufficiencie* in himselfe, hee cannot communicate it to another. Though this be a point that we all beleue, yet the opening of it will not be vnprofitable to you, and, therefore, you must know that he is *All-sufficient*, not onely as the creature may be *All-sufficient*: for there

is

Two things  
considerable.

I

That *God* is  
*All-sufficient*  
in himselfe.

Difference be-  
tween the *All-  
sufficiencie* in  
*God*, and that  
which is in the  
Creature.

is this difference betweene him and the Creature.

The Angels and blessed men, and other Creatures, they, in their kinde, may haue an *All-sufficiencie*, but it is such an *All-sufficiencie* as belongs to them, in such a spheare, and such an order, and measure: as the Creature, that hath all things belonging to the life that it leads, it hath an *All-sufficiencie* sutable to it selfe: a beast, that hath all things belonging to the life of a beast, hath an *All-sufficiencie* fit for it, and so hath every creature else, when God will make it happie, but the *All-sufficiencie* that is in God, is different from it in this, that he hath a simple *All-sufficiencie*. That is. Take all things that you can possibly take, take them all without comparison, take them without all limits, and so he is *All-sufficient*, that is one difference.

The second difference is this, that the creature though it haue an *All-sufficiencie* within its owne compasse, yet, that which it hath it cannot communicate to another. The Angels that are blessed themselves, they cannot make others so. A man that hath excellent gifts and graces himselfe, hee cannot convey them to another, but that is the propertie of God, that is peculiar to him alone, that he can make another *All-sufficient*; he can cause another to partake of that *All-sufficiencie* that is in himselfe: this is the difference betweene God and the creature. Now, to make it euident to you that he is *All-sufficient*, you shall know it by this.

First,

I

Difference, it is limited in the creature.

2

It is incommunicable.

*Reas. 1.*  
God is without mixture.

First, in that he is most simple, without all mixture, as we say, that is, *perfect*: for *perfection* and *All-sufficiency* are all one; Perfection is that, whereby a thing is made vp, so that there be nothing wanting in it; first, therefore, he is *perfect*, in that he is without all mixture; we say, that is *perfect* gold, that hath no mixture of drosse in it; that is *perfect* wine, that hath no mixture of any thing besides; and in that the *Lord* is simple and most pure of essence, it must needs be that he is *All-sufficient*, that he is most *perfect*, as it is 1 *John* 1. *He is light, and there is no darknesse in him.* That is. There is no mixture of any thing in him.

1 *Ioh.* 1.

*Reas. 2.*  
He is without composition.

Secondly. As he is without mixture, so he is without composition, wheresoever there is composition (as there is in every Creature) there is some imperfection: for, where there is composition, there are parts, and wheresoever there are parts, there must needs be imperfection: for the part wants something of the whole; but in the *Lord* there are no parts, he is without composition, and therefore he must needs be most *perfect*, and most absolute, and *All-sufficient* in himselfe.

*Reas. 3.*  
He is without number.

Thirdly. As he is without composition, so he is without number: for all number, and all multiplying, ariseth from imperfection: for if one would serue the turne, what needed more? And, therefore, he being one, simply one, must needs be *All-sufficient*, for there is no multiplying in him, and, therefore, there is no signe of imperfection.

Fourth-



Fourthly. As he is without number, so he is without any passive power. If he had any passive power in him, ( as every creature hath, ) he were capable of receiving something that he hath not, but the *Lord* is not so much as capable of it; for if there be no receptive power, no passive power in him, it is impossible that any more should be put, or infused into him, or imprinted, or stamped in him, then is in him already. And, therefore, he is all in act. There is nothing in possibility in **G O D**.

Fifthly. He is *αὐτάρκης*, ( I finde no word to expresse it so well, ) that is, whatsoever he is, he is it of himselfe, whatsoever the creature is, it is borrowed, all the excellencie that it hath is borrowed, and derived, and is a participated excellencie, and therefore there is imperfection: for alway when one hath any thing from another, there is an indigence, in the thing, of it selfe, there is a want: if a man haue enough at home, he will not goe out to borrow. Now, the *Lord* whatsoever he hath, he hath it of himselfe, and therefore, in *Ier. 2.* he calls himselfe, a *spring of living water*, whereas all the creatures in the world are as *Pits*, and *Cisterns*. That is, Such as haue it borrowed, he hath it of himselfe, and therefore he is *All-sufficient*, which no Creature is.

Lastly. He is without all causes, and is himselfe the cause of all things, *Rom. 11. 36.* *And what hast thou that thou hast not received?* This may be said of every creature: and if *God* haue given to every creature all that is in it, that there is no excellencie,

*Reas. 4.*  
He is without  
passive power

*Reas. 5.*  
His excellencie  
is of him-  
selfe.

*Ier. 2.*

*Reas. 6.*  
He is without  
any cause.  
*Rom. 11. 36.*

*Simile.*

cie, no happinesse, no gift, no comfort, no blessing that any Creature hath, but it is from the *Lord*, then he himselve must needs haue it in a greater measure. As the *fire*, that makes any thing hot; must needs be hotter it selfe, and the *Sunne* that enlightens other things, must needs be more full of light it selfe; so is the *Lord*, since all that is in the creature, is taken from him, he himselve must needs haue an *All-sufficiency*, he must be full of all things, and this shall be enough to shew you that the *Lord* is in himselve *All-sufficient*.

2  
That God is  
All-sufficient;  
to vs.

Which con-  
sists in two  
things.  
Gen. 15.

I  
To keepe vs  
from euill.

Now that he is so to vs. First we will shew you wherein this *All-sufficiency* consists to vs, then we will make that good: that he is to every one of his childrē *All-sufficient*. His *All-sufficiency* towards vs, consists in these two things, as you shall see *Gen. 15. Feare not Abraham, I will be thy Buckler, and thy exceeding great reward.*

First, in that he is a *Buckler*, to keepe vs from all euill, that is one part of his *All-sufficiency*, which he communicates to vs, that he will suffer no euill to come neare vs, he is a *Buckler* that compasseth vs round about: that speech is delivered vpon this occasion, when *Abraham* had gone out to warre against those Kings that came out against *Sodom*, the *Lord* delivered him, and after this deliverance he tels him, *Abraham*, sayth he, as I haue dealt with thee at this time, so feare not, when thou fallest into the like distresse: for, *I am thy Buckler*, I will defend thee from all euill, as I haue done from this. Now, he is such a *Buckler*, that no creature can peirce through, he is such a Buck-

a Buckler as covers vs over, he is *a wall of Brasse*, as it is expressed in *Ier. I. 18.* and not so onely; but he is sayd to be *a wall of fire* about his children. That is. He is not onely a wall that keepes them safe, but a wall of fire to consume all them that come against them: for a fire, you know, doth not onely defend those that are within the compasse of it, but it burnes those that come neare it: Such a one is *God* to his children; And this is one thing wherein his *All-sufficiency* consists: that *God* communicates to them.

*Ier. I. 18.*

The second is, in filling them with all comfort, which is expressed in *Psal. 84. The Lord will be a Sunne, and a Shield*; he will be a *Shield* to keepe off evill, and a *Sunne*, to fill them with all comfort. *I am* (sayth he) *thy exceeding great reward*. As if he should say, *Abraham*, whatsoever is in me, all that I haue, al my attributes are thine, for thy vse, my power, my wisdom, my counsell, my goodnesse, my riches, whatsoever is mine in the whole world, I will giue it for thy portion, I and all that I haue are thine. And might he not well say, hee was an *exceeding great reward*? Who can vnderstand the height, and breadth, and length, and depth of this reward, *I am thy exceeding great reward*? That is. Thou shalt haue all kinde of comfort in me, & thou shalt haue them in the highest and greatest measure. And in these doth *Gods All-sufficiency* consist, that *God* communicates and de-riues to vs from himselfe.

2  
Filling vs with  
all good.  
*Psal. 84.*

Now to shew that he is so, you must vnderstand not onely that the *Lord* is wholly *All-sufficient* to



his children on the one side. That is. He brings all comforts with him, but this must also be vnderstood, that in the creature, on the other side, there is no sufficiency at all. It was the point I began to touch vpon the last day ; I will now open it vnto you more fully.

There is no  
sufficiencie in  
the Creature.

*That in the Creature there is no sufficiencie at all,  
and in the Lord there is all sufficiency.*

We will not dis-joyne them, but handle both together ; ( for it would be in vaine for mee to proue the *Lord is All-sufficient,* ) but the great deceit, which preuailes with the hearts of men, is this, that they thinke there is something to be had in the creature of it selfe. And, therefore, we will spend those Arguments by which we will proue this chiefly and convince you of it, that there is nothing in the Creature, no stabilitie, no sufficiencie, it can doe you, of it selfe, neither good, nor hurt, as we told you the last day. All the good and hurt that the creature can be supposed to do, it stands in one of these two things. Either in making vs happie, or miserable ; Or else, secondly, in affording vs subsidiary helps, such as we haue neede of, vpon occasion. In neither of them the Creature of it selfe, is able to doe any thing. You must remember ( that which we then delivered ) that the Creature is not able to doe any thing in the matter of our happinesse.

The Creature  
can doe no-  
thing of it  
selfe, to make  
vs happie.  
Because.

I  
It is inferior  
to vs.

First. Because it is inferior to vs, and that which is inferior cannot adde to that which is aboue it.

Secondly,

Secondly. Because the Creature is accursed; there is a curse lies vpon the Creature, there is an emptinesse, and a vanitie in it, and that which is emptie in it selfe, can giue no fulnesse to vs.

Thirdly. The Creature is *under the Sunne*, and therefore you haue that phrase so often repeated in *Ecclesiastes*, *All things vnder the Sunne, are vanitie and vexation of spirit*. Now the happinesse that we seeke for is about the Sunne, which the Creature is not able to reach.

Fourthly. The Creature is corporall, the mind is spirituall, it is a spirit, and therefore it can receiue no happinesse from it; therefore in *Heb. 12.* we are sayd to goe to the *spirits of perfect men*, as if that were a sutable converse for a spirit.

Fifthly. It is temporary, whereas the soule is immortall, it is not able to run the course with it to its journeyes end, but it leaues it in the middle way, and therefore it is not able to make it happy.

Besides. As I tolde you then the Creature is finite, and therefore it is not able to fill the soule; *God* is infinite, and therefore is able to doe it. That no Creature can doe it, we see in continuall experience. Take any comfort that you finde in the Creature, and, when you haue enjoyed it, still you want somewhat, and you would haue more: But when you come vnto the *Lord*, & enjoy him, when your hearts are filled, still there is somewhat beyond in him, there is no stop, there is no restraint. And, therefore, he onely can make the soule happy. Now the ground of it, why he is only able to doe it, is, because the soule is made for him,

2  
It is accursed.

3  
It is vnder the Sunne.

4  
It is corporal.  
Heb 12. 23.

5  
It is temporary.

6  
It is finite.



Why nothing  
can satisfie the  
soule but God.

him, the soule is fitted for him, and therefore there is nothing els answerable, there is that constitution of the minde, that it will not be filled, with any thing besides. The *Lord* might haue put the minde into such a frame, hee might haue so constituted the soule of man, that the Creature might haue filled it, and satisfied it, & haue beene an adæquate object to it, but he hath not done so: for he made it for himselfe, and therefore, it is not filled but with himselfe. So much for that, that the creature in the matter of happines is able to doe nothing.

*Quest.*

But you will say to me; This is a thing of which we make no doubt; But what doe you say for ordinary vses, and for the vicissitudes of this life, is not the creature, in these, able to doe good and hurt?

*Answ.*

The creature  
is not able to  
doe vs good,  
or hurt.  
Ier. 10. 5.

*Beloved*, as I said to you the last day, the Creature is not able, considered without the influence of the first moover, to doe you the least good, or hurt; as the words are *Ier. 10. 5.* speaking of *Idols*, they can do neither good, nor hurt, and therefore feare them not. As if he should say; If they could doe you, either good, or hurt, you might feare them, and it is certaine, if any Creature were able, in manner aforesaid, to doe you any good, or hurt, you might feare the creature: for, *God* alters no Law of nature, that which is in it selfe to be feared, we may feare, that which is to be observed and regarded, we may regard it. Now, if any creature were able to doe good, or hurt, certainly, it were to be feared in regard of the hurt it could

God altereth  
no law of na-  
ture.

doe,



doe, and to be regarded and observed in regard of the good it could doe. Then againe, the Law of the *Lord* should be vnequal, if the *Lord* should require all worship, that the intention of the minde be wholly taken vp about him, & that we should haue an eye to the Creature, if the Creature had any selfe, part with him in doing vs good or hurt; for, if the Creature could doe vs hurt, we should not onely looke to *God*, that he should be a *Backler*, but we should haue an eye vpon the creature. If a man should say, I will be a defence to you, I will keepe you safe; but I cannot doe it wholly, such a one stands by, that may reach you a blow, from which I cannot defend you; In nature and reason, a man will haue an eye to that man too, and so we would to the creature, if it were able to hurt vs: And so, likewise, for good, the *Lord* restraines not that, nor sayth, you shall haue a partiall happines, you shall haue no more thē is in me, though there might be something besides in the Creature; but he suffers our soules to be at full libertie, to seeke their happines to the vtmost, and, therefore, if the Creature did adde the least drop of happines, or if the least beame of happines did spring from the Creature, certainly, you might haue an eye vpon it, you might so farre worship it and regard it: but it is wholly from the *Lord*: therefore, sayth he, let your heart be onely fixed vpon mee, let your eye be onely towards me, let your affections be taken vp about nothing but me, you shal spend all the strength of your soules in obeying mee, and keeping my Commande-

G 4

ments;

Gods command of seeking vnto him is equall.

*Simile.*

ments: for there is none in the world that is able to doe you good, or hurt but my selfe. Now, to make this good to you, I wil propound but these two things. First. That all the Creatures are absolutely at his disposing. Secondly. That when he hath disposed of them, when he hath distributed them to vs to afford vs comfort, yet they cannot actually comfort vs, without a speciall hand of his. Those two, being fully opened, wil make this poynt good to you, that the Creature is able to doe you neither good nor hurt.

I  
The creature  
is fully at  
Gods disposing.

*Simile.*

First, I say, the Creature is fully at his disposing; that is, all the Creatures in this world (let a man cast his eye vpon the whole vniverse) they are all but as so many servants, which are in the *Lords* house, prepared to waite vpon his children, to convey such comforts to them, as he hath appointed them, so that there is not one creature in heaven or earth, stirres it selfe to do you the least good, but when the *Lord* commands it, and saith, Goe, comfort such a man, goe, refresh him, doe him good; it stirres not without a warrant, and without a speciall cōmand from him. The bread and meate, which you eat, nourish you not, except he say, goe, and nourish such a man; the fire warmes you not; and so of all the Creatures else. Againe, when he doth command them, they doe it, and they doe it fully.

Men are Gods  
instruments  
to do vs good  
and hurt.

So all the goodnesse that wee participate of, both by good and evil men, all is from the *Lord*; either it is from his mercie, or from his providence; therefore we should learne to sanctifie the

*Lord,*



*Lord*, both in our hearts, and in our speeches, not by saying I have gotten me favour and friendship of such a man, but, the Scriptures expression is, *the Lord hath given me favour* in such a mans eyes. So, againe, not by saying I have procured the hatred of such a man against me, but say, the *Lord* stirred vp such a mans spirit against me, and so not by saying I have gotten such and such things, but as *Iacob*, *the Lord of his goodnes hath given mee all this*, not *Laban*, not my owne labour; if, in any enterprize you haue successe, say not, I haue done it, but say as *Abrahams* servant sayd, *the Lord hath prospered my Iourney*. That is. The *Lord* doth all in all, it is he that commands all, it is he that disposeth all, I say, that we should sanctifie the *Lord* in our speeches, this is the language of the Scriptures; But, chiefly we should sanctifie him in our hearts. That is. Thus we should conceiue of him, and thus we should thinke of every Creature; it will not be vnprofitable, if we draw this a little neerer into particulars. That all the Creatures are so at his disposing, that they stirre not a jot, but at his command, you shall see in *Eccles. 3.* the generall there set downe; *I know that whatsoeuer God shall doe, it shall be for ever, to it can no man adde, nor from it can no man diminish, for God hath done it that men should feare before him.* (Marke) *I know that whatsoeuer God shall doe, it shall be for ever.* That is: the creature cannot alter any course that *God* hath set, neither at this time, nor at any other time, but it shall run in a constant course, like a strong streame that cannot be resisted, it shall

We should see  
God in the  
good and euill  
men doe vs.

Eccles. 3. 14.



shall be for ever, *to it shall no man adde, and from it can no man diminish.* That is. The creature cannot onely doe no substantiall action, but, when the *Lord* hath done any thing, the Creature cannot adde the least thing to it, and as it cannot adde, so it cannot diminish, nor take away the least thing from any blessing that he bestoweth, nor any evill that he will doe, the creature addes not a jot to that evill, to that crosse, to that affliction, nor the creature mittigates not the crosse in the least degree, though you thinke it doth: But that we shall answer afterward. But why is this? *This* (sayth he) *the Lord hath done, that men should feare before him.* As if hee should say; they would not feare me, but they would feare the creature, and looke to the creature, if it were able to adde any thing, or to detract any thing, either to or from any blessing, or comfort, that we haue, or to or from any evill, or any crosse that lyes vpon vs. Now, that it is so, that the creature is thus guided and disposed by him, that it is able to do nothing without him, we will not instance in the vnreasonable creatures, w<sup>ch</sup> you all belecue well enough to be at his command, but wee will instance in those that seeme to be at the greatest libertie: that is the wils and vnderstandings of men; certainly if there be any liberty in the creature it is there, the will of man is so free a thing, the devises of a mans heart, his turning of himselfe this way or that way, who can set any Rules to it? But in this the *Lord* guides all: take it in other mens hearts.

*Pro. 29. Every man seekes the face of the Ruler, but his*

The wils of  
men guided  
by God.

Prov. 29. 26.

*his Judgement is from the Lord.* That is; men are deceived in this, if they thinke the Ruler, as of himselfe, can doe any thing, though he seeme to haue much power and abilitie, to doe some good, and hurt to men, if any else can; therefore, (sayth he) *men seeke his face*, but, he is not able to doe any thing, but what the *Lord* dictates to him, or permits him, what he prescribes to him to doe, what he sayth he shall doe, just so farre he goes and no farther; for the whole judgement that a man hath, it is from him, it is from the *Lord*. That is. All the good and evill that he doth, that mind of his, from whence it proceedeth, is guided and fashioned by the *Lord*, vpon every particular occasion, whensoever he hath to doe with vs, or wee with him: but that is for men that are without vs, for other men.

But, now, for a mans selfe: there is the same reason, indeed, of the one as there is of the other, but man thinkes he hath libertie, he thinkes he can goe to such a place, or not goe; he can doe such a thing, or not doe it; it is very true, and therefore the *All-mightie* power of *God* is seene herein, which wee are not able to comprehend, that when there is such a libertie in the soule, in the will of man, in the devices and thoughts of a mans heart, yet that they should be all so guided by him, that there is not the least stirring of them this way or that way, without his ordering and concurrence; even, as you see, Birds flying, they seeme to flie at libertie, yet that all should be guided and ordered by an over-ruling hand; Such  
are

2

Gods power  
in guiding vs  
in our libertie,

Note.



Mans devises  
ruled by Gods  
purpose.

Prov. 19. 21.

are the wiles of men, & that you shall see in these particulars; when a man thinkes with himselfe, he consults with himselfe about a thing that lyes before him, that is in his owne power to doe, or not to doe, in this, sayth the Text, *Prov. 19. 21. Many devises are in a mans heart, but the counsels of the Lord shall stand.* That is. Though there be such varietie of devices, that he is able to cast things this way or that way, and to reason to and fro, and to thinke with himselfe, I can doe this, and I can doe the contrary, yet, sayth he, looke what the *Lord* by his counsell, will haue that man to resolue vpon, looke what issue he hath put to his deliberations, that counsell shall stand, and all those devices shall be guided and ruled by it, and not goe step out of it.

Prov. 16. 1.

Come now to the counsels of a mans heart, when a man hath thought this with himselfe, I will speake or vtter this, or act that, as he hath resolved to do, you would think this man hath power to doe it. *Prov. 16. There are preparations in a mans heart, but the answer of the mouth is from the Lord.* That is. Even when it is so neere, that you thinke, there is nothing that can come betweene that a man hath resolved with himselfe, and sayth this will I doe, or this will I speake, saith the *Lord* notwithstanding, this preparation, though you haue made all these ready, that now it is vpon the very poynt, on the act of executiō, yet now, saith he, the answer shall be given, as I thinke meete: and that which is sayd of answering, may be applied to all kindes of actions when a man hath thought



thought with himselfe, and hath made his heart readie, that all the wheelles of his soule are guided, and turned, and composed to effect such a businesse, yet the *Lord* comes betweene the cup and the lip, betweene the preparation and the execution, and he doth but that which the *Lord* would haue done. Thus it is in others, and this vse you may make of it by the way; take a man that is full of good thoughts towards you, the *Lord* can turne it in an instant; take a man that is full of evil devices towards you, if the *Lords* counsell be otherwise, that shall stand. Put the case that the *Lord* suffer him to goe so farre as to resolue to say, I will doe some hurt, or I wil doe some good to such a man, yet this preparation of the heart shall not stand, vnlesse it be the same that the *Lord* hath appointed; that shall be spoken, & that shall be acted; and therefore, you shall see what conclusion is gathered vpon it, *Pro. 20. 24.* sayth the wise man there, *The steps of a man are ruled by the Lord, how can then a man vnderstand his owne way?* That is. A man in the morning, when he riseth, and thinkes with himselfe, this and this will I doe sayth he, deceiue not thy selfe, thy steppes are ruled by the *Lord*, thou takest not a steppe into any action, thou takest not a steppe into any good or euill to thy selfe, thou takest not a steppe into prosperitie or aduersitie, but it is ruled, and over-ruled by the *Lord*, so that a man cannot vnderstand his owne way. That is. He cannot say this, and this will I doe, but like that in *Dan. 5. 23.* *Him hast thou not feared, in whose hands is thy life, and all thy wayes.*

Gods Coun-  
sell shall stand.

*Pro. 20. 24.*

*Dan. 5. 23.*

*ways.* That is. Every thing that thou doest, every steppe that thou takest, every thing that befalls thee. This shall be enough to shew you, that man in his actions is at the disposing of the *Lord.*

All Creatures  
Gods Armies.

Isay 40. 26.

As for other creatures, if you will haue a prooffe for it, to make it euident to you, that no creature stirres without him, cōsider that in *Esa. 40.* speaking there of *ŷ armies of the Lord*, they are called *ŷ armies of the Lord*, because every creature is like a Souldier that stands vnder his Generall, readie to goe, readie to doe, and to execute whatsoeuer he commands. In the 26. Verse, *Lift vp thine eyes on high, and behold who hath created these things; he brings out their Armies by number, and calls them all by their names, by the greatnesse of his power, and his mighty strength nothing failes.* This is the thing I would haue you obserue out of this place, that they are all *Gods armies.* Now an army consists of many particulars; take all the creatures vnder the cope of heaven, they are not single, you know, there are multitudes of them, there are many Beasts, many Fowles, many Fishes, saith the *Lord* here, I cal them every one by their name. That is. He knowes every one of them, notwithstanding, that infinite number of them, he knowes them every one: even as a Master knowes every servant in his house, and can call them by their names; So, saith he, every particular creature he knowes by name. It is a comfortable consideration, when you cōsider that there is not one of these, but the *Lord* knowes them by name, and they are his Instruments

fruments to doe either good or hurt, as it pleaseth him; the sleepe that you take, the meate that you eate, the comforts that you haue, whatsoever is done by any creature, all comforts come from him: but this is enough for that. But, that wherein there seems to be the greatest liberty, the greatest varietie, the greatest changeablenes, the minds of men, we see also are disposed by him. That is the first thing we are to shew, to make this good, that the creature can neither doe good nor euill; because though it doe both (for that there is such a thing experience shewes, that the creature doth good and hurt, and every creature sometimes comforts, and sometimes hurts and grieues, but that is at *Gods* disposing) and since it is an Instrument, and is in the hands of the *Lord*, as an Axe, or a Sword, or a Staffe, and is not vsed, except it be at his disposing; it appeares, that it is perfectly and absolutely subject to the dominion of *God*.

But, now, when the *Lord*, hath sent such a creature to thee, and thou hast it before thee (that is the second thing) it is not able to comfort, nor hurt thee, without him. Put the case, the creature be pregnant full of comfort, yet it is not able to giue downe that milke of comfort that is in it, except the *Lord* educe and bring it forth, except the *Lord* apply it in particular to thee. And the same I may say of any hurtfull creature; be it never so pregnant with euill, be it never so full of it, yet, it is not able to exercise it, it is not able to act that hurt it hath, except the *Lord* bring

The creature though it be present cannot helpe or hurt of it selfe.



bring it forth, except the *Lord* set it a worke, and vse it for such a purpose: as an *Axe* if it be never so sharpe, yet, if the *Carpenter* doe not vse it to cut such a *Tree*, to lop such a branch, it is not able to doe it.

Comfort ariseth from a fitnessse of the minde to the condition.

Now the ground of it, why the creature is not able to doe this, is from hence, that all the comfort that ariseth from the creature, proceeds from that sutablenesse and that agreeablenesse which is betweene the mind and it. That is; when the blessing and the minde are fitted one to another, as the sword to the sheath, or as the meate to the palate, then the creature comforts; but if there be an vsutablenesse, a disagreement, a disproportion, betweene the Creature and the minde, now thou receivest no comfort from it: for what is it to thee? for comfort lyes not simply in any thing: but that is comfortable that agreeth with the appetite, and the desire of a man. Whatsoever it is, let the desire be what it will, if that which thou hast, suite with thy desire, it is comfortable, when a mans heart is sad, such actions as are sutable to that disposition, are pleasant; weeping is pleasant, and complaints are pleasant; musique grieues, because that is not sutable to the present disposition. And so in every thing else. It is no matter what thy condition is, but what sutablenesse and agreeablenesse is betweene thy minde and thy condition; if thou be in never so good condition, yet except *God* make that and thy mind to agree, thou shalt receiue no comfort from it; if a man be in meane condition, if he be in prison, if he be

in

Note.

if in the lowest estate, if he be in bondage, if he be in exile, whatsoever he is, if the *Lord* make but that condition and his minde to agree, it will be comfortable enough. And, therefore, hence comes the discomfort that is in the Creatures, when a man hath them, and enjoyes them, it may be, those things which thou hast, are such as sute not with thee, somewhat there is that thou affectest, something that thou desirest, that thou hast not, and that thou canst not get.

As, for instance, *Haman* had an estate full of comfort, and of all kind of blessings, yet there was not a sutablenes between his mind & that estate, one thing came betweene, *Mordecai* sate in the Gate, and, therefore, this availed him nothing. That is. Though there were all this together, yet since there was not a conjunction of the facultie and of the object, this availed him nothing. Why? because it was not sutable to his desire, there was something that he would haue, that his affections and appetite were set on, that if he had, he should be well. And therefore, sayth he, all this avayles me nothing, that is his expression. So *Amnon*, he was the Kings son, and had all things that a Kings sonne might haue, yet all this was nothing, there was something els, that his heart was set on, that he had not. Many the like instances I might giue, but I neede not. Therefore, I say, when the *Lord* puts an vsutablenes between thy minde and the comforts that thou hast, and suffers thee to haue an inordinate appetite; as women which haue good meate to cate, yet sometime doe long after

H

ashes,

Instances.

Hester 5. 13.

Simile.



Inordinate  
desires make  
the life vn-  
comfortable.

The appre-  
hension of the  
mind, maketh  
happie or mi-  
serable.

ashes and coales, and such things; so when *God* giues a man an estate, when hee compasseth him about with mercies and blessings on all sides, yet if he suffer such an inordinate appetite to take hold of him, to desire some odde thing, some by-thing that possesseth his soule, he may haue the blessing, and haue it present with him, and yet receiue no comfort from it at all. Now, all this *Be-  
loved*, tends to this purpose, that you may know that it is the *Lord* that giues all good & evil, both in that the creature is at his disposing that doth it, and, not so onely, but the efficacy of the creature (to exercise such an act of good or evil to vs, that we should receiue actuall comfort or discomfort from it) it is from him, and all, I say, chiefly ariseth from that dominion that the *Lord* hath over the spirits of men, it doth not lye so much in the Creature, as in framing the apprehension of the minde, and therein is seene the truth of this point chiefly that we haue now delivered, that the *Lord* onely is the Author of good and hurt, and not the Creature; because he guides the apprehension; for, if it be true as it is most true, *Animus cuiusq;* &c. it is the mind and apprehension of every man that maketh his life pleasant, or it is the minde of man that maketh him happie, and not the thing, then the *Lord* that guides the minde, and that fashions the heart, he hath the onely hand in making the life pleasant. When thou hast gotten all thou wouldest haue, yet what is that except thy heart be fashioned to it? This you shall see in *Psal.*

*Pf.* 33. 13. 14.

33. *The Lord looked downe from his dwelling, and  
from*



from his habitation, upon the men that dwell upon the earth, and fashions their hearts everyone of them. (Marke) he fashions their heart. That is; A man hath such a frame of heart, such an apprehension of things, as it pleaseth God to give him: So that, take any estate or condition that a man is in (as you know there is a great varietie of conditions, to be rich, and to be poore, to be in prison, and to be at libertie, to be in health, and to be sicke, to be in honour, and to be in disgrace) these are, as it were, the severall moulds, into which the Lord casts men. Now, if he will frame the spirit to that mould, like soft clay to the seale (for that is an expression in *Iob*) I say, if he fashion the spirit to it, & make it pliable to the condition, to that mould, a man will beare and indure it well enough, hee shall find comfort in it, it will be nothing to him. And therefore the *Saints*, the *Apostles*, & *Prophets*, when God was with them to fashion their hearts to passe through the varietie of troubles, might say, of themselves, *Non patimur &c.* They seemed to suffer, but in truth did not suffer. What was it to *Paul*, when he endured that state & condition that he did, when his heart was so fashioned to it as it was? Now, I say, in that the Lord hath this dominion over the spirits of men, hence it is that he makes a mans life comfortable. Put the case, thy hand hath gotten much, that thou hast gathered much wealth together, yet, you know *Eccles.* 2. *There is no profit to a man, but that he eat and drinke; and delight his soule with profit after his labour, I say this also, that it was of the hand of God.*

Whence it is  
that sufferings  
are easie to  
the *Saints*.

*Eccles.* 2. 24.

That is. All this is nothing, except a man delight in it, except a man enjoy the comfort of it. Well, but is not that an easie thing, when the mind and the state are put together? No, (sayth the Wiseman) *this is of the hand of the Lord*. That is. Except the *Lord* doe it by a speciall hand vpon the Creature, it is not able to doe it, except he fit the mind to the state, except he sute them together, it cannot doe it: so I may say of all things else. A honey-Combe may be very bitter to a man, his stomacke may be so disposed, as in a Feaver, (you know) that which is sweet seemeth bitter; againe that which is bitter may be sweete to a man; so those that are the greatest cōforts may be bitter, and those things that may be bitter to other men, may be sweet to him. It is sayd of evill men, *they feare where no feare is*. That is. When there is no cause of feare, yet the *Lord* can so fashion their hearts, and so frame their apprehension, that they shall feare where there is no cause of feare, when they are but *laruae & spectra*, shadowes of evill. Againe, another feares not when there is cause of feare. That is. Though things be put vpon him that are terrible, yet the *Lord* can take away that feare. And as we say of that affectiō, so I may say of any other, of joy, and gladnes, he fashions the heart, see *Deut. 28. 75.* where the *Lord* threatneth many curses, & this is one amongst the rest, *You shall goe into a strange Nation, and there you shall liue*. A man might object thus; Though I liue in a strange Nation, yet I hope I may haue some rest and some comfort there. No, sayth the *Lord*, you must

*Quest.*

*Answ.*

God is Lord  
of the affecti-  
ons.

*Simile.*

*Deut. 28. 75.*



must know this, that I haue dominion over the apprehension of your hearts & affections, when you come thither. *I will giue you trembling hearts, and sorrow of minde.* That is. Though there be comforts there, yet you shall not take comfort from them; and the reason is added, *for thine eyes shall fayle.* That is; When thou comest thither, I will put a restless vnquiet disposition into thee, that thou shalt not content thy selfe with the comfort thou findest, but shalt haue a longing desire to returne to thine owne home, and that thou shalt not be able to doe; so thou shalt haue a restless minde whilst thou art there. Thus will I follow thee with judgements. I am sorry, I haue stayde so long in the doctrinall part, the life of this poynt is in the vse and application of it; I will adde a litle, that I may not wholly dismisse you without it.

And first, this vse you may make of it. If the *Lord* be *All-sufficient*; hence we should learne how to guide our comfort, how to guide our joy, how to guide our affections. That is. Labour to see that fulnesse that is in *God*, and that emptinesse that is in the creature; if the *Lord* be thus *All-sufficient, Beloved*, then let your hearts be satisfied with him alone, let them be filled with him, let them be so bottomed vpon him, & so strengthened by him, that you need not to goe out from him to fetch in any comfort from any creature whatsoever; if the *Lord* fill the heart, it shall strengthen you against all carnall joy. What need you goe out to others, if you haue enough in him: it will

Note.

Vse.

How to guide  
our comfort.



The whole strength of our spirit should be bestowed on the Lord, & why?

strengthen you against that expence of spirit, and of your thoughts, which you bestow vpon vaine things; for, wee haue but a short time to liue in this world, the strength of our minde is the most precious thing we haue, the thoughts & affectiōs that we haue, the businesse, the actiuenesse of our mindes, we should be carefull to improve them, we should be carefull that none of this water run besides the Mill. That is. That it be not bestowed vpon things that are vnworthy of it. If the Lord be *All-sufficient*, why should you not bestow it altogether vpon him? Why should you spend it vpon the creature? Why should your minde be occupied about it? Why should you be so intēt vpon them? Why should you be so subject to carnall griefes, and feares, and carnall desires? Surely all these should be taken vp about the Lord: for he looks for it at our hands, *I am All-sufficient*: therefore let all these be bestowed vpon me.

And againe, as we should learne to see this fulnesse in *God*, to haue our hearts bottomed and fixed vpon him, so we should labour to see the emptines of the creature. But, you will say, who doth not know that the Creature is emptie? that is no new thing. *Beloved*, it is certaine wee doe not fully know it, if we did, what meane those complaints, & those griefes, that we take vp vpon every evill accident that fals out? for nothing is said to be empty, but when you looke for a fulnesse in it, you say a Well is emptie of water, because you looke for water there? you doe not say a Rocke is emptie, for you do not expect it there.

So,

*Quest.*

*Ans.*

We know not the emptines of the Creature.

When a thing is sayd to be emptie.

So we may say of the creature: if we thought, and did beleue, that there were an emptinesse in it, we would never expect so much frō it as we doe. But, when we complaine and say, I thought to haue found such and such things, and I find them not, it is a signe that we looke for a fulnes there; and therefore let vs labour to correct that conceit, it will helpe vs against those griefes & complaints, to which we are so much subject; let vs looke for no more in the Creature then is in it. All grieue and stirring of affection, ariseth from this expectation, this over-weening, this high-prizing of the creature: if you finde inconstancie in men; why doe you looke for constancie in them? they are creatures, if you looke for stabilitie in your estate, and wonder why a change should come (I was heretofore rich, and now I am poore, I was honourable, and now I am in disgrace) why didst thou expect stabilitie in that which is subject to vanitie? Things would not trouble vs, if we did not expect too much from them, if we knew there were an emptines in the; he that lookes not for much from the Creature, can never be much deceived; he that lookes for much from God, shall be sure to haue his desire answered and satisfied; he shall never fall short of his expectation. And therefore, labour to alter your conceits that way, that whensoever any thing fals out, you may not be troubled at it, you may not feare for that accident, for it ariseth hence, because you looked for more in it, then was in it. It is a saying that wee haue in morall

Griefe comes from expectation frustrate.

We canot expect too much from God.



Philosophy, that after a man is put into expectation of any thing, then every affection is stirred more vehemently, whereas had he not had that expectation hee would haue bene more quiet. Therefore if we were perswaded, and convinced of the vanitie of the creature, and the emprines in it, we would never expect much from it; and, if we did expect nothing, our hearts would be quieted within vs, for all varieties of accidents that fall out; for, I say, it ariseth hence, that we thinke there is some fulnesse, some stabilitie in them, we are not fully perswaded of the vanitie of the creature, we thinke it can doe good or hurt. You will say; Is not the creature able to doe good or hurt? I will name but one place, besides that I named before, 1 Cor. 7. 30. *Let those that weepe be as those that weepe not, and those that rejoyce as those that rejoyce not, and those that buy as those that possessed not, and they that vse this world as they that vse it not, for the fashion of this world goeth away.* When the Lord giues such a precept as this, certainly there is a ground for it (as we haue often told you) that in all the Commandements of God, if they were open to vs, if wee did see the ground of them, we would see that there were so much reason for them, that if God, did not command them, you would see it best for you to practise them, you would see reason for it. Now when the Lord bids them that grieue, to do it as though they grieved not, and them that rejoyce, to doe it as though they rejoyced not, I gather this from it that the creature can do very little good or hurt; for,

Quest.

Ans.

1 Cor. 7. 30.

The Commandements  
of God grounded  
on reason.



for, if the creature could doe much hurt; certainly, then we might grieue to some purpose; but, sayth he, let the evill be what it will, yet *grieue as though you grieved not*. That is; Let it be as good as nothing, that as a man is sayd to heare as though he heard not, and to see as he saw not, when he doth not attend the tale that is told, but yet he heares it: so sayth he, if you haue some grieffe, let it be so small, so little, as if you grieved not; And so likewise for Ioy; Put the case, you had all the preferments, all the comforts & blessings in this world heaped vpon you, yet rejoyce in these so remisly, as if you rejoyced not. Now, it is certaine, if they could doe vs any speciall good, we might rejoyce in a greater measure then so: but, when the *Lord* sayth, *rejoyce as if you rejoyced not*, it is certaine they can doe vs very little good. That is; So little as if they did vs no good at all.

But, you will say, it scemes they can doe vs a little good, whereas it was sayd before, the creature can doe neither good nor hurt.

We will answer that briefly; The meaning is this, that the *Lord* giues vs leaue to grieue a little, and to rejoyce a little, so that it be in remisse manner, so that it be kept within bounds, but the creature can doe vs no good, nor no hurt at all of it selfe, but as it is disposed by the *Lord*, and therefore though it doe something, yet that is done by *God*, and not meerey by the creature. So the rule holds good, though the creature doe something, yet seeing it is not of it selfe, but as it is an Instrument,

*Ob.*

*Ans.*  
The Creature  
doth neither  
good nor hurt  
of it selfe.

ment, you may truly say, it is not the creature that hath done any thing, but the *Lord* hath done me good and hurt by the Creature.

*Quest.*

But, why then is it sayd, it is a little? for this takes all away.

*Answ.*

The Creature  
doth little  
comparatiue-  
ly.

I answer, the meaning is this, it can doe a little. That is; All the evill any creature can doe, it is but a little in regard of the eternall that *God* inflicts on the soule, it is as good as nothing in comparison of those eternall good things. As if hee should say, The things that belong to *God* immediately, the things that belong to the Kingdome of *God*, and to a mans salvation, the things that are spirituall and eternall, these are good indeed, and evill indeede, if any of these befall you, you must grieue exceedingly: for you haue great cause: for that can doe you great hurt, and so grace can doe you much good, for it tends to eternitie, it tends to set things even, or odde betweene Almighty *God* and you; and therefore, in these things, let your rejoycing be very great, and your griefe very great. But for any thing that belongs to this present life, it is exceeding small; it is as good as nothing.

So much for this time.

F I N I S.



THE  
THIRD  
SERMON.

GENESIS 17. 1.

*I am GOD All-sufficient.*



He next Use we are to make of this, that *God is All-sufficient*, is, to learne to be content with him alone for our portion. This is a Use both to those *that are strangers to the life of God*, and likewise to those that are within the *Covenant*; To those that are strangers, to bring them in, for the *Lord* propounds that but vpon reasonable conditions. It is true, he requires of you absolute & perfect obedience, that you serue him altogether, but then withall he propounds to you an absolute & full reward, *I am All-sufficient*, you shall neede nothing out of me. As he requires you to leaue all for his sake, so he promiseth that he will  
be

*Use 2.*  
To be content  
with GOD  
alone, the  
ground of it.

I  
For those  
without the  
Covenant.



Heb. 11. 6.

be to you in stead of all things; and therefore let men consider that in *Heb. 11. 6. Whosoever comes to God, must beleue that God is, and that he is a rewarder of them that serue him.* That is; a man will never change except it be for the better, except a man thinke his condition will be better, with the *Lord*; than it was out of him, he will never come in, but, when he is once perswaded of that, he cannot keepe out, you know, that argument is vsed by the *Prodigall Sonne*, saith he, *if I stay here, I shall perish, if I goe to my Fathers house, his seruaunts haue bread enough;* that double argument brought him home. So when a man considers, out of *God* there is no sufficiency at all, there is not any thing in the creature, as we shewed to you before at large: then if you come home to the *Lord*, there is *All-sufficiencie* in him. That is; All your desires shall be satisfied, there is nothing that you neede, nothing that you want, but it shall be supplied. This, I say, is that that brings a man to consider of *Gods All-sufficiencie*; but this we doe not meane to enlarge now, but rather procede to the other.

Whether a man be come in or not, there will not be much difference in the application of this that we are now to deliver, to be content to haue *God* alone to be our portion; for that is the cause of all our vnevennesse, and of our vnperfect walking with *God*, we would haue somewhat besides. And therefore the *Lord* taketh this course with his Disciples, he tels them the worst first, he tels them they must part with all, that they must deny themselues throughly & perfectly, & they must be

Luke 15.

2

For those  
within the  
Covenant.

The ground  
of vneven  
walking to-  
wards God.

be content with him alone, because the *Lord* knew, otherwise, they would never haue constantly followed him, and though they might haue gone far with him, yet when they had met with a rub, when that, which they would not part with, and the service of *God* should come in competition, surely, they would turne aside, and leaue him. Now, you must consider this, and worke your heart vnto it, that if you haue him alone, it is enough; for if men were perswaded, that he is enough, they would be content with him alone.

When the Sunne shines to you, though there be never a Starre, is it not day? Doe you not call it so? Againe, when all the Starres shine, and the Sunne is set, is not that night? Is it not so when you haue the *Lord* alone? Suppose you haue nothing but him for your portion, shall not the *Lord* be sufficient to make you happie? Is *He* not a *Sunne* and a *Shield*, sayth the *Psalmist*? Is *He* not a *Sunne*. That is, *All-sufficient*, to fill you with comfort of all kindes? What then though you haue nothing but him alone? Againe, put case you had all those creatures, all those Starres to shine to you (for they haue an excellency in them, they haue a light, and a comfort, though it be a borrowed and derived light, as wee heard, such as they receiue from the Sunne) suppose you haue them, it is but night notwithstanding, you are but in a state of miserie. And therefore, why should you not bee content to haue the *Lord* alone for your portion? Take all the *Creatures*, and you finde, by experience, that when they are  
 enjoyed,

*Simile.*



*Salomons ex-  
perience should  
instruct vs in  
the vanitie of  
earthly things.*

*Eccles. 1.*

*Simile.*

injoyed, you see an end of their perfection, you quickly finde a bottom in them; the heart hasteth after somewhat else, you quickly sucke out the honey that is in every one of those flowers, and, when you haue done so, you go to another flower, and to another, and no where doth the soule finde rest. *God* did purposely set forth *Salomon*, and gaue him all things that his heart could desire, so that no man had the like before him, nor any man since. And for what end doe you thinke did the *Lord* it? Surely, for this purpose, that he might be a perpetuall example (as things were written for our learning, so all these things that were done in those former times, which are the Rule of these latter, they were done for our learning) he had all varietie of blessings, more then any man else can hope to attaine, yet you know what verdict he giues of them; *All is vanitie and vexation of spirit*. That is. He found in them an emptinesse of that good he looked for, they were emptie Clouds, Wells without water. Againe, they were a vexation of spirit. That is. There was the presence of much euill in them that he looked not for, many stings, many troubles. And therefore why should you not be content with *God* alone? Take all outward things, before you enjoy them, they seeme to be great; but when you haue injoyed them, & tryed them, you quickly finde a bottom in them; for there is but a false lustre that Sathan and your owne lusts put vpon them, they haue gilded out-sides, but when they come to wearing, the gilt weares off, and you finde after a while,



while, what they are. But come to spirituall things; the more you wear them, the more you finde the beautie and excellency that is in them; for there is a dust & a rust that is cast vpon them, which likewise the wearing takes off. And therefore why should you not be content to take *God* alone? What is it that man so seekes after? is it not happines, and comfort? Alas! suppose that you had all these in the highest degree that you can looke for, when all is done, you shall finde that but labour lost, you shall finde no stability in them. You know what *David* sayth in *Psal.* 30. when he thought his mountain was made strong and vnder-propped well on each side; What caused now an alteration? He doth not say, there was a change in the thing, he doth not say his mountaine was pulled downe, or that there was an alteration in his estate, that this or that accident fell out, that the people rebelled against him now, which did not before, or, that he had lost such and such friends that he had before. But, sayth he, *thou turnedst away thy face, and then I was troubled.* The meaning is this, that, if there was a change in his estate, the change in *God* was the cause, so then it was the *Lord* that comforted him, though he saw it not, it was not the mountaine that held him vp, it was not all those blessings that he enjoyed in it that refreshed his heart, but it was the light that shined through them, and therefore he found, when this light was withdrawne, though he injoyed them still, his comfort was gone. So, I say, if it were from the things they might

Note. ¶

*Psal.* 30. 7.

It is *God* that comforteth through the *Creatures.*

The Creature  
without God  
as the ayre  
without light.

might continue your comforts to you, but when there is a change in heavē, then comes the change vpon earth. And on the other side; if *God* continue constant, if he remaine safe, you need feare nothing, the Creature followes him, it is he that shines through them. What if a man had the ayre and no light in it? So, what if we had never so much, and no beames flowing from him through them, who onely is the *God of all comfort*, and the Father of all consolation?

But, my *Beloved*, (to be brieft) Put the case a man were stript of all things, & suppose he were exiled out of his own Country, suppose he were reduced to extreame povertie, or shut vp close Prisoner, suppose all employments were taken from him, and he were laid aside like a broken vessell; now for a man to say, yet *God* is enough, and that he is cōtent with him alone for his portion. That is the tryall, and this we ought to doe: and there is great reason why we should doe it; you shall see it was practised by the Saints: When *Abraham* was an exile from his Countrey, and had not a foote of land, was not the *Lord All-sufficient* to him? did he not provide for him abundantly? When *Eliab* fled, and had no meate, he had neither money, nor any body to provide any thing for him, did not the *Lord* provide for him? he set the Creature a-worke to doe that, to feede him in an extraordinary way, when the ordinary fayled. When *Paul* and *Silas* were shut vp in Prison, yet the *Lord* filled them with joy & comfort; you know their feete were fast in the Stockes,

yet

God comforts  
his in an ex-  
traordinarie  
way, when o-  
ther meanes  
fayle.

Instances.



yet they sang with joy of heart, there was such a flush of joy, their hearts were so filled with it, that they could not containe. If a man be brought to povertie, it cannot be beyond that of *Iobs*; was it not enough for *Iob* to haue *God* for his portion? did he not soone turne it? did he not soone take away that, and turne the River another way, as it were, and fill him with abundance?

Oh; but you will say, if I were a spirit, and consisted onely of an immateriall soule, & no more, I should be content, (it may be), to haue the *Lord* for my portion, but, besides that, I haue a body, I haue a temporall life, and therefore I need temporall comforts, and therefore though I would haue the *Lord*, I would haue these things added, for, how should I be without them?

Ob.

To this I answer. First; that, though thou be deprived of all these temporall blessings & comforts, yet thou shalt finde them all in the *Lord*, I say, though they were all lost; and all scattered, though thou wert stript of them al, yet thou shalt finde them all in the *Lord*, if thou haue him alone. You will say, how can that be? This you must know, that all that *God* hath wrought in the creature, all the excellencie, all the beautie, and delight, and comfort, he hath put into the creature, into meate, drinke, musicke, flowers, yea, into all creatures of all sorts; who is the cause of all this? Is not the *Lord* the cause? It is certaine, then, that what soever is in the effect, is in the cause, and in the cause in a more excellent manner. There are some causes that produce but their like, as when

Answer.

2 Ob.

Answer.

Comfort and excellencie is in *God* as the cause, in the Creature as the effect.



fire begets fire, or, when a man begets a man, here there is an equalitie betweene the cause and the effects: but there are other causes that are vnlike their effects; as the Sunne produceth many effects, that haue a dissimilitude to it, it hardens, and softens, and heates, and dryes, and all these are in the Sunne, but they are in a more excellent manner, then you shall see them in the effect: that is but a poore similitude, to expresse y<sup>e</sup> I would, but yet it is the best we haue. Looke now vpon whatsoeuer thou hast found in the creature. whatsoeuer beautie thou hast seene, whatsoeuer delight thou hast tasted of, whatsoeuer excellencie thou hast discovered, and be perswaded of this, that all this is in the *Lord* in a more excellent manner, than it is in the *Creature*.

*Quest.*

Well, you will say, I grant this; but what followes on that? what is this to my comfort?

*Answ.*

The Lord communicates to his, those comforts that are in him.  
Mark, 10. 29.

*Beloved,* It is this to thy comfort, If thou loose all, make vse of that in *Mark. 10.* *If thou loose father, and mother, or brethren, or sisters, or lands, and houses, and all that you haue; you shall find all these in him: for if all these comforts be in him, if thou hast him alone, thou shalt finde all these comforts communicated to thee. That is; Thou shalt finde the comfort of them in a greater measure, in a more excellent manner, than thou shouldst in the things themselues; why else should he say, You shall haue an hundred-fold with persecution? And marke the instance, for you shall find the promise repeated againe, and he names them every one; I say to you, there is no man that forsakes father, or*  
*mother,*

mother, wife, and children, brother, or sister, or lands, and houses, for my sake, and the Gospels, but he shall receiue an hundred-fold in this world, and in the world to come eternall life. That is; you shall finde comfort in God alone; if thou be shut vp alone, and yet verfest with God, and hast communion with him, and seest no creature in the world besides him, thou shalt haue abundance of sweet comfort: take all those varieties of comforts that these giue; as, lands giue one kinde of comfort, and Parents another, and wiues another; thou shalt finde all these varieties of comforts in him, he will fill thy soule with all these, for they are in him alone. Marke that reason that the Lord vsed to Moses, when he complained of his tongue, that he was not able to speake; *Send*, sayth he, *by whom thou shouldest send*; (sayth the Lord) *who made the tongue?* who made the dumbe, and the deafe, and the hearing, and the seeing? *Is it not I the Lord?* As if he should say; *Moses*, surely I am the maker of all these, though I haue not y things in me (the Lord hath no tongue, he hath no eye) yet sayth he thou shalt finde them all in me. God comforts him with this, *I will be with thee*; when *Moses* might haue made this objection; Though thou be with me, yet I shall want a tongue to speake, what will that helpe? Sayth he, I, who made that, haue a power in me, and if I be with thee, it shall be sufficient. I will finde out a way for thee, that shall be as good as if thou hadst the most eloquent tongue in the world. The same may I say of all other comforts in the world; who made them? who made

I 2

those

The creatures  
yeeld different  
comforts.

Exod. 4. 21.

GODS pre-  
sence supplies  
our want of  
the creatures.



those fathers and mothers? who made those brothers and sisters, that thou art deprived of in exile or vpon any such occasion, in povertie and disgrace? Is it not he that made them? What if the *Lord* will be with thee? What if he will goe with thee into banishment, or into prison, as he did with *Ioseph*? What if he will be with thee in disgrace? What if he will be with thee in povertie? Is there not enough in him, who is full of all comfort? He can fill thee with all varietie by that immediate communicating of himselfe.

If all the comfort that is in the Creature were not in GOD, the Saints in heauen should be losers.

*Beloved*, what doe you thinke heaven is? When you are in heauen, do you thinke your estate shall be worse then it is here? You see what varieties of comforts we now haue here. When we come to heauen, shall we haue lesse varieties? No; we shall haue more; how shall we haue it? for we shall haue none but *God* alone; we shall haue fellowship only with him. If there were not that varietie in him that is in the creature, certainly, we shall be losers, the soule shall not be filled, nor satisfied: And therefore, sayth the Text; *There shall need no Sunne nor Moone*: all the creatures that now giue vs comfort shall be taken away, why? *for the Lord shall be Sunne & Moone*, he shall be every thing, he shall be all in all things. That is; Thou shalt finde them all collected in him; & doe you thinke, that the *Lord* shall be thus in heauen, & will he not be so to his seruants vpon earth? It is certaine, wherefoever he pleaseth to communicate himselfe to any man, to reveale himselfe, and to take any man into fellowship with himself, if he please to come



to the soule of a man, to dwell with him, to sup  
with him, as he hath promised so to do and doth  
then when all other comforts fayle, at that time  
*God* delighteth to come, then thou shalt finde va-  
riety of comfort enough. And therefore, why  
shouldst thou not be contented to haue *God* alone  
for thy portion? Thou shalt finde enough in him,  
as in an adæquate object. This is the first thing I  
haue to shew you, that in your very communion  
with him, you shall finde enough, when the *Lord*  
doth this, when thou art filled with the joy of  
the holy Ghost, what will all be to thee? what do  
you thinke all the world was to the Apostles, if  
it should haue bene presented to them, if one  
should haue presented them with a Kingdome,  
with all that ever the sons of men could devise?  
Doe you thinke they would haue regarded them  
much? Surely, they would not, as they did not  
regard the contrary. Imprisonment was nothing,  
& death was nothing to them; you see with what  
facility they passed through them. By the rule of  
Contraries, outward happinesse had bene no-  
thing: for he that grieues much for any outward  
losse, he would much rejoyce in the contrary  
contentment: when the Apostles were thus filled  
with the joy of the holy Ghost, in regard of the  
one, certainly they would not haue regarded the  
other, if it had bene presented vnto them; what  
was now the joy in the holy Ghost? it was but  
the *Lord* communicating himselfe: They had  
but the *Lord* alone, they were but led into a neerer  
fellowship with him: there was but a little crevis  
I 3 opened,

Pleasures and  
troubles are  
small things,  
when GOD  
filleth the  
soule.

The ground  
of joy in per-  
secution.

opened, as it were, to see that excellency and fullnesse, and that *All-sufficientie* in *God*, and it filled them so, that they cared for nothing besides. And this, we would worke our hearts to, if we did looke vpon *God* as an adæquate object.

Ob.

But, you will say, though this be something to haue my soule filled with comfort thus; yet there are many necessities, many vses, that I haue of o-ther things.

Answ.

All Gods at-tributes are for his chil-dren.

Therefore, I will goe yet further. Dost thou consider the *Lord*, what he is? goe through all his attributes, consider his almightie power, consider his great wisdome, his counsell, and his vnderstanding, consider his great goodnesse, and his truth, and kindnesse, consider his patience, and his long suffering, &c. all these are thine. My *Be-loved, God* is not knowne in the world, we consider not aright what he saith, when he sayth, *I will be thy portion, I will be thy God*; for so he sayth, *I my selfe am my beloveds, and my welbeloved is mine*. Now to haue the *Lord* himselfe, is more than if he should giue thee all the Kingdomes of the earth; consider this, the power of *God* is thine, to worke all thy workes for thee, to make passage for thee, when thou art in a strait, to bring thy enterprises to passe, to deliver thee out when thou art in any affliction, out of which the creature is not able to deliver thee. Thinke what it is to haue an interest in *Gods* almightie power, and thinke this is one part of thy portion: the *Lord* himselfe is thine, and all his power is thine. Consider likewise, his wisdome, if thou neede counsell in any difficult case,

Cant. 8. 6.

His power.

His wisdome



case, if thou wouldst be instructed in things that be obscure, if thou wouldst be led into the mysteries that are revealed in the word, to see the wonderful things contained in the Law; the wisdom of *God* is thine, thou hast interest in it, it is thy portion, thou shalt have the use of it as farre as he sees it meete for thee. And so the Iustice of *God* is thine, to deliver thee when thou art oppressed, to defend thee in thine innocency, and to vindicate thee from *ŷ* injuries of men. And so we may goe through the rest. Now consider, what a portion it is to have the *Lord* alone: if thou hadst nothing but him, thou hadst enough. When a woman marries with a Tradesman, or with an Artist that is excellent but in some one Art, or with one that is excellent in learning and knowledge, shee is content, (it may be) and thinkes it to be a great portion, as good as if shee had many thousands with him, for, sayth shee, this is as good, it will bring it in. Thinke then if thou hast the *Lord* alone for thy portion, if thou hast nothing else, thou hast sufficient. Thinke of all these attributes, & say within thine own heart, all these are mine; And therefore, why should I not be content to have him alone? But if this be not enough, I will goe yet further with thee, if thy heart be not satisfied with this, yet consider all things in the world are thine: for whatsoever is the *Lords*, is thine. When a Virgin marries with a man that is rich, shee lookes vpon all his possessions, and sees so many thousand sheepe, so many faire houses, and so much land, he hath so much gold and silver,

His Iustice.

*Simile.*



and, shee sayth thus with her selfe; now he is my husband, all this is mine: I shall haue my interest in them, I shall haue that that is fit for me. So, looke now vpon the *Lord*, consider when thou hast chosen him to be thy portion: though thou shouldst be content to haue him alone, yet all this comes together with him, it cannot be separated from him, so that even then when thou art deprived of all, yet all is thine: he hath it ready for thee to bestow on thee, as there is occasion.

*Ob.*

You will say, these are notions, these are hard things to beleue, to see these really is another thing.

*Answ.*

The Lord the  
master of the  
great familie  
the world.

*Beloued*, will you beleue your senses, I finde that the Scriptures take many arguments from those things, that are exposed to the view of men, looke on nature & see what the *Lord* doth there; doe but compare a house-keeper on earth with the *Lord*, and see what the difference is betweene them; Consider how many there are in this house of the *Lord*, of which he is Master, how many there are at vp-rising & down-lying from day to day. Consider how he provides for them all. In *Psal.* 104. and in *Iob* 38. you see the holy Ghost reasoning with the sonnes of men, even after this manner; Why sayth he, doe you doubt him? why are you not content to cōsecrate your selues to him, to be to him alone? Doe but see how he deales with all y<sup>e</sup> Creatures, in the morning they know not what to do, but *they looke vp vnto him?* He instanceth in the *Ravens*, and other creatures, *he openeth his hand and giveth them foode, he shuts*  
*his*

*Psal.* 104.  
*Iob* 38.

*Psal.* 104. 28.  
29.

*his hand and they perish.* That is, He feedes them all. Consider the Treasures in *Iob 38.* *Doest thou (sayth the Lord) know the treasures of snow and hayle that I haue hid?* When there is a snow all the Land over, thinke what a great treasure the Lord hath, from whence it comes : in the mightie hayles that be, saith he to *Iob,* dost thou know the treasures of hayle? When you see a mighty raine, sayth he, *who can open the bottles of heauen, and who can shut them?* That is; Consider well, looke on these outward things, and thinke who it is, that doth this, *when the earth is hot, and the clouds knit together, who can open the earth?* These sensible things should lead vs to see the Lord in his greatness; so sayth he, *who is the father of the Raine, who hath begotten the drops of the dew?* Againe, as in a great house, there must be water to furnish the roomes; so sayth he, *from his chambers he sendeth springs throughout the world,* if the water were all in one place, if it were all in one River, in one channell, what would become of mankinde? What would become of the Beasts? But, sayth *David,* he sendeth forth his springs to every mountaine, and every valley, that the Birds, and Beasts, and Mankinde might haue water to refresh them: for otherwise (sayth he) they would perish. So againe, sayth he, *who is it that enlightens the earth? Whence comes the light? and who drawes the Curtaines of the night?* Againe, who is it that maintaines all the creatures? the *Lyon* when he runs out of his den in the morning, he knowes not where to haue his prey: and not he onely, but

*Iob 38. 22.*

Verf 37.

Verf. 38.

Verf. 28.

Pfal. 104. 10.

Gods workes  
in nature  
should teach  
vs to see his  
greatnesse.

Pfal. 104. 21.



Iob 39. 17.  
20.

but all the creatures besides. Consider how he provides for all: the *Ostridge* (*Iob 39.*) *God hath taken understanding,* (sayth he) *from her, and shee leaues her yong ones behinde her,* and provides not for them; how comes it then that they grow vp, that the species is not extinguished, but continues? Sayth the *Lord,* I take care for them. And so the *Hinde* that is in the *Wildernesse,* as shee calues, shee bruseth her young, and casts them forth, and there shee leaues them, who should provide for them? Is it not I sayth the *Lord? &c.* But I will not enlarge my selfe further in this; because I hast to that which remains. Onely this Vse is to be made of it, that when you looke vpon the *Vniverse:* looke vpon all the parts of it; see the workes of *God* in every kinde, and see how hee provides for the *Ravens,* that haue neither *barnes* nor *store-houses;* see how hee *clothes the earth,* that *spinnes not,* that hath no garments made for it; see all that he doth in the worke of nature, and by this you may learne to know *God:* by this you may know, what he is, how you may well be content to haue him alone for your portion.

Mach. 6. 26.

Ob.

But this will be objected; I but we finde it otherwise, those that are his children, are they not poore? are they not forsaken many times?

Ans<sup>m</sup>.

The Children of God poore and forsaken, and wicked men flourish, and why?

I answer in a word; It is true; while the children are vnder age, they enjoy nothing in comparison of that inheritance, that is provided for them. The servant many times liues in a farre better condition, and escapes that correction, and that



that discipline and nurture, which the childe is subject to, and he hath money in his purse many times, when the sonne hath none: he hath many liberties, which the childe is deprived of. The reason is, because it is the time of his nurture, and so sayth the LORD to *Israell*, I could haue brought you into the land of *Canaan* at the first: it was no difficult thing to me, but *I led you fortie yeares: to what purpose? Deut. 8. that I might teach thee* (sayth he) *that I might nurture thee*, that thou mightst learne to know me, & to know thy selfe: that *I might humble you*, that you might learne by that to see the vanitie and emptinesse of the creature. So the *Lord* deales with his children; But yet why should you not be cōtent to haue him alone for your portion? He hath all good for you, it is not for want of good will towards you, that you haue it not, it is not for want of power, but because it is best for you to want it: Therefore that also is answered, that the children of *God* want, & those that are his enemies haue abundance, but they are but land-floods of comforts, that make a great shew, & haue some reality in them to comfort for the present, but it is but a Pond, it is but a land-flood, the spring of cōfort belongs onely to the Saints, it may be, theirs are but little, but yet they are springing, they are renewed to them from day to day, they are such springs as make glad the heart of all the household of *God*: And therefore, what if *Gods* enemies haue abundance? it is but as summer flowers; though they be set in gawdy places, yet they are but slippery places, though

In this life  
Gods children  
are nurtured  
by afflictions.  
Deut. 8. 2. 5.

*Simile.*

The comforts  
of Gods children  
springing.

though they flourish for a time, it is but the flourishing of a greene tree, that lasteth not long. And therefore be not mistaken in that, though *Gods* children want, and others haue it, his children haue it in a better manner. But I will not stand vpon this any longer.

*Vse 3.*  
To looke  
onely to God  
in our wayes.

If the *Lord* be *All-sufficient*, then learne hence, to haue your eye onely vpō him, when you haue any enterprise to doe; if there be any crosse that you would haue prevented, if there be any blessing, that you would obtaine, if there be any affliction, out of which you would haue deliverance, let your eye be to him alone, rest on him alone: for he is *All-sufficient*, he is able to bring it to passe; as he sayd here to *Abraham*, (*I am All-sufficient*) so he will be to all that are within the *Covenant*, as well as to him. And therefore, I say, whatsoeuer thy case be, looke to him onely, and thou needest no other helpe, and be readie to say thus with thy selfe, the greatest meanes without his helpe, is not able to bring this enterprise to passe, it is not able to deliver me, it is not able to comfort me, it is not able to worke such a worke for me, and the weakest with him is able to do it.

God can doe  
things with  
weak meanes.

2 Chro. 14. 11.

You see *Asa* was able to say this in 2 *Chron.* 14. 11. *Lord*, sayth he, *it is all one with thee to saue with many or with few.* And the *Lord* made it good to him; for when he had but a few, and a great multitude came against him, you see he was saved with those few; and, afterwards, when *Asa* had a great multitude, he was not delivered, that he might learn to know the truth of that which then

he



he heard? And, therefore, saith he, *we rest vpon thee O Lord, it is all one with thee to deliver with many or with few*: I say, so it is in all things else. Therefore, learne to conceiue thus indeede of things: we doe not vsually doe so, if we did, what is the reason, that you provide so much for your children, and all your care is to leaue them portions? I would aske you but this *Questiō*, Whether can all that portion make them happie, or make your selues so, or any one else? It cannot make them happy, without *Gods* favour, without his blessing. Put the case, againe, they had his favour and blessing without this portion; Is not that enough? Is it not sufficient? We may run through many instances, but it is enough to touch vpon this. And therefore thou wouldst be ready to say thus with thy selfe, If I haue never so much, if I were in the greatest floate of prosperity, what is this without him? If againe I were in the lowest ebbe, is not he enough? And therefore in any businesse say this with thy selfe; All my busines now is with *God* in heauen, and not with men, nor the Creature, and therefore, if I want comfort at any time, if I cannot haue it from men, nor from the creature, yet I know where to fetch it; If I want wisdome, counsell, and advice, if I want helpe, I know whither to goe, if the Cisterne fayle, I can goe to the fountaine, I can goe to him, that alone is able to be my helper in all my needs, to be my counsellor in all my doubts, & to comfort me in all my distresses. But, the thing I would presse is this, to settle your eyes vpon *God* alone.

Nothing  
makes happie  
without *Gods*  
favour.

It



2 Ob.

It may be, you will say, you haue an eye to *God*, but you would haue other helpes too.

Answ.

We must not  
joyne other  
things with  
*God*, in our  
traff.

No : All the tryall is in this, to trust in him alone : for if you did thinke him *All-sufficient*, why should you not doe so? If he had but a part of sufficiencie, and the creature had another part, you might joyne helpe with him ; but since he is *All-sufficient*, you must be content with him alone. Put the case, he giue you no pawne, as he did not to *Abraham*, the Text sayth, he had not a foote of land in all his possession, and yet he believed, for he thought *God* was sufficient: Therefore when thou hast any thing to do, trust in him alone, and thou shalt then finde it the best done : for when we trust in him most, then we pray best, and when we pray best, we speede best: and therefore we commonly finde, when things are in the lowest condition, then we haue best successe, because, by that meanes we are taught to goe to him alone. To giue you an instance of this, consider *David* and *Iacob* ; I will shew you but these two cases, you shall see it in *David* and *Iacob*.

We oft suc-  
ceede best,  
when things  
are lowest.

I

Instances.  
Of trusting  
*God* alone.

*David* did not make hast when the *Lord* promised him the Kingdome, and sent *Samuell* to anoint him, (though at one time he did, when he fled into the land of the *Philistines*, yet in the generall he did not,) if he had made hast, he would haue taken away *Sauls* life, when he was put into his hands, but, sayth he, I will stay the *Lords* leasure, I will not meddle with him, *wickednesse shall come from the wicked*. What was the issue of it :  
you

you see how the *Lord* brought it about without paine, and labour to him; ( as you shall see in his providence, how he wheeled that about, to bring *David* to the Kingdome ) you see first he takes away *Saul* by the hands of his enemies,  *Davids* hand was not on him, he tooke him away in due season. When that was done, then there was *Abner* a mightie Captaine, you see, he was taken away, and that without any fault of  *Davids* vpon a quarrell betweene *Ioab* and him. When *Abner* was taken away, there was *Isboseth* left behinde; you see, there were two set a-work by  *Gods* providence ( for those things come to passe by his providence ) to take away his head when he was asleepe; so that all the posteritie of *Saul* was gone. He tooke not onely *Saul* away in the battaile, but all the rest, and there were but two left, *Mephiboseth*, that was lame in his limmes, and not fit to mannage the Kingdome, who likewise, afterwards, put himselfe into  *Davids* hands, and *Isboseth*, that was lame in his minde, as the other was in his limmes. And therefore, when *Abner* was gone, there was no strength in him; So the *Lord* brought it to passe without any action of his: so it is when men learne to trust in  *God*. Likewise, see it in *Nabals* case: he was making hast, he was stepping out to an inordinate way to helpe himselfe, but when he stayed himselfe, and did it not, how did the *Lord* bring it to passe without him? did not  *God* himselfe take away *Nabals* life, and giue *Nabals* wife and goods, as he did *Sauls* goods, and his house, and his wiaes to him?

This

Gods providence in evill actions.



This the *Lord* did: for he trusted in him, he made not hast, but stayed on him alone. I say, if we could learne this in all our enterprises, to trust in him, he would worke our workes for vs. On the other side, wheresoever you see a man that makes hast, and that joynes others with the *Lord*, and is not content with his *All-sufficiencie*; doth it not cost him much, when he will do his own works, and will not leaue it to the *Lord* to worke it for him?

2  
Instances of  
trusting other  
things besides  
God.

*Jacob*, you know, what it cost him, when he made hast to get the blessing by a wrong way, how many yeares exile, how much paine, and separation from his friends? And so *Saul*, it cost him the losse of his Kingdome, for making hast when he offered sacrifice, and did breake the Commandement of *God*, because the people were disperfed; And so of the rest. And therefore, *Beloved*, what if there be nothing besides (for that is the case I presse) suppose you were in such a strait, that there is no more but the *Lord* to rest on, yet, if you be content to trust in him alone, he will doe it, as he did for *David*; if you will needs indent and bargaine with him, then, I say, it may be, you shal haue the thing you would haue, but you were better be without it, as we see in *Math. 20.* when the workemen would not be content with the *All-sufficiencie* of *God*, (as we see in that Parable) but would make a bargaine with the *Lord*, we will not serue thee, say they, except thou wilt giue vs so much wages, if thou wilt we will do it: so he bargained with every man for a peny a day:

Math. 20.

God



Goe then, sayth he, and worke in my Vineyard, and you shal haue a penny; Well, when he comes to pay them, he giues them their Penny: they thought y<sup>e</sup> was not enough, but they murmured against him; sayth the *Lord*, *did you not bargaine with me for a Penny?* The meaning of it is this, it doth most concerne the Labourers in *G O D S* Vineyard, but it is appliable to all others. They will not worke for the *Lord*, they will not reckon him *All-sufficient*, but they will haue wages, they will bargaine with him to haue a Penny. That is; One to haue a Benefice to maintaine him; another will worke for him, if he may haue fame, and credit, and esteeme; Another will worke for him, if he may haue some great place. Sayth the *Lord*, I will giue thee that Penny, thou shalt worke in my Vineyard; I but when a man hath it (marke it) he murmurs, why? for when the end of the day comes, he sees that preferment, that riches, that credit, are but emptie things, they are but smal things when he is to go into another world, there is nothing left for him, he is naked and destitute, it is but a Penny, and therefore he murmurs and complains. That is; He sees now that it is but a poore bargaine that he made; But, sayth the *Lord*, thou wouldst needs bargaine with me for a penny, and thou hast it. So, I say to those that are not content with the *Lords All-sufficiencie*, but will haue present wages, they will bargaine with the *Lord*: He will giue thee this particular, thou shalt haue this, but remember this, that it is sayd in *Math. 6. thou hast thy reward.*

Math. 20 13.

When men  
looke at other  
things besides  
G O D, they  
gaine no con-  
tentment.

Math. 6.

Luk. 15. 12.

Psal. 146. 3.  
4. 5. 6.Two reasons  
why we should  
trust in God.I  
From the po-  
wer of God.

Rom. 4. 21.

If thou wilt haue prayse of men, and wilt doe it for that, thou shalt haue it, but that is all thou shalt haue. If a man will haue his portion, as that Sonne had of his Father, *Luk. 15. 12.* it may be, he will giue thee thy portion. The Sonne that stayed at home, had no portion given him, for, sayth his Father, *I and all that I haue is thine.* But if a man will haue his portion, and will not be content with *Gods All-sufficiencie*, he shall find that it is not best for him. My *Beloved*, Consider whether it be not better to trust in *God* alone, to rest on him alone. Consider that. *Psal. 146. 3. 4. 5. 6.* *Trust not in Princes, nor in the sonnes of men, for their breath is in their nostrils, and their thoughts perish, but happie is he that trusts in the God of Iacob.* And he giues two reasons for it, *For he made heaven, and earth, and the Sea,* and secondly, *He keepes Covenant and mercy for ever.* There are two reasons in that place, why we should trust in *God*: One is, though the enterprise be never so great & difficult, though the blessing thou wouldst obtaine, be never so hard to come by; yet consider, thou hast to doe with him, *that made heaven and earth.* As if he should say; Lay those two things together, dost thou thinke it an easier thing to make heaven and earth, then to bring that thing to passe? If he made heaven and earth, dost thou not thinke he is able to do that? You will say, we doubt not of his abilitie. *Beloved*, we doe: We shewed this at large before, we will adde that to it, in *Rom. 4.* You know *Abrahams* faith is every where commended, and what was his faith? Surely,

ly, he trusted in *God*, that he was able to doe it, he being assured, and not weake in faith, but strong; *Hee gaue glory to God, and beleevved that he that promised was able to doe it.* And though we thinke it not, there is the stop that we make in beleaving the promises concerning *Gods* power, that is one reason, *he made heaven and earth.* The second is, *he keepes fidelitie for ever.* And in another place (as it is interpreted) *he keepes covenant and mercy for ever.* Marke, sayth he, let *Princes* doe their best, alas, what can they doe? They are but weake men, their breath is in their nostrils, but *God made heaven and earth.* Secondly, sayth he, *their thoughts perish,* but *God keepes Covenant and mercy for ever,* there is no change in him.

Oh, but you will say, there may be a change in vs; all my doubt is of that, of keeping Covenant on my part; thus men are readie to say.

*Beloved,* (for this I will be very briefe in) thou needest not feare that thy disobedience, if thou be once within the Covenant (if thou be one whose heart is upright with him) shall cause the *Lord* to depart from thee, he will not be vnfaithfull to thee, though thou be weake in thy carriage to him: for *he keepes Covenant for ever.* That is. His Covenant is to keepe thy heart in his feare, that thing we forget; if the *Lord* keepe Covenant with vs, he doth not suspend his promise of helpe vpon our obedience, and leaue vs so; but he promiseth to giue vs a heart and a spirit to serue him; he hath promised to *circumcise our hearts to loue him, to plant his feare in our hearts,*

2  
From the  
truth of God.

Ob.

*Answ.*  
Gods Cove-  
nant is to make  
vs faithfull in  
his Covenant.



that we shall not depart from him : and therefore in *Esay. 40.* the Lord expresseth it thus; *You shall know me as Sheepe know their Shepheard, and I will make a Covenant with you,* and thus and thus I will deale with you: And how is that? Why the Covenant is not thus onely; As long as you keepe within bounds, and keepe within the Fould, as long as you goe along the *pathes of righteousnesse*, and walke in them, but this is the Covenant, that I will make, I will driue you according to that you are able to beare; if any be great with young, *I will driue them softly*, if they be lame, that they are not able to goe (sayth he) *I will take them up in mine armes, and carry them in my bosome.* If you compare this with *Ezech. 34.* you shall find there he puts downe all the slips that we are subject vnto; (speaking of the time of the *Gospell*, when Christ should be the Shepheard,) he shewes the Covenant that he will make with those that are his; sayth he, *if any thing be lost*, if a sheepe loose it selfe, this is my Covenant, *I will finde it: if it be driven away* by any violence of temptation, *I will bring it backe againe: if there be a breach* made into their hearts by any occasion through sinne and lust, *I will heale them and binde them up.* This the Lord will do, this is the Covenant that he makes. Now consider these Reasons, *I made heaven and earth, and, I keepe Covenant and mercy for ever.*

*Isa. 40. 11.*  
*Ezek. 34. 16.*

*Ob.*

But, you will say, though I must trust in the Lord, because he *made heaven and earth*, and because he *keepe Covenant & mercy for ever*, yet the  
Lord

*Lord* doth it by meanes, he doth it by friends, by some mediate instruments.

Here is the great deceit of mankinde, that wee thinke; that the *Lord* dispenseth his comforts according to those meanes that we haue. A man thinkes, if he haue a great estate, his comforts shall be more, if he haue many friends, he thinkes he shall be safer; sayth the *Lord*, *Psal. 62. if riches increase, set not your hearts upon them: for, sayth he, they are able to doe little good. Power, and kindnesse belongs to me.* But then this objection comes in, the *Lord* dispenseth comforts by such meanes? No, sayth the holy Ghost there, he rewardes not men according to their riches, but *he rewardes every man according to his workes.* And therefore thinke this with thy selfe, thou that hast abundance of outward comforts, if the *Lord* did reward thee according to them, thou hadst cause to rejoyce in them, but he will reward thee according to thy workes, and therefore trust in him, learne to reckon him to be *All-sufficient*, learne to be to him alone.

But, may not a man that trusts not in *God*, but lookes a little too much to the creature, prosper? A man againe that withdrawes his heart from them, and trusts in the *Lord*, may not he whither?

*Beloved*, (I will adde but that in brieve:) seest thou a man that doth not reckon the *Lord* to be *All-sufficient*, that doth not rest on him alone, but *makes flesh his arme*, and trusts in any Creature, that hath such thoughts as these, I haue the favour of high persons, and therefore I am safe, or I

*Answ.*  
God dispenseth not comfort alwayes according to our meanes.

*Psal. 62. 10.*

*Ob.*

*Answ.*

*Ob.*

*Answ.*

*Ier. 17. 5.*



God blasfeth  
means when  
we trust in  
them.

Iere. 17.

haue many friends to back me, & to support me, & defend me, & therefore I am safe, I haue a great estate to helpe me against dangers, to provide for me against the time of difficultie, and therefore it shall goe well enough with me. I say, be it thine owne case, or seeft thou any man doing so, be assured that such a man shall certainly wither: cursed shall that man be that doth this, that *makes flesh his arme*. Againe, on the other side, seeft thou a man that is willing to depriue himselfe of all these things, when it is to keepe a good conscience, when he is put to it? It is an evidence that he resteth on *God*, that he trusts in him alone, be assured, howsoever y man may be vnder a cloud, and though it may be winter with him for a little while, yet he shall spring againe, *his light shall breake forth*, and he shall prosper, sayth the Text, *Ier. 17.* ( That is the place I haue reference to ) *and his lease shall be greene*. The other man, sayth the Text there, though *Good* doe come to him, and all about him, *yet he shall not see good*, he shall haue no part in it, but he shall surely wither sooner or later. On the other side, Though euill doe come vpo this man that trusts in *God*, yet he shall not see euill. Now, consider ( that we may draw to a conclusion. ) whether you doe this or no, which you are here exhorted vnto.

But it may be, a man will be ready to say, I hope I do performe this. It is well, if you do. But ( I will say but one word to you, ) if you doe this, looke vpo *God* as *All-sufficient*, if you reckon him your portion; doe you walke as one that sees him in his great-

Tryall of tru-  
sing Gods All-  
sufficiencie.



greatnesse and in his almightie power? Remember that in *Prov. 30.* when *Agur* lookes vpon *God* and himselfe together, sayth he, *I am worse then a Beast, I haue not the vnderstanding of a man in mee.* And why? sayth he, *I haue not the knowledge of the holy one, he that ascends and he that descends, he that holds the winds in his fist, he that gathers the waters in his lap as into a garment, he that stretcheth forth the ends of the earth, and that settles it, who knowes him,* sayth he, *who can tell his name or his sonnes name?* The meaning of it is this; sayth he when I consider what *God* is, and beginne to thinke how I haue walked with him, and how short I am of knowing him as I should, sayth he, I am as a *Beast*, I am confounded and amazed. Now, consider that, and make it your owne case, *who walkes with God, and seeth him that ascends and descends;* (which hath reference to that vision that appeared to *Iacob*, The *Lord* was on the toppe of the *Ladder*, and the *Angels* descended and ascended. That is; All the creatures both in heaven and earth are like messengers that goe to and fro at his Commandement) who walkes with *God* as knowing this providence of his, that sets the *Angels* a- worke, all the hoasts, all the particulars of them in their kinde, to doe this businesse and that businesse? Who walkes with *God*, as seeing him sending a messenger to doe every thing that we see done in the World, sending a messenger to take away such a mans life, to giue another life and health, sending a messenger to remoue such a difficultie from one man? And againe, stopping

*Prov. 30. 2.*  
3. 4.

Gods hand  
must be seene  
in all events.

vp another mans passage? This you call accident, when you see a concurrence of two things together, the cause whereof you know not, but the *Lord* knowes both, who walkes with the *Lord*, as seeing him doe this or that through the ends of the earth? Againe, *he holds the windes in his fist*; who sees him as such a *God*, that is able to hold y<sup>e</sup> windes in his fist? Who lookes vpon him as such a *God*? The breath of a man, that is lesse then the winde, he holds it in his fist, as a man holds a thing in his hand, which he keeps there at his pleasure. Who lookes vpon *God*, as thus great in power? And so againe, breathing the *holy Ghost*, who lookes vpon *God*, as one that dispenseth it, as it pleaseth him to giue it & withdraw it at his will? Who looks vpon him, as one sending forth motions, & injecting them into the mind, stirring it this way, or that way, as the windes, and the stormes, and the Creatures? He hath them all in his hand, & holds them all in his fist: for by these workes of nature, we may learne to know the greatnesse of *God*, and to reflect vpon our selues, and see how farre we are short of him.

*Note.*

Gods workes  
in nature  
should leade  
vs to see his  
dealing with  
his Church.

And so againe, who lookes vpon him as lapping vp the waters as in a garment? That is; When the Sea is outragious, yet hee takes it as you would take a little water in your lap, sometimes he containes it, and gathers it vp, and sometimes he lets it loose againe. And so likewise, he is able, when the people are unruly, even great Nations that sometimes are readie to over-spread his Church, and to run over it with  
proud



proud waues, yet he is able to keepe them backe, he is able to restraine them, and to shut them vp with barres and doores, as he doth the waters. He that lappes the waters in a garment, is he not able to restraine men that are violent against vs in wrath? *Who can stand before wrath and envie?* it is like a violent water, that over-flowes all, and that carries all before it; Yet he that laps the waters as a garment, hee is able to restraine them wheresoever he findes them. And so againe, who walkes with him, as knowing him y<sup>e</sup> establisheth the ends of the earth. That is; (as the originall shewes more clearly) as one that hath founded the great and weightie earth vpon nothing; Sayth he, that *God* (when a mans spirit hath instabilitie, and inconstancie in it naturally) he that establisheth the earth vpon nothing, making a mightie building where there was no foundation, he can establish thy spirit too. Suppose there be nothing to support the Church, to support a man when he is falling, or that he hath no friend to prop him, nothing to vnderlay, yet hee (that hath set the earth vpon nothing, but vpon the thinne ayre, that, you know, is not able to support it, onely he sayth to the earth stand there) is he not able to support a man in any case? See now the *Lord* in this greatnesse of his. But who walkes as seeing him thus in his greatnesse, and in his *All-sufficiencie*? For all these doe but expresse the *All-sufficiencie* of *God*. *Beloved*, if we did it, why are our hearts discouraged? Why doe wee hang downe our heads vpon every occasion, when

God establisheth mans spirit.

A signe of doubting of Gods *All-sufficiencie*.



We should  
not be dis-  
mayed in the  
Churches  
troubles.

when troubles come? If we see the *Lord* in his *All-sufficiency*, he is able to stay our hearts, if we trust in him alone. What though he suffer his Church to be over-runne with enemies for a time? What though he suffer men to prevaile against it, (as you see how *y* Adversaries now prevaile against *y* Church of *God* by their strength) yet, if you did see him in his *All-sufficiencie*, your hearts would not fayle you a jot. You may either apply it to *y* Churches, or to your own particular cases. (And to giue you yet an instance of these sensible things.) When the disease prevailed far on *Hezekiah*, sayth the *Lord*, thou shalt see *Hezekiah* what I can doe, *I will make the shadow to goe backwards*. Think with thy selfe; though the disease be gone thus far, yet I, that made the shadow to goe backwards, am I not able to make thy disease to returne? And wee may say of any trouble, or affliction, of any temptation, or crosse that lyes on you, that you thinke it so farre gone, that there is no calling of it againe, yet hee that made the shadow to goe backward, is he not able to reduce it? And so againe, when you see the Church in such a case as it is now in, we are readie to cast away all hope, and to say, What shall we doe?

Consider that which was sayd to *Gideon* (as we are readie to say, when we heare the *Lord* is *All-sufficient*, he hath enough, if he be with vs, we desire no more) we make the objection with *Gideon* thus; *If the Lord be with vs, why is it thus? Why is Israell oppressed?* Sayth the *Lord* to *Gideon*, thou shalt see what I am able to doe, *when the*  
*Fleece*

*Fleece is dry, all the earth shall be wet, and when the earth shall be dry, the Fleece shall be wet.* As if he had sayd, Though the Church that little *Fleece* now be over-flowne, yet I can dry it vp, and lay misery vpon the enemies, as they were in peace, when that was afflicted.

The like you see, in *Gen. 15*, where there is another resemblance of the Church, when the Sacrifices were cut in peeces, & he had divided the Rammes; sayth the Text, the *Fowles came and would haue deuoured them*. There are two similitudes of the troubles of the Church, & Gods rescuing them. When the Crowes came, *Abraham drone them away*. That was one. And the other was when there was a very fearefull darkenesse, there came a *Burning Furnace, and a Lampe*. The meaning is this; The Church then was in *Egypt*; (for that he hath reference to) it was a dead Sheepe, exposed to Ravens, and you would thinke there was nothing there to helpe it, but it must needs be deuoured. Why yet sayth the *Lord*, though it be thus neere, I will driue away the Ravens, and I will saue my Church. You know, what the strength of *Pharaoh*, and of *Egypt* was. Againe, sayth he, the Church was in fearefull darkenesse, in the valley of the shadow of death. That is; They thought they should never be recovered, you know, what wayes *Pharaoh* tooke, & at how low an ebbe the Church was, when hee would haue all the males destroyed. Who would haue said, that this Church should haue recovered? Yet, as, after this fearefull darkenes, the Furnace came

The Church afflicted, resembled by *Gidcons fleece*, and *Abrahams sacrifice*.

*Gen 15. 10.*  
11.

Two similitudes of the Churches troubles.



Isay. 40.

The greatest  
strength of e-  
nemics can-  
not prevaile  
against God.

Simile.

Note.

came and gaue light, so saith he, I will scatter this darkenes. *Beloved*, consider if you beleue *Gods All-sufficiencie*, and consider, if thou doest thus know him in his greatnes, what though the nations be exceeding great and strong that come against the Church, yet in *Esay 40.* (it is to that purpose brought in.) What are they to the *Lord*? they are but as the dust of the Ballance, or as the drop of a Bucket. The Bucket it selfe is no great thing, but the drops that fall from the Bucket, when it ariseth out of the Well, they are exceeding small; Sayth he, the Nations are no more to me, than the drop of a Bucket, or the dust of the Ballance, which doth not sway them either way; So looke what I doe, the Nations are not able to sway me, be they never so strong, they are not able to turne me, but according as I pitch things they shal stand.

Now consider whether you be able to comfort your selues thus out of *Gods All-sufficiencie*. We doe, for the most part, as *Hazar* did, when the bottle was spent, shee falls a crying, shee was vndone; shee and her childe should dye, and there was no more hope, till the *Lord* opened her eyes to see a Fountaine neere her; the Fountaine was neere her, but shee saw it not; when she saw it, she was well enough. Is it not so with vs all? because the Bottle is dried vp, because such a meanes is taken away, we thinke presently there is no more hope, when the fountain is neer, the *Lord himselfe* is the fountain, & he is neere, if he did open your eyes to see. Consider whither you walk thus with *God*; as seeing him in his greatnesse. If we did see him



him in his greatnesse, why should Torches and Candles haue so great a light before vs? That is; Why should we regard men so much? Put the case, many Nations were against thee, thou wouldst looke vpon all thole in comparison of *God*, as a drop of the Bucket, or as a little dust on the Ballance. Art thou able to doe so, to see and know him thus in his greatnesse?

if thou be not, certainly, thou art exceeding short of seeing *God* in his *All-sufficiency*.

So much for this time.

F I N I S.



*Simile.*

When we see  
God in his  
greatnesse, all  
other things  
seeme little.



THE  
FOURTH  
SERMON.

GENESIS 17. 1.

*I am GOD All-sufficient.*

*Vse 4.*  
To comfort  
vs in our im-  
perfect obedi-  
ence.



Another Vse, and deduction that we will draw from this poynt, that *God is All-sufficient*, is, to comfort vs in regard of our *imperfect obedience*. We ought not to thinke, because we are not exact in keeping all the Commandements of *God*, because we haue much vnevennesse in our wayes, because we are not able to keepe the Rule so strictly as we ought, that therefore *God* rejects vs: for he is *All-sufficient* in himselfe, he needes not our righteousness, and therefore he can well beare with the imperfections of our righteousness. You shall see this vse made of it *Act. 17. 24. 25.* *God that made all things, the world, and all that is therein, seeing he is Lord of heaven & earth,*

*Act. 17. 24. 25.*

earth, he dwels not in Temples made with hands, neither is he worshipped with mens hands, as if he needed any thing, (Marke) he giues to all life, and breath, and all things. Thus the Apostle makes his argument: if God, sayth he, made the world, and all things therein, if he giueth to all life, and breath, and all things; then when you doe worship him, it is not because he hath any neede of your worship, or any need of your righteousnesse, or of all that you can doe, he hath enough, he doth it not as if he needed any thing: for he is *All-sufficient*. And so likewise in *Psal. 50. 12.* sayth the Lord there, *If I be hungry, I will not tell thee.* That is; To shew how little neede he hath of Sacrifices. how little regard he had to them, when they were brought in, and how little he was moued when they fayled in it. For, sayth he, *all are mine, the sheepe vpon a thousand mountaines are mine: If I be hungry I will not tell thee.* That is; I may satisfie my selfe, (I do but apply it by way of allusion) If I would haue Sacrifice in abundance, might I not haue it? If I were hungry after them, who could keepe them from me? We may say the same of the obedience of his children: If he were hungry. That is; If he were desirous of perfect and absolute obedience, could he not haue it? Hath he not spirit enough? Hath he not grace enough to put into their hearts, that he might reape the full fruits of righteousnesse? And therefore, I say, in regard of *Gods All-sufficiencie*, he needs it not; and if he need it not, he will be content with a more imperfect measure of it, since he

God hath no  
need of our  
service.

*Psal. 50. 21.*

If God had  
neede of our  
obedience, he  
could make  
vs yeeld per-  
fect obedi-  
ence.



Iob 35. 6. 7.

Sinne &amp; righteouſneſſe, the two pathes men walke in.

is no looſer by it. This is to perſwade our hearts more fully of that truth, which we aſſent vnto with ſome difficultie: for we are ſomething diſcouraged with the imperfections of our obedience, whoſe faith is not weakened by it? Who comes not more vncheerfully before *God*, becauſe of it? Now, if that feare were taken away wee would draw neere more boldly. We ſee what *Iob* ſayth in this caſe, *Iob 35. 6. 7.* *If thou ſinneſt, what doſt thou againſt him, yea, when thy ſinnes are many, what doſt thou to him? If thou be righteous what giueſt thou to him? or what receiues he at thy hands?* Marke, you know, ſinne and righteouſneſſe, are the two pathes that we walke in, thoſe are all that trouble vs; the ſinnes that we commit, and the defects of our righteouſneſſe. Sayth he, *if thou ſinne, what is that to him?* It doth him no hurt. Againe, if thou fayle in thy righteouſneſſe, or in thy performances, it is all one that way: for it reacheth not to him: becauſe he is bleſſed for ever, he hath all ſufficiencie in himſelfe: and therefore he pleaſeth ſo to adminiſter the world, and ſo to guide the hearts of his children, and to diſpenſe to them but ſuch a meaſure of grace, to leaue ſinfull luſts in them in ſuch a meaſure vnmortified: becauſe himſelfe is neither a gainer, nor a looſer: therefore let not your faith be weakned at this his adminiſtration of things, let not carnall feares poſſeſſe your hearts, to keepe you off from coming with boldneſſe to him: ſince he is *All-ſufficient*, ſince he needs not your righteouſneſſe, he can be without it.

Moreouer;

Moreover; This we may draw further from it; if *God* be thus *All-sufficient*, that what we doe, comes not neere him, then all the Commandements that *God* giues to the sonnes of men, are for their good, and not for his profit. Marke that that should breede in vs a great willingnesse to keepe his Commandements, and a great chearefulnessse to performe them, when we vnderstand that it is for our owne good. When a servant knows that all is for his owne good that he doth, he will goe about all the businesse his Master imployeth him in with more chearefulness, because he loues himselfe; this is a principle *God* hath put into nature. Now, if *God* be *All-sufficient*, then he commands nothing for his owne benefit in any thing; no, not in that, in which he seemes most to doe it.

The Sabbath, that he hath taken for himselfe, and hath called it his day; Some may aske, is not that for his owne sake? No: *God* sayth, *the Sabbath is made for man*. As if he should say; If it had been made for mine owne sake, I would haue taken more then one day from you; But I haue given it for your sake, I made it for man: for man could not be without it, he could not be religious without it, his heart could not keepe neere to *God* without it, it would soone be estranged from him, it would be over-growne with weeds, if it were not looked to ever and anon, he would soone be defectiue in his knowledge, he would soone forget the purpose that he takes to himselfe: therefore the Sabbath is made for man. That is one day

L

wherein

Mans benefit should encourage him to Gods service.

That Gods Commands are for mans good, declared by Instances,

I

In the Sabbath.



wherein the *Lord* commands him to set aside all other busines, and to intend his service. And that which is said of the Sabbath, may be said of all other Commandements: for he is *All-sufficient*.

He bids a man *deny himselfe, and take up his crosse*. Is it for him? No, my *Beloved*, it is for our selues, and therefore when a man denies himselfe in his profit, in his credit, when he denies himselfe in the satisfying of his lusts; all this is for his owne profit: as you haue it clearly set downe in *Isay. 48. 17. I am the Lord that teacheth thee to profit, therefore hearken to my Commandements*. As if he should say, It is for thy profit that I command thee, & not for my owne: therefore let that cause thee the more willingly to doe it: that is often repeated in *Dent. the Commandements that I haue given thee for thy wealth, for thy good*. *Beloved*, all the Commandements of Sathan are for our hurt, wee doe him service as bond-slaues serue their Masters, not for their owne profit, but for their Masters. But all the service, we doe to *God*, is for our wealth; for he is *All-sufficient*.

Last of all. If *God* be *All-sufficient*, then when you performe any thing, doe not thinke that you giue any thing to the *Lord*, and so looke for recompence, (there is that secret Popery in every mans heart, that he thinkes when he hath done any speciall service, to be rewarded for it) Indeede if thou shouldst do *God* a good turne: thou mightst looke for somewhat againe at his hands, but it is done to him that is *All-sufficient*, & how can you doe him a good turne? how can you giue to him?

Marke,

<sup>3</sup>  
In selfe deni-  
all.

Isa. 48. 17:

Sathans ser-  
vice to our  
hurt.

Wee giue no-  
thing to God  
in our obedi-  
ence.



Marke, It is the ground which the Apostle layeth *Rom. II. 34. Who hath given to him, and it shall be recompensed to him?* He that is capable of no gift, there can be nothing done to him, to premerit any thing: For he is *All-sufficient*, there can be no addition made to him, and, sayth he, dost thou looke for any recompence? What doest thou else but giue to him of his owne? Shall a man merit in giving to the *Lord* the fruits of his owne Vineyard, the Apples of his owne Orchard? When as all the graces we haue, are but as streames springing from that fountaine that he hath put into vs, therefore when thou hast done thy best, say within thy selfe vnto thine own heart; I am but an *unprofitable servant*, I can looke for nothing for all this: for he is *All-sufficient*, and needs it not, I haue done him no good turne, I haue given him nothing, he is vncapable of my gift, and therefore I look for no recompence, as by merit from him.

Againe, If *God* be *All-sufficient*, let vs be exhorted to make a *Covenant* with him; for (as I told you before) these words doe but containe the *Covenant* betweene *God* and vs. Now, this is the *Covenant*, that *God* wil make with you; if you will enter into *Covenant* with him, that he will be *All-sufficient* to you. Now, that which is expressed here generally, I finde in other places, divided into these three particulars, wherein the *All-sufficiency* of *God* consists, as if they were the three parts of this *Covenant*.

First. He is *All-sufficient*, to iustifie, and to forgive vs our sinnes.

*Rom. II. 34.*

*Vse 5.*  
*Gods All-sufficiency* should persuade vs to enter into *covenant* with him.

The 3. parts of the *Covenant*.

I

2

Secondly. He is *All-sufficient*, to sanctifie vs, and to heale our infirmities.

3

Thirdly. He is *All-sufficient*, to provide for vs whatsoever we neede; so that no good thing shall be wanting to vs.

Ier. 31. 34.  
Heb. 8. 9. 10.  
Ezek. 36.

These are the three parts of the *Covenant* which we finde set downe in divers places; in *Ier. 31. 34. Heb. 8. 9. 10. 16.* But most clearly are they set downe in *Ezek. 36.* sayth the *Lord* there; *I will poure cleane water vpon you, you shall be cleane, yea, from all your filthines, and from all your Idols will I cleanse you.* There is one part of the *Covenant*, that he will cleanse vs from all our sinnes. That is; from the guilt and the punishment of them. Secondly. *A new heart will I give you, also a new spirit will I put into you, and I will take away your stonie hearts out of your bodies, and I will give you a heart of flesh.* There is the second part of the *Covenant*, consisting of Sanctification. The third is. *You shall dwell in the Land that I gaue to your Fathers, and I will call for Corne, and I will encrease it, and I will lay no more famine vpon you, and I will multiply the fruit of the tree, and the increase of the field, that you beare no more the reproach of famine among the Heathen.* Here are the particulars set downe; some are named for the rest; I will call for Corne and Wine, That is; For whatsoever you want. That is the third part of the *Covenant*. These are the three parts of the *Covenant*, which I shall spend this time in opening, and shewing you, that *God* is sufficient in all, and to answer those objections that mens hearts haue against his *All-sufficiency*: for  
the



the heart is readie to object against these three, to haue sinnes forgiven, to be sanctified, and to haue abundance of all good things, belonging to this present life: in all these he is *All-sufficient*, to fulfill all the desires of mens hearts. Now, to begin with the first.

First, I say, He is *All-sufficient* to take away all our sinnes. It may be, when you heare this point, you will say, it is an easie thing to beleue it, there is no difficultie in this, the *Lord* is *All-sufficient* to forgiue sinnes. Surely, whatsoever we say, or pretend, we finde in experience it is exceeding hard. Who is able so fully to beleue the forgiuenes of his sinnes, as he ought? Who is able to doe it when he is put to it? At the day of death, at the time of extremity, at that time when the conscience stirres vp all his strength, and, opposeth it selfe against him, when all his sinnes are presented vnto him in their colours, who is able then to beleue it? therefore we had neede to finde out the *All-sufficiency* of *God* in this: for the greatnesse and exceeding largenesse of his power is shewed in it, in nothing more then in forgiving of sinnes. *Hosea* 11. 9. See there how the *Lord* expresseth it, Sayth he, *I will not execute the fiercenes of my wrath, I will not returne to destroy Ephraim; for I am God and not man.* Marke it, when we haue committed any sinne against *God*, we commonly thinke thus with our selues, if my sinnes were but as other mens, if my sinnes wanted these and these circumstances, I could beleue the forgiuenesse of them, but something, or other, a man

I  
Gods All-suffi-  
ciencie in for-  
giving our  
sinnes.

It is hard to  
beleue the  
forgiuenesse  
of sinnes.

*Hosea* 11. 9.



hath still to object. Now sayth the *Lord* it is very true: If I were as man is, it could not be but that I should execute the fierceneffe of my wrath vpon *Ephraim*, who hath provoked me so exceedingly (for *Ephraim* was part of *Israell*, and is put for all *Israell*; and the *Prophet* wrote this in the time of *Ieroboam*, the sonne of *Ioash* when *Israell* abounded in sinnes, and in Idolatry) but, sayth the *Lord*, though their sinnes be exceeding great, yet I am able to forgiue them: for I am *God*, and not man. As if he should say; Looke vpon weake man, and compare *God* & man together, and see how farre *God* exceeds man: see how much hee is stronger then man, being infinite and almightie; so sayth he, his mercy exceeds the mercy of man; As if he should say, If I were not *God*, it were impossible I should forgiue the sinnes of *Ephraim*, which they haue multiplied against mee from time to time. So, likewise, in *Isay* 55. 7. the *Lord* calls them in there, and vseth this as an argument: for, sayth he, *I will forgiue and multiplie my pardons*; so the Word signifies in the originall; when a man makes this objection. But it is more then any man can belecue, that my sinnes that I haue thus and thus repeated, that the *Lord* can so easily put them away, and multiplie his pardons, as I haue multiplied my sinnes? Sayth he, *my thoughts are not as your thoughts, my wayes are not as your wayes, but as high as the heauen is aboue the earth, so are my thoughts aboue your thoughts, and my wayes aboue your wayes*. That is; As a man lookes to heauen, and considers the great distance betweene the earth,

Gods forgiue-  
nesse without  
comparison.

*Isay*. 55. 7.

earth, and it, so farre, sayth he, doe my thoughts exceede your thoughts. That is; When you think with your selues, I cannot forgiue; because you measure me, and draw a scantling of me by your selues. when you haue gone to the vtmost of your thoughts, my thoughts exceede yours as much as heaven exceeds the earth. And therefore, saith he, *my wayes are not as your wayes*. That is; When you could not forgiue, yet I am able to forgiue in so great a disproportion. We doe with this as we doe with all the Attributes of *God*, we are able to thinke him powerfull as a man, but to thinke him powerfull as *God*, there we come short. We are able to thinke him mercifull as a man, but to thinke him mercifull as *God*, there our thoughts are at an end; we can thinke and see no reason why he should pardon vs. Now, sayth the *Lord*, my thoughts go beyond your thoughts as much as the distance is betweene heaven and earth. If you say to me, who doubts of this, that the *Lord* is able to forgiue? My *Beloved*, if we did not doubt of it; what is the reason, when great sins are committed, that you fall to questioning of *Gods* mercy, when you can more easily beleue a smaller sinne to be forgiven? Therefore certainly, men doubt of his power, whether he be able to forgiue: for, if the difference of sinne doe cause in you vnbeliefe, it cannot be that you pitch vpon the power of *God*, and his readinesse to forgiue. Therefore it is certaine, that it is his power that is called in question, and, therefore, the thing wee haue to doe, is to make this good to you, that the

We thinke of  
Gods Attri-  
butes compa-  
ratiuely.

In doubting  
of forgiuenes,  
we question  
Gods power.

*Lord*, is able to forgiue.

*Ob.*

But you will say to me: It is true; If it were a matter of power, I make no question.

*Answ.*

To forgiue  
sinnes, is a  
matter of  
power.

You shall find it a matter of power: take a man, Is it not a matter of strength in him to forgiue, to passe by an infirmitie? If it be strength in a man to be meeke, to forgiue, and to passe by injuries, to be kinde to those that be vnrkinde to him; Is it not also power in *God* to doe so? Besides, is it not a power to be rich? Riches giue a man potencie, and the *Lord* is said to be rich in mercy. That is; As a man that is rich, though he giue much, yet he is not exhausted; So, when you haue made thus much vse of *Gods* mercy, yet still there is more behinde, still there is more and more mercy for you, there is a spring of mercy, there is no end of it. Besides, as there is a power in his wrath, *who knows the power of his wrath?* So likewise there is a power in his mercy, as we see *Rom. 9. 22. 23.* (it is a place worth the considering for this purpose) *What if God to shew his wrath, and to make his power knowne, will suffer with long patience, the vessels of wrath prepared for destruction? (And the next Verse is thus to be read, otherwise, you cannot make the sense perfect) & what if he would also, to shew the greatnesse of his power, declare the riches of his glory vpon the vessels of mercy, that he hath prepared to glory? (Marke) as God shewes the greatnesse of his power in executing wrath vpon euill men; so he shewes the exceeding greatnesse of his power, and declares his glorious riches. That is; The riches of his mercy vpon the Saints.*

Rich in mer-  
cie, what?

*Rom. 9. 22. 23*

Now,



Now, as it is hard to finde out the depth of the one, so it is to finde out the depth of the other, to consider the height, the length, and bredth, and depth of his mercy. When a man considers his finnes, and lookes vpon them in the height of them, in the bredth, and depth of them, when he sees a heape of finnes piled vp together, reaching vp to the heavens, and downe againe to the bottom of hell; now to belecue, that the mercy of *God* is higher then these finnes, and that the depth of his mercy is deeper then they; This is to comprehend the length, and bredth, & depth of mercy in him, *Ephes. 3.* This is exceeding hard and a great thing for vs to doe; but yet this the *Lord* is able to doe, his mercy is able to swallow them vp; and therefore, you shall find this expression in *James 2. Mercy rejoyceth against Iudgement;* As if he should say; There is a certaine contention betweene the sins that we commit, and the mercy of *God*; though our finnes oppose his mercy, yet his mercie is greater, and, at length, it over-comes them, and rejoyceth against them, as a man rejoyceth against an aduersary that he hath subdued. Therefore herein we must labour to see *Gods All-sufficiency*, that although our sins be exceeding great, yet the largeness of his mercy, is able to swallow them vp.

But you will say to me, we could beleue this, if we were qualified, but all the difficulty is to beleue it, when we want those qualifications that *God* requires, softnesse of heart, godly sorrow, truth of repentance, &c.

*Ephes. 3. 10.*

*James 2. 13.*

*Note.*

*Ob.*

To

To this, I answer briefly, that whatsoever thou seest, that discourageth thee, that thou seest in thine owne heart, when thou reflectest vpon it, it is either sinne or emptinesse. That is; A want of that righteousnesse that should be in thee. If it be sinne, the greatnesse of his mercy is able to swallow it vp. And if it be emptinesse, know this, that he is rich in mercy, and *All-sufficient*, able to bestow this riches, even vpon nothing: you know he did bestow all the glory of the Creature on it when it was nothing. There was nothing, you know, when he made the world: when he made the *Angels*, what was it he bestowed his riches vpon? And is he not able to bestow it on thee, though there be an emptines in thine heart? Therefore, thinke with thy selfe, what is the exceeding greatnes of his loue. It was a great loue that moved him to giue *Christ* to vs; but after wee are in *Christ*, then you must consider this, that his loue hath increased to a full object, his loue is fully bestowed on him, & is derived from *Christ* to vs.

When we doubt so much of the forgiuenesse of our sins, it is because we forget *Christ*, we thinke *Gods* loue is pitched immediately vpon vs. I say, that will helpe vs, though there be an emptinesse, yet he is able to bestow all this vpon nothing: but this will helpe vs much more, when the fulnes of loue, which falls vpon his Sonne, is derived vpon vs, it is not bestowed vpon vs immediately. Now thou must thinke with thy selfe, though there be nothing in me, why he should bestow so great a degree of loue on me, as to swallow vp all my finnes,

Neither sinne  
nor emptines,  
should discour-  
age vs from  
beleeving for-  
giuenesse.

When wee  
doubt of for-  
giuenesse, we  
forget *Christ*.

finnes, yea, all the degrees of my finnes, to overcome them, and subdue them, yet if the fulnesse of his loue, that he loues *Christ* with, be derived on me, what neede I make question?

But you will say againe, What needs this persuasion of *Gods All-sufficiencie* in forgiving? This is but to open a doore of libertie, to make men more loose?

*Beloved*, It is not so, it is the most profitable thing you can doe for your owne soules, to beleue his *All-sufficiencie* in forgiving finnes, as well as his *All-sufficiencie*, in any thing besides: therefore we see in *Rom. 6.* concerning the abounding of grace (for so the objection stands) *where sin hath abounded, there grace hath abounded much more.* If mens finnes be multiplied, grace and mercy shall be multiplied much more, and still outgoe, and swallow them vp. *Shall we therefore sinne that grace may abound*, or because grace hath abounded? No, sayth the Apostle, for the abundance of grace kils sinne (for so the consequence stands,) *how shall we that are dead to sinne, liue any longer therein?* So that his answer stands thus; Sayth he, the abundance of grace doth not cause men to sinne more: for it kils sinne. And therefore, the more we beleue this *All-sufficiencie* in *God* to forgiue sinne, the more sinne is killed in vs, it is not enlarged by it, life is not given to sinne by it, but we are made more dead to sinne by it.

You will say, how can that be?

Because the beleuing of *Gods All-sufficiencie* in forgiving our finnes, increaseth our loue, and our joy.

Ob.

*Ans.*

The assurance of forgiuenes doth not make men carelesse,

*Rom. 6. 15. 16*

Grace kils sinne, and not increaseth it.

Ob.

*Ans.*



Beliefe of  
Gods *All-suffi-*  
*ciency* to for-  
giue increa-  
seth loue.

Spirituall loue  
eates out car-  
nall delights.

A double  
feare.

1  
Keepes from  
comming in  
to God.

2  
From going  
out from him.

joy. It increaseth our loue; for, when there is no scruple in our hearts of *Gods* loue towards vs, it makes our loue more perfect towards him. It increaseth our joy also; because when we haue a full assurance of the forgiueneffe of our finnes, that fills the heart with joy & peace in the holy Ghost. Now spirituall loue eats out of the heart all carnall delights, all sinful lusts, & all inordinate loue vnto the Creature. And so likewise, spirituall joy takes away the vigor of all carnall joy, and sinfull delight: So, the more you see this *All-sufficiencie* of *God* towards you in loue, the more you are able to belecue it, and the more it kils sinne in you, the more it sanctifies you, and the more it drawes you to *God*. Therefore this is to be considered, to help vs against this objection, that there is a double feare; the one is that which keepes vs from comming to *God*. The other is a feare that keepes vs from going out from *God*. We are very apt to exceede in the first feare, and to come short in the second. Now, the feare that keepes vs from comming in to *God*, is a feare that he is not ready to forgiue, that he is not *All-sufficient*, that hee hath not power enough of mercy to forgiue our finnes, and to heale our infirmities; this makes a man timorous and fearefull; as a man is fearefull to come neere a Iudge, to come neere one that is terrible: Now the more this feare is taken away, the neerer we come, the neerer we draw in assurance of faith to him.

On the other side, there is a feare that keepes vs from going out from *God*, and that is the more  
wee

we beleue this *All-sufficiencie*, the more we beleue that happi nesse is in him; the more we beleue the riches of his mercy, and the abundance of his goodnesse, the more we feare to stepe out from him, to haue our hearts estranged from him, to haue our hearts set loose. Now, the more we can beleue this *All-sufficiencie*, the more it takes away the first feare, and increaseth the second, it takes away the feare that keepes vs from coming in to *God*, and it increaseth the feare that keepes vs from going out from *God*. So much shall serue for this first, the *All-sufficiencie* of *God* in forgiving sinne.

The second part of the *Covenant*, in his *All-sufficiencie* in healing our sinnes, or in sanctifying vs; as you haue it in *Psal. 103. That forgines all our sinnes and beales all our infirmities*. This belongeth also to his *All-sufficiencie*. This is a necessary poynt to beleue; It serues likewise to bring vs in to the *Lord*: for a man is readie to make this objection, when he lookes vpon *Gods* wayes, the wayes of righteousnesse, and then vpon the strength of his lusts, he is ready to say with himselfe: how shall I be able to leade a holy life, as I ought to doe? This is the answer to it: *God* is *All-sufficient*. He that is able to bid the light shine out of darkenesse, sayth the Apostle, he is able to kindle a light in thy darke heart, where there is not a jot of goodnesse, though thy heart be never so averse, he is able to change that heart of thine, and therefore say not, I shall never be able to doe it: for he is able to take away all that reluctancy.

For

2  
*Gods All-sufficiencie* in sanctifying vs.  
*Psal. 103. 3.*

Note



Ob.

For hence comes the difficultie : how shall the strength of my lusts, this crooked and perverse heart of mine, and the straight wayes of *God* stand together ?

Answ.

God chāgeth  
the nature of  
things.

It is very true. If thy heart continue in that temper, it is impossible ; but the *Lord*, that is *All-sufficient*, is able to take away that reluctancie : for he doth in the worke of grace, as he doth in the worke of nature; he doth not as we doe, when we would haue an Arrow goe to the mark, when we throw a stone vpward, we are not able to change the nature of it, but we put it on by force. *God* carries all things to their end, by giving them a nature suitable to that end. An Archer makes an impressiō vpon an Arrow, but it is a violent impressiō ; *God* carries every thing to that end, to which he hath appointed it, but with this difference, he makes not a violent impressiō, but a naturall impressiō, & therefore he doth it not by an onely immediate hand of his owne as we doe, but he causeth the Creature to goe on of it selfe, to this or to that purpose, to this or that end. And so he doth in the worke of grace, he doth not carry a man on to the wayes of righteousness, leaving him in the state of nature, taking him as hee is, but he takes away that heart of his, and imprints the habits of grace in it, and he changeth a mans heart, so that he is carried willingly to the wayes of *God*, as the Creature is carried by a naturall instinct to its owne place, or to the thing it desires. So that thou mayst thinke thus with thy selfe: It is true, if I haue my old heart, my old lusts  
still,

God leads the  
Creatures to  
their end in  
a way fitting  
their nature.

Note.

When the  
heart is chan-  
ged, the wayes  
of *God* are  
easie.



still, there must needs be such a reluctancie, as I shall not be able to overcome; but, if the LORD change this heart of mine, and take away these lusts, if the *Lord* put another impression vpon me that is naturall to me, which is like that instinct he putteth into the creature, then it is easie for me to doe it. And this the *Lord* out of his *All-sufficiency* is able to doe.

But you will be readie to object, if the *Lord* be thus *All-sufficient*, if he be able thus to kindle light in the darke heart, to change a mans crooked and perverse spirit, to implant and ingraft such naturall habits, & instincts into it, to carry it on with such facilitie and connaturalnesse to the wayes of his Commandements, why am I thus? why am I no more able to overcome my sinnes? why doe I fall backe so often to the same sinne? Why doe I come short of the performance of such purposes and desires? Why doe I finde so many things in my life contrary to the Rules of Sanctification, and so contrary to this *All-sufficient* power of *God*?

To this I answer. First, It may be it is from hence, that thou observest not those Rules by which *God* communicates this *All-sufficiency*, and this power of his. What though the *Lord* be willing to communicate it, yet there are some Rules to be observed, which himselfe hath given? That is; thou must diligently attend vpon his ordinances, thou must obserue & keep them, thou must be carefull to abstaine from the occasions he bids thee abstaine from: if thou fayle in either of these,

he

Ob.

*Ans.*

We haue many imperfections, though *God* be able to sanctifie vs.

I

Because we obserue not *Gods* rules,

he hath made thee no promise to helpe thee with his *All-sufficiencie*. *Samson*, as long as the *Lord* was with him, you know, had great strength, you know, the *Lord* tels him so long as he nourished his hayre, so long he would be with him, which was but a symbol of *Gods* presence, but it was such a thing, as he would haue him to keepe exactly, and, if he did not keepe that, hee would withdraw his presence, and would not be with him. So likewise, the *Nazarites* were commanded to abstaine from drinking Wine, if they dranke wine, the *Lord* would withdraw himselfe. And so it is in this case: the *Lord* hath appointed vs to keepe his ordinances, and so long he will be with vs, to be *All-sufficient* to vs, to giue vs strength to inable vs to doe the duties he commands vs, & to abstaine from the evils he would not haue vs to doe: but we must keepe his ordinances, and goe by his Rules, and if we fayle in either of them, that we neglect the meanes, or adventure vpon the occasions, now the *Lord* is discharged of his promise, as we may so say, the *Lord* now withdraws his power frō vs, as he did from *Samson*. If you will needs marry with such a people, sayth the *Lord*, they shall turne away your hearts; for now I will not keepe you. If you will needs touch that tree, if you will needs goe into such a company, if you will needs gaze vpon such objects: or, if againe, you will neglect prayer, and hearing, and sanctifying the Sabbath, if you will neglect to obserue the Rules that he hath appointed, in all these cases, the *Lord* withdrawes his

Note,

1

All-



*All-sufficiency.* And therefore lay the fault where it is; That is, Vpon our selues. Doe not say with thy selfe, it is because the *Lord* is not *All-sufficient*, but rather thinke that he can giue power to goe through the worke he hath appointed me to doe, but it is because I haue not kept his rules, I haue neglected the meanes, I haue ventured vpon such occasions.

Secondly, Consider with thy selfe, that the *Lord* doth this to humble thee. It may be he is willing to bestow a greater measure of grace, but he dispenseth a lesser measure; it is that the heart may be kept humble: for humilitie is the Nurse of graces, take away that, and grace withers in the heart. And therefore when hee is willing to bestow a mercy or grace on vs, he doth as he did with *Jacob*, he leaues a lameness together with it, he will not bestow it on vs, that he will make vs perfect, but he leaues some defects, some wants, that by that humilitie may be preserved, and that may cause vs to cleaue to him, and depend vpon him, that hee may keepe vs from an *All-sufficiency* in our selues, and teach vs to waite on him: for without that, he doth not communicate and dispense vnto vs that sufficiency that is in himselfe.

Moreover; Consider with thy selfe, that the *Lord* many times suffereth vs to see changes in our liues & conversations, that by them we may learne to know him better, and our selues also; if we were able to doe it by our selues, the *Lord* would spare vs; but who is able to doe it? It is

M

said

*Ans.*

2

To humble  
vs.  
Humilitie the  
nurse of Gra-  
ces.

*Ans.*

3

That we may  
know GOD  
and our selues  
better.



The Saints  
are gainers by  
their falls.  
*Simile.*

said in the *Psalmes*, that *therefore the wicked feare not God, because they haue no changes*, and truly, euen the godly men, if they had no changes, they would feare him lesse; so that every change in a mans state the falling into sinne, and the rising againe, leades a man to some new knowledge of *God*, and of himselfe also, to a new experimentall knowledge, and that knowledge leades him to a new degree of feare: so that still by their sins the Saints get advantage, that they shall find in their spirituall estate: for euen as we see the Sun, when it breakes out of a thicke Cloud of darkenesse, it shines the brighter; so grace when it breakes out of a thicke cloud of sinnes or of temptations, it shines the brighter, we are still gainers by those changes. I say, we learne to know *God*, and our selues also the better, and for these causes, hee leaues vs to those changes, that we may be gainers by them, and so we are. Therefore, say not with thy selfe, because I finde some defects, and some vneuenesse in my sanctification, therefore the *Lord* is not sufficient: for it is for thy advantage, it is not for want of sufficiencie in the *Lord*, nor of willingnesse in him to communicate it to thee, but it is for thy advantage, that thou shouldest finde these changes, and this vneuenesse in thy wayes. Therefore, build vpon this, that he is *All-sufficient*. It may be when thou goest about a worke thy selfe, thou findest it a difficult thing to overcome such a lust. but that which is impossible with men, is easie with *God*. Those that rowed all night, and did no good, a word  
from

from his mouth brought them to shore presently. *The spirit that is in vs lusteth after envie, Iames 4. but the Scriptures offer more grace.* That is; Grace is able to heale these naturall hereditary diseases, there is an *All-sufficiency* in him, he is able to doe it; He that can still the Sea, and command the Windes, that at his word they are quiet, can he not still strong lusts? He is able to restrain them: therefore labour to see his *All-sufficiency* in this, as well as in all things els. Thinke with thy selfe, he hath a soveraignty over all thy affections, over all thy lusts: for what is it that troubles vs, & interrupts vs in our way, but some temptations of the flesh, or the world? is not the *Lord* the master of them? As *Paul* saith, *2 Cor. 12.* though Satan were the chiefe buffeter, & the lusts of the flesh the messengers, yet the *Lord* sent that messenger, (marke it) therefore he goes not to Satan, he wrangles not with the messenger, but he immediately sought the *Lord*, he beseeches him to recall it. So thinke with thy selfe, when thou art set on with a strong lust, with a temptation that seemes too hard for thee, say with thy selfe, this is a messenger from *God*, and I must goe to *God*, and beseech him to take it off, and rebuke it: for he is able to doe it, he is *All-sufficient*, they are all at his command, as the inastive is at the Masters command, he is able to rate him, but a stranger is not able to doe it, and when he hath done what his Master would haue him, he cals him in; So the Shepheard sets his Dogge vpon his Sheepe to bring them in, but when they

Iam. 4. 5. 6.

Lusts are at Gods command.

2 Cor. 12.

Note.

Simile.



Why GOD  
suffers lusts  
and temptati-  
ons in his  
children.

Wee stand in  
Gods strength  
as we may see,

I  
In others.

are brought in, he rates his Dog; and so doth the Lord with lusts, and sinne, and temptations, he sets them on his owne Sheepe, his own children, but for this end, to bring them in, it is not in their owne power to rate these temptations, and lusts, nor in the power of a stranger, but onely in the Lords, who is master of them, whose messengers they are, he is able to rebuke and recall them, they are at his command, as it is said of the diseases of the body, they are like the Centurions servants, if he bid one goe, he goeth; if he bid another come, he commeth: so it is true of the diseases of the soule; if he say to such a messenger as Paul had, to such a lust, to such a temptation, goe and seaze vpon such a man, goe and vex him for a time, it shall goe; if againe, he call it backe and restraine it, shall it not be restrained? Labour thus to see Gods All-sufficiencie.

Beloued, if you looke vpon other men, or your selues, you shall see experience enough of this. Looke vpon David, vpon Paul, vpon Salomon, Lot, and Noah, and all the Saints, so long as God was with them, how strong were they? Their strength was like Sampsons: but when the Lord withdrew himselfe, we see what base lusts they fell into; what lusts was David given vp vnto? also Salomon, and Peter, & Lot. All this the Lord hath done, even for this purpose, that they might learne to know that All-sufficiencie is in him, and not in them. Therefore when thou lookest on any Saint of God that excels in grace, and goes beyond thee, thinke thus with thy selfe; it is

not



not because this man is stronger then I, but because the *Lord* hath done more for him, he hath bestowed more grace on him: he that hath done this to him, is he not able to doe it to thee? Hee that is so strong, if the *Lord* withdraw his hand, thou seest what he is. And therefore comfort thy selfe with this, that he is able to strengthen thee. Think againe with thy selfe, how thou hast found him at other times. My *Beloved*, there is great strength in this, even when thou art at the worst, to keepe life in the roote of grace; in the Winter time it is a mightie power of *God*, if we looke on the workes of Nature, to keepe life in the Plants, when they seeme to be dead, that the hardnesse, and coldnes of Winter take not away the life of them. So it is no lesse *All-sufficiency*, and almightie power of *God*, to keepe the life of grace in our greatest fals and temptations, to keepe life in *David* and *Salomon*, that it should spring againe when the Spring-time was come.

Again, who is it that restrained thy lusts before? who is it that hath given thee any ability to think those good thoughts, to doe those good things? thou hadst not thy power in thy selfe, all was frō the *Lord*. Therefore if he haue an *All-sufficiency* in him, as he is *All-sufficient* to forgiue sins, so likewise, he is *All-sufficient* to sanctifie thee. Be not discouraged then. Let not a man think with himselfe, oh, I shall never overcome it, I shall never be able to be so exact in the wayes of righteousness, as I ought to be; Remember, *God* is *All-sufficient*. Our endeavor must be to make our hearts perfect,

2

In our selues.

Note.

Despaire of victory over lusts, is for want of beleeving *Gods All-sufficiency*.

When the heart is not perfect, lusts prevaile.

to resolute to serue him with a perfect heart. But for the power & performance of it, this belongs to *God*. Therefore hence comes all the difficultie, that our hearts are not so perfect: for when a man is readie to object, I, but I finde no experience of this Almighty power? See that the cause be not in thy selfe; he hath made a promise vnto those whose hearts are perfect with him; it may be, thy heart is imperfect, it may be, there hath bene hypocrisie in thy heart, thou hast never bene willing to part with all, to serue him with a perfect heart, and with a willing minde all thy dayes. But, when once thy heart is brought to sincerity, doubt not that he will performe that thou lookest for on his part: for it belongs to his part to giue thee power, and strength to doe that which thou desirest to doe. So much likewise, for the second part of the **Covenant**.

<sup>3</sup>  
Gods All-sufficiency in providing outward good things.

Pro. 23.

All outward good things are Gods.

The third part of the **Covenant**, is to provide all good things for vs, belonging to this present life: herein the *Lord* is *All-sufficient* to all those that are in **Covenant** with him. I neede not say much to make this good vnto you. All things are his, whatsoeuer a man needs; Riches are his, they are his creatures: in *Pro. 23.* they come and goe at his command: Honor is his; *I will honour those that honour me*, he takes it to himselfe, to bestow it as he pleaseth: Health and life is his; *the issues of life and death belong to him*. Friendship is his, for *he puts our acquaintance farre from vs*, and drawes them nere to vs. Goe through all the varietie of things that your heart can desire, and they are all his.



his, he is the governor, and the disposer of them as he pleaseth; and therefore, certainly, he is *All-sufficient*; he is able to provide all things for thee that thy heart can desire, so that no good thing shall be wanting to thee. I will not stand to enlarge this, but rather answer the objections: for here we are ready to object;

If the *Lord* be *All-sufficient*, why is it thus then with me? why doe I want so many things which I haue need of, and desire to haue? If *God* be *All-sufficient*, why are there so many defects in my estate, in my health, this way and that way?

To this I answer: Thou must consider with thy selfe, if those desires of thine be not vnnatural desires, whether they be not sinfull desires; the *Lord* hath promised to be *All-sufficient* to the naturall desires, to the right desires of the soule. but not to those that are vnnaturall and inordinate. There is a double desire in the heart of man, as there is a double thirst: here is a naturall thirst, you know, which is easily satisfied with a little, there is an vnnaturall thirst, as the thirst of a dropsie man, who desires exceeding much, and the more you giue him, still the more he desires, and is never satisfied. So it is with the soule; there is a naturall health and desire, which desires so much credit, and so much wealth, as is needfull, there is besides this, an vnnaturall desire of the soule, when a man doth long after abundance: now doe not looke that the *Lord* should satisfie this, nay, the best way, in this case, is not to satisfie, but to take from our desires; as wee say of the

Ob.

Ans.

Why the Saints want good things of this life that they desire.

A double desire in the soule.

1  
Naturall.

2  
Vnnaturall.



Evill desires  
are to be pur-  
ged, and not  
satisfied.

Eccles. 5. 10.

When God  
satisfieth evill  
desires, it is a  
token of his  
wrath.

*Simile.*

*Bouleemia*, that disease wherein a man eates much, that is called *Caninus appetitus*, & likewise, in the dropsie, the one excesssiuely eates, and the other excesssiuely drinckes; and the rule of *Physicians* is, *Opus habent purgatione, non impletione*; such a man hath need of purging and emptying, and not of filling; so I may say of all these, such men haue neede of purging and emptying, which is to be desired in this case: that wherein *God* shewes his *All-sufficiencie* now, is not in supplying thy defects, in adding that which thou desirest, but in purging the heart, & taking away those desires: that is the way to heale thee. Therefore consider seriously what that is that thou desirest, if it be an inordinate desire, if it be a worke of fancy, know that thou canst not looke for this *All-sufficiencie* of *God* to satisfie this, but to heale it. You shall see *Eccles. 5. 10.* *He that loveth silver, shall not be satisfied with silver, and he that loveth riches, shall be without the fruit thereof.* You see what the *Lord* hath set downe concerning this case: now a man may seeke for a competency, but when he comes once to riches, that he seekes for them, the *Lord* faith, such a man shall not be satisfied, or, if he be, it shall be in wrath: for it is in wrath given to such a man. It is the destruction of a Dropsie man to haue much drinke given him, or to giue a man much meate that is sicke of the disease wee spake of before. And therefore, faith he, he shall not be satisfied, or, if he be, it shall be in Iudgement: Such are these desires, and therefore examine thy selfe, whether thy desires be not such as proceed from

from fancy, such as proceed not from the health, but the weaknesse of the soule. Therefore it is said in 1 Tim. 6. that godlinesse is great gaine with contentment. How doth godlinesse giue contentment? After that manner that Physicke giues satisfaction. A drop sic man after he is brought into health, you know, he is contented with lesse drinke, for now he is in health: so godlines brings the soule to a good temper, it takes away the distemper, the lustfull humors, that were there before, and brings him into a right temper, it giues him now the content that before he wanted.

Againe, another objection is; If God be *All-sufficiēt* for these outward things, why am I thus crossed? why doe I suffer these afflictions? why are they not removed from me?

To this I answer briefly: Thou maiest be deceived in them, that which thou makest account is so great an evill to thee, it may be for thy great good, as we see *Ier. 42.* that whole Chapter, the Captaine there, and the rest of the people, they reckoned it an exceeding great misery, a very great affliction to continue in *Ierusalem*, they had a great desire to goe downe into *Egypt*, but the Lord tels them, they were very much deceived: for this misery shall be for your good, saith he, but if you will needs goe downe into *Egypt*, when you thinke to haue abundance of all things there, you shall meete with the Sword, and with Famine, and with the Pestilence, and with vtter destruction. So I say, in this case, we are oftentimes deceived, we thinke that to be good for vs which

1 Tim. 6. 6.

*Simile.*

*Ob.*

*Answ.*

That is not alway good for vs, that we desire, nor that alway evill, that we would be freed from. *Ier. 42.*



is not. Certainly, the *Lord* is *All-sufficient*, he will with-hold no good thing, but it is not *Alwayes* good to haue such an affliction removed, perhaps it were better for thee to beare it, it were better for thee to lye vnder it, then that it should be removed: we doe in this case, many times with the *Lord*, as the children of the Prophets dealt with *Elisha*, they would needs goe to seeke the body of *Elijah*, *Elisha* forbad them, but still they were importunate; saith he, if you will needs goe, goe; but they lost their labour, they had better haue taken his counsell at the first; And so in this case, many times when the *Lord* would haue vs to doe such a thing, and to be content with the want of such a comfort, to be content to suffer such a defect in our estate, in our bodies, in our businesse, we are still importunate with him, sometimes he hearkens to vs, he suffers the thing to be done, but we were as good to want it. I would ask thee in this case, wouldst thou haue it without thy Fathers good will? If thou haue it, it will do thee no good: the best way is this, to consider with thy selfe, that he is *All-sufficient*; though this affliction seeme to be exceeding bitter, yet it is a cup of thy Fathers providing, it is that which the *Lord*, that loues thee, hath ordained: it is that which the *Lord* that wants nothing, who is able enough to take it from thee, & to supply it, it is that which he hath seene meete to dispence to thee: therefore it is not for want of sufficiency in him, but it is better for thee to suffer the want of this comfort, or to lye vnder this crosse or affliction.

But

We were better want comforts, then enioy them without our Fathers good will.



Ob.

But lastly, some will say, if the Lord be *All-sufficient*, and I must be subject to his will, why is it not his will to put me into a higher condition? why hath hee given mee but such a measure of gifts, but such a meane place, but such a quantitie of health, of wealth, of vnderstanding? A mans heart will goe further, if there be such riches in God, such an *Al-sufficiency* in him, why is it not better with me? why am I not in a higher condition?

To this I answer: First, That he that entreth into Covenant with God, he should be content with the lowest place in all the family, & be glad that he is within the doore; as wee see the *Prodigall* did; and so the Apostle *Paul*, *I am the least of all the Saints*, and he was content to be the least.

A man that hath beene truly humbled, and brought home to God, that hath *tasted and seene how gracious the Lord is*, that hath had experience of his owne sinne, and of Gods goodnesse, he will be content with the least measure, if he be put into the lowest place, if he be made the least of all Saints, he will not exalt himselfe above that measure, and that place that the Lord hath allotted him.

But besides this, Consider, secondly, further with thy selfe, that if thou haue a lower place, or condition, in this or that thing, yet it may be thou hast a higher condition in somewhat else, and know this, that God giues no man all things, but hath mingled his comforts, hee hath dispensed them diversly, as we see in *1 Sam.* in that case betweene *Hannah* and *Peninnah*; *Hannah* had the

loue

Answ.

A Christian should be content with a mean place in Gods house.

2

Those that are mean in some things, may excell in others.

1 Sam. 1. 2.

God dispenseth his gifts differently, no one man hath all.

<sup>3</sup>  
God can satisfie the desires of a low condition.

loue of her husband, but the *Lord* hath made her barren: on the other side, *Peninnah* had children, but she wanted the loue of her husband: it is purposely noted there, that you may see how the *Lord* dispenseth his comforts: and so it was with *Leah* & *Rachel*, the one, you know, had children, and wanted her Husbands loue, the other had a greater abundance of loue, but shee was barren. As it was with these; so generally the *Lord* dispēseth good and evill together. There is no man that hath all things. You see *Moses*, he wanted eloquence, that *Aaron* had, as *Moses* againe had the wisdome that *Aaron* wanted: so *Paul* and *Barnabas*, they had different excellencies, the one had that the other wanted, and so it is generally. Therefore thinke with thy selfe, there is no man that hath all, and why should I desire it? there must be a mingling of some defects.

Againe, Thirdly, Consider with thy selfe, that the varieties of the sufficiencies that *God* giues to men, that he placeth some in a higher degree, and some in a lower, to some he giues greater gifts, to some lesser; some he makes rich, and some poore, some honorable, and some base; this variety in all the works of *God* takes not away from the perfection of each one: every man in his place may haue a perfection, he may haue it within his spheare, so that there shall be no want at all: for the *Lord*, out of his almighty power, is able to doe it, that the desire may be satisfied as much, they may be filled in a lower condition as well as in a greater, thou shalt feele no more want, but  
haue



haue as great a degree of happinesse as the other ; you know, there are sundry expressions in that case. A little Bottle is as well filled as a greater. What can a man desire more but to be satisfied ? And therein *God* is *All-sufficient*, there is in him an *All-sufficiencie* to fill every creature in his own spheare, and compasse, when he hath made vessels of glory, they be not all of one sort, but of diuers sorts, some of one sort, some of another sort, but they are all vessels of glory, they haue all experience of his riches, and of his mercies, so that none haue cause to complaine.

Lastly ; Consider (in that meannesse of place, gifts, or condition thou art in,) thou maiest be as faithfull in a little, as another may be in much. Consider, that he that hath much, yet there is nothing his, but the sinceritie wherewith a man hath vſed that which he hath, wherewith he performes all he doth : he that hath the gifts that *Eliab* and *Paul* had, that excellencie of gifts, it is not his but the Churches, all that is his, is but his faithfulness in dispensing those gifts, they are not his owne, but they are bestowed on him ; and he that hath the lesser measure of gifts, he that hath the lower part given him to act, while he is on the stage of this world, is accepted according to his faithfulness, every man shall be rewarded according to his faithfulness & sinceritie: therefore content thy selfe with a lower condition, say not that *God* is not *All-sufficient*, because thou hast not a higher degree : for thou seest here is *All-sufficiencie* in *God*, to preserue thee in all comfort,

*Simile.*

4  
A Christians  
faithfulness  
is accepted in  
a meane con-  
dition.

A mans gifts  
are not his,  
but the faith-  
fulness wher-  
with he hath  
dispensed  
them.



fort, and to defend thee from all evill. It may stand with a great difference of condition; though thou be not so high as another, though thou haue not so much grace, though thou haue not so high a Calling as another, yet even to thee also *God is All-sufficient*. So we haue runne through all these three parts of the *Covenant*; He is *All-sufficient* in *forgiving*; He is *All-sufficient* in *sanctifying* vs; And he is *All-sufficient* in providing for vs whatsoever wee want.

So much for this time.

F I N I S.





THE  
FIFTH  
SERMON.

GENESIS 17. 1.

*I am GOD All-sufficient.*



YOV know where wee left; Wee proceede to that which remains, that wee may finish the poynt at this time. There remaine but these two Deductions from this, that *God is All-sufficient.*

First; This should leade as to a further knowledge of the insufficiencie of the Creature, ( That wee will first doe, and after it wee will adde but a tryall to all that we haue said, to see whether wee be indeede perswaded of that *All-sufficiency*, that is in *God*, and of that vanitie, and emptinesse that is in the Creature; And this will be our businesse at this time. ) If *God* be *All-sufficient* and that exclusiuelly, as I shewed before, then there is an emptinesse, a vanitie, and

2  
*Deductions.*

1  
The insufficiencie of the Creature proved.



and indigence in the Creature, there is nothing in it: and to make this good to you; Consider,

It is made by another.

First, that the Creature is made by something else without it. It is certaine, no Creature is able to make it selfe: for that which makes another, must be before another; if a creature could make it selfe, it must be before it selfe, and therefore all things are made by *God*, by this *All-sufficient God*. Now then, if that which makes the Creature be some thing without it selfe, then the end of the Creature must be some thing also without it selfe: for it is the maker that is the efficient cause of all things, and in all things that propounds an end to it selfe, and the end of every thing, you know, is the perfection of the thing; so that hence we gather, that all the perfection of the Creature is without it selfe; for if the end be the perfection, and the end to which every Creature is carried, is without it selfe, it must needs be, that, it hath no perfection nor excellency within it selfe: hence it is, that every creature is bound to doe some thing for another, the inanimate & vnreasonable creature for man, and man for *God*; because all are made for a further end. The *Almightie God* himselfe, the *All-sufficient God*, that hath no efficient cause, and, by consequent, no end without himselfe, hee may doe all for himselfe, and for his owne sake, and his owne glory; if he will dispence with the creature, and doe good or ill to the creature, and make himselfe the end of all that he doth. I say, he may well doe it: for he hath no higher end; but

The end and perfection of the Creature without it selfe.

Note.



But if any Creature shall say, I will seeke no further end, but to haue a happinesse and perfection within mine owne compasse, it is all one, as if the hearbe should say, I will not be beholding to the Sunne, but I will liue of my selfe, or I will not be beholding to the raine, &c. This Creature must needs perish, because his end and perfection is without himselfe altogether; It is as if the hand should say, I will seeke a perfection in my owne spheare, as I am such a part, as I am such a member, without looking to the soule, that giues life, or without looking to the rest of the body it subsists in, this is the way to destroy it: So it is with every creature, if it seeke a perfection within it selfe, it is the vndoing of it selfe. On the other side, when it denies it selfe, when it emptieth it selfe, when it lookes for nothing within its owne compasse, but goes out of it selfe, and out of every Creature besides, to the Ocean of happines, from whence it must receiue all the perfection it hath, I say, therein consists the beatitude and blessednesse of the Creature.

Secondly: As that is one argument, to shew the emptines of the creature, that the happines of it is without it selfe altogether, and therefore it must needs be emptie, so this is another Reason, which you shall finde in *Eccle. 2.* Every creature, naming diuers of them, the *Sun* and the *Waters*, and the *winde*, the severall generations of the creatures, whereof one goeth, and another succeedeth, thus the *Wiseman* concludes, sayth he, *all things are full of labor, man cannot utter it.* And he proues

N

it

*Simile.*

Wherein the  
happinesse of  
the Creature  
consists.

2

It is in conti-  
nuall motion.

*Eccle. 2.*

The end of  
motion, what.

it by this, *The Sunne riseth, and sets,* and is never at quiet, *the Clouds goe about by their circuits,* and never remaine still in their places, *the water is still running to and fro,* *some Rivers are running to the Sea,* *some running out of it,* so that all things are full of labour. Now what is the end of all motion, and of all labor? When any man, or any thing moues it selfe from one place to another, it is out of a desire, out of an appetite to be there rather then in the place where it is, there is no appetite or desire but of something that is wanting: for, if it had the thing, it would haue no desire to it, and therefore it is carried to something without it selfe: so that the motion of the creature is a signe of the imperfection of it. Besides, whatsoever moues, it moueth to get that which it hath not, yet it is impossibilitie to haue it, & it hath it not: for, if it had it, the Creature would rest there, it would remaine in that terme, it would stand still vpon that Center; but because it wants something it hath not, therefore it moues it selfe, and therefore it labours. Now when you see this is the condition of every Creature vnder the Sunne, *all things are full of labour,* and sorrow, and man that is the Lord of them (you know what is said to him, that *in labour he should eate his bread, and all his life should be full of labour*) it is an argument of the imperfection; and of the vanitie and indigence of the Creature, and that what it hath; it must haue else-where.

<sup>3</sup>  
It hath all by  
participation.

Last of all, you shall know it by this, that whatsoever the creature hath, it hath it but by partici-



*Simile.*

pation, it hath nothing of it selfe; as in things that are made hot, some things are more hot, & some things lesse hot, it is an argument they haue not hornes in themselues, but there is some thing else that is perfectly hot: for that which hath but a part, it presupposeth that there is some thing else that is the whole, of which that is but the part: If you looke vpon all the goodnesse, excellency, and beautie in the Creatures, you see some Creatures haue it more, and some lesse, which is an argument that there is some thing else without the Creature that hath a sea of perfection, that is full of goodnesse, full of excellency, as the Sunne is full of light, and as the Sea is full of water, and this is not within, but without the Creature. Now the Creature being thus imperfect in it selfe, it hath something communicated to it from day to day: for if there be a continuall neede, there is a daily supply that it must haue, & if that fayle, or be not so good as it needs, the Creature languisheth. This is so in every kinde: if it be in matter of life, if meate, or drinke, or Physicke, or ayre be wanting, the creature dies for want of it: for it hath it not in it selfe, it is communicated from another. And so likewise, if it be contentment, if it be refreshing, if it be joy, without which no Creature is able to liue, if it be wanting, if God withhold his hand, that there is not an influence into it, the creature languisheth according to the proportion of that defect: if it be in matters that belong to eternall life; if the Lord withhold his hand, if he shut vp his hand, they perish eternally.

If the good that God communicates to the creature fayle, the creature perisheth.

No Creature liues without joy.



nally, And so we may say of all things else.

So that this is the condition of every creature, it is exceeding emptie; Man himselfe is emptie, and so all other creatures besides are, there is no happines to be found in them, there is no satisfaction, there is no contentment to the soule of a man. If I should goe through the particulars, you would finde it so. If you aske, where this happines is to be found? Whether in riches, or in matter of estate? Surely, it is not there: for riches are but of two sorts, either they are naturall riches, such as meate, drinke, and clothes; or els they are artificiall riches, things that consist in exchange, that are invented by Art, to be the measure of them for commutation; it cannot consist in the naturall, for what serue they to, but to maintaine the body? and what doth the body serue for, but for the soule? And if this were all, what should become of the principall part of man, that which is indeede the man himselfe? Besides, it cannot consist in credit, in estimation, in honor, for that is in the power of another, and is not in a mans owne power, and the happinesse and blessednesse of any thing, the contentment which consists in the power of another, and that in the power of the Creature, it cannot make a man happie, it can giue little contentment to him.

Besides; As we said of riches, so we may say of honour, and glory, it is either emptie glory, as the Scripture often calls it; That is, glory that is gathered from vaine things, as apparell, or houses,

Riches of two  
sorts.

1

Naturall.

2

Artificiall.

Honour of  
two sorts.

1

Empty glory.

houses, or learning, or knowledge : for there is nothing that brings true praise, but grace onely, as nothing drawes shame properly after it, but sinne, it is not in this, for there is a deceiueable thing, it is as a shadow, that hath no substance to answer it, or else it is true honor & credit, and if it be that, that is but the shadow that followes the substance. And therefore our blessednes, our contentednesse, and satisfaction, rests rather in the thing from whence this credit is gathered, then in the credit it selfe : for that is but a shadow that sometimes followes it, and sometimes it doth not, sometimes it is a larger shadow, and sometimes a shorter, though the body be the same.

I might goe through many others, but I will rather confirme all this to you, that I haue said of the emptinesse of the creature, by that testimony that is without all exception, that is, by the testimony of *God* himselfe, even the testimony of the Scriptures, in *Eccles. 1. 2.* where the scope of the *Wiseman* is to set out this poynt, that we are now vpon ; That is, The emptinesse of the Creature.

First ; sayth he, *vanitie of vanities, all is vanitie.* That is ; There is in the Creature an excesse of vanitie, as you know, this is the height of the Hebrew Superlatiue, *vanitie of vanities.* Besides, it signifieth a heape of vanities, a nest of vanities, a wondrous exceeding great vanitie, such as he knew not how to expresse what that vanitie is that is in the Creature. It is a vaine thing, wee say, that cannot profit, and therefore wee see in

Onely grace  
and sin bring  
praise and  
shame.

2  
True honour.

*Simile.*

The emptines  
of the Crea-  
ture proved,  
first by argu-  
ments.

1. *Argu.*  
It is full of va-  
nitie, which  
appeares.

1  
In that it is  
vunprofitable.



the 2. verse, *What remaines to a man of all his travels*, or what availes it, or what profits it, according to that in the Gospell, which is the best expression of it? Sayth our Saviour, Put the case thou hadst all the good things in the world, that all the glory of the world, that al the riches in the world were in thy possession, yet, sayth he, when thou shalt lose thy soule, what is all this? It cannot helpe thee to saue thy soule, *what will it profit thee?* That is, It is an vnprofitable thing to make vs happy. Besides, in this the vanitie of the Creature is seene, that it is of a mouldring, vanishing nature. *Isa. 40. Rom. 8.* those two places expresse it: *Isa. 40. 6. All flesh is grasse, and all the glory of it as the flower of the grasse.* That is; As it is expressed in the next Verse, as the grasse is of a fading nature, so is the Creature it selfe, and as the Flower of the grasse, sets out all the excellency, all the gifts and beautie of the Creature that is found in it; The spirit of *God* blowes vpon it, and the grasse withers, and the Flower fades away: So in *Rom. 8. the Creature is subject to vanitie.* That is, It is of no abiding condition, it withers, and wafts, and hath nothing in it, to maintaine it. Besides, it is called vaine: because it is not able to bring any enterprize to passe. You would thinke the Creature were able to doe much, but you see what the *Lord* saith; A man thinks he is able to *build a house*, or he thinks hee is able to *watch a Citie*. No, sayth the *Lord*, if I withdraw my selfe, thou shalt be able to doe nothing, nor any Creature whatsoeuer. What is said of that,

may

2

It is brittle.

Isa. 40. 6.

Rom. 8.

3

It is vnable to  
bring enter-  
prizes to  
passe.



may be said of any thing else. A man thinkes a Horse is a Creature that will stand him in much stead in the day of Bartell, but *a Horse is but a vaine thing*. And so it is in all other Creatures, they are not able to bring any enterprize to passe, herein is the vanitie of them.

But now this is but the simple expression of vanitie; Let vs consider (for what can we doe better since we are vpon this argument) what arguments the *holy Ghost* vseth to perswade vs of this truth, that there is nothing but emptinesse in the Creature. I beseech you, hearken to it: for we all thinke there is too much in the Creature, we should not seeke it as we doe, our thoughts and affections should not be so much stirred about it as they are, if wee did not thinke there were something in it. I say, consider the arguments which the *holy Ghost* vseth, I will but name the places in brieffe to you, you may reade them in these two Chapters at your leasure, it will much helpe to bring them to your memory. First, sayth the *Wise-man*, *there is nothing but vanitie*: for, sayth he, when I looke vpon the whole Vniuerse, vpon the whole frame of things, this I find, first, a great instabilitie in them, *one generation cometh, and another goeth, the Sunne riseth, and the Sunne setteth, there is nothing constant vnder the Sunne*. Now the happinesse of a man, that which wil giue content to a man, it must be some stable thing: for a man cannot rest but vpon some Center, vpon some place, wher his soule may finde some quiet, and therefore an vnstable thing, that

The Creature  
vnstable.

is in continuall passage, is not able to giue the soule rest.

2. *Argu.*  
Nothing new  
in the Crea-  
ture.

Secondly; sayth he, *there is no new thing vnder the Sunne*; ( Marke it ) for, sayth he, if you goe through the whole course of things, you shall finde nothing new; one generation comes, and another generation succedes like it. And so forward, that as in the waues of the Sea, one follows another, till they be all broken vpon the shore; so it is in the succession of generation, and there is nothing in one generation, but what was in another, because, sayth he, *the Sunne riseth and sets, the winds goe to and fro, they goe about by their Circuits.* And so the waters in the springs, and in the Rivers, they goe and come, and there is no new thing vnder the Sunne; What shall wee gather from that? Why this, that there is no satisfaction to the soule of a man. And therefore, sayth he, *the eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the eare with hearing.* Those two are the onely disciplinall senses we haue; you know, all the knowledge you haue, is gathered by the eye and the eare. Now if there be no new thing vnder the Sunne, but all things are the same; hence it is that the mainde of man, when it lookes about it, can find nothing to giue it satisfactiō. for there must be some newnes, some vanitie, some thing that we haue not here, that the soule seekes after. But, sayth he, you shall find nothing but the same, nothing but Identitie.

All knowledg  
gained by the  
eye and the  
eare.

Ob.

But, if it be objected, there is something new, that was not before, and there were some things before that are not now.

The



The *Wiseman* answers thus, *those things that were done then, they are forgotten*, they are not had in remembrance; And so likewise *the things that are now will be forgotten*. And therefore there is no new thing. Indee, in grace there is some thing new, there is a new Creature, there are all things new within and without, there is a new Judgement, a new Conscience, new affections, every thing is new, *all things are become new* there. Let him that hath grace, looke about him, and there is some thing new, hee comes into a new Company, he is brought into a new world, his eye sees things, his care heares things that never entred into any mans heart: That is, into any naturall mans heart, which onely hath to doe with naturall things, let him looke into the word of *God*, there is a newnesse: for the more you reade it, the more you desire still to reade it, the more you heare it, still you find some new thing discovered: Looke on the depth of those mysteries, looke on the consolations of the Spirit, still there is something new in all the wayes of *God*, that belong to the new Creature, still thou shalt haue a fresh renewed vigor in every thing, that satisfieth the soule of a man, and there the eye is satisfied with seeing, and the care with hearing. In all the workes of Nature, there is nothing new.

The third and last reason that he vseth to shew the emptinesse of all things vnder the Sunne, is, because that which is crooked cannot be made straight, and that which is defectiue can none supply;

*Ans.*

Things done in former ages forgotten. Newnesse in nothing, but in grace.

3. *Argu.*

The Creature cannot see things amisse straight.

supply; That is, There are many things in the Creature, that are crosse to vs, that fall thwart vpon vs, there are many ils that we finde in our selues, and in all things that we haue to doe with. But, sayth he, if you looke vpon the Creature, there is nothing that is able to *make straight that which is crooked*: the daughter of *Abraham* that was crooked, all the Creatures both in Heaven and earth, were not able to make her straight. A perverse and crooked minde, who can make straight? Crooked children, who can make them straight? Crooked affections, inordinate feares, and inordinate griefes, who can rectifie them? And so, likewise, who can supply that which is wanting? When he lookes vpon all this, and sees it in the nature of the Creature, he concludes vpon all this, that all is vanitie.

2  
By his experience.

Two things  
*Salomon* excelled in.

1

When he hath done all this, he goes further, and confirms all this by experience of his own; and now there were two things wherein *Salomon* did excell, which all men would desire on earth. That is, Greatnesse of Wisedome; and secondly, Greatnesse of estate; And, sayth he, first, before I come to the particulars, let me say this to you concerning my experience, and see whether the arguments that are taken from thence, be not strong arguments to expresse the vanitie of all things vnder the *Sunne*; Sayth he, I was a King in *Ierusalem*, a mightie man, and therefore able to haue experience of those things that other men had not, I had opportunitie that other men had not. Secondly; As I was a King, so I was  
such

2



such a King as exceeded in all kinde of wealth, and abundance of all things, as never any before, or any that came after; so he saith of himselfe, and therefore he had more libertie, and more experience then any of the sonnes of men besides. Moreover, hee had better meanes to finde out good and evill vnder the Sunne, because of the largeness of his Wisedome.

Last of all, saith he, *I gave my selfe to this, I set my selfe to search and finde out, what is good and evil to the sonnes of men.* Now, if you would know what *Salomon* found, sayth he, there are but two things wherein this experience consisteth; that is, to know what is in wisedome and folly; secondly, to know what is in great estate.

First, for matter of wisedome, hee concludes thus, *He that increaseth in wisedome, increaseth in griefe.* That is; Let a man goe either way, sayth the *Wiseman*, (speaking of morall and civill wisedome, not of sanctified wisedome, for that is another thing.) Now the question is this, among the Creatures wherein vanitie is seene, sayth he, *He that increaseth knowledge, increaseth sorrow:* for when a man is a wise man, hee findes many defects, he sees all the miseries a-far off, that are comming vpon him, he lookes to all the corners of his unhappines, which are hid from another that is foolish. And therefore sayth he, the more that a man seeth, the more misery he seeth, and the more misery he seeth, the more his griefe is increased and multiplied. Besides, *he that increaseth wisedome, increaseth griefe:* for he sees many defects,

3

Wherein *Salomon's* experience consisteth.

1  
Of the vanitie of morall wisedome.

1  
In seeing misery it cannot prevent.

2  
Seeing disorders, it cannot amend.

defects, he seeth many things out of order, many things in his own soule, many things in his owne Family, many things in the Common-wealth, many things in the Church, many things in the course of nature, but all a mans wisdom will not remedy it ; now when a man sees ill, and is vnable to helpe, in such a case, sayth he, *he that increaseth wisdom, increaseth griefe.* Besides, if the things themselves that are knowne, cannot giue any filling, any contentment to the soule of a man : certainly, the knowledge of them cannot doe it, for the knowledge cannot goe beyond the thing, there is more in the thing then in the knowledge of it. But there is a vanitie, and a curse lyes vpon all the creatures, and therefore, he that increaseth wisdom, takes much paines, and hath little for his labour, it costs him much paines, much wearinesse in reading, and searching, and when he hath done all this, as there is a vanitie in the creature, which is knowne ; so there is in the knowledge it selfe.

3  
Because the  
things known  
giue not con-  
tentment.

Ob.

But, you will say, on the other side, there is some thing then in folly ; if a man be ignorant, if a man know not that which a wiseman seeth.

Ans<sup>r</sup>.

No ; there is a madnesse in that, there is no happinesse or contentment there : for such a man multiplies griefe, but it is of another kinde : for evils come vpon him, and he cannot see how to prevent them, they lye vpon him, and vndoe him before he is a-ware, *he is full of gray-hayres, and knowes it not,* as it is sayd of *Ephraim*. These are the fruits of folly, he is precipitate, and runs into

I  
Of the vanitie  
of folly.  
It runs a man  
to mischief  
vncknowne.

mis-



mischiefe he falls into quick-sands, and hath not eyes to discern it. So he that increaseth folly, on the other side, likewise, he increaseth griefe. This, saith *Salomon*, I haue found out, therefore it is not in follie, nor in wisdome, *I gaue my selfe to know wisdome, and madnesse, and foolishnesse*, I know also, *that this is vanitie and vexation of spirit*. That is, both wisdome and folly. Folly, because it is madnesse; and Wisdome, because it increaseth griefe.

Now for the other, for the matter of his estate, I will be very brieft in it, you shall finde there, that he proues a vanitie in that, by an induction, going through all the particulars almost that the sonnes of men enjoy vnder the Sunne. And first he begins with *Laughter* and *Iollitie*, that which commonly every man seekes after, saith hee, *I thought I would endeavour my selfe to see if there were any contentment to be found in that*, but it is not there, sayth he, *I said of Laughter thou art mad, and of Ioy, what is this that thou doest?* These three things he saith concerning Iollitie, concerning that carnall mirth wherewith men refresh themselves.

First; sayth he, I finde it a madnesse: because it sets a man a-work vpon trifles, when he hath greater things in hand, madnes, you know, is humorous, exulting and rejoycing in vaine things, and intending of idle things, and letting goe things tending to our profit, as a mad man cares for nothing belonging to his health, or his wealth, but bestowes himselfe in picking of flowers,

3  
Of the vanitie  
of outward  
things.

Laughter.

I  
It is madnes.

An effect of  
madnesse.

flowers, or in doing some idle things, sayth he, there is a madnesse in this to consider, that in the midst of sinne, and of danger, and in the midst of so many great busineses and employments, in the midst of that labour that *God* hath given to the sonnes of men, for them to be full of mirth and jollitie, this is madnesse. That is one of his censures of it.

2  
It is Folly.  
Folly what,

The second is, it is Folly ; Folly is a stupiditie, when stupiditie possesseth the soule of a man, that it is not able to judge of things that are presented to him, that is follie, so saith he, I found this in jollitie and carnall mirth, it breeds stupor, and takes away all taste and relish from me, that as a man that tastes sweete things, is not able to finde the relish of his Beere or Meat, so, saith he, when I had tasted of jollitie, and carnall mirth, it caused me to disrelish all things : for that is the dispositiō of folly, it takes away the sense that we should haue of other things, it stupifieth a man ; stupidity and folly we expresse one by another.

3  
It passeth  
soone away.

Last of all ; What doth it ? That is ; it passeth away like as musicke, there is nothing left, it goes and leaues nothing behinde it, yea, it leaues sadnesse, if any thing, and sinne behinde it, the thing passeth away in a moment, but the sinne remaines and continueth. This is his censure of that part, namely, carnall mirth and jollitie.

2  
Wine.  
3  
Great workes.

Then he comes to the rest, which I will but name ; *Then*, sayth he, *I gaue my selfe to Wine, to see if it were in that.* After this, I gaue my selfe to *great workes*, to make stately buildings, to shew my



my magnificence. After this, to get great store of *servants*, great possession of *Sheepe*, and *Bees*, & to get a great retinue, to liue in much pompe. After this, I thought all pleasing things; I made my selfe *Paradises*; that is, *Orchards*, and *Vineyards*, and *Gardens*. Likewise, I sought *Singing men and singing women*. All these things, sayth he, I sought for. And this is the verdict he giues vpon all this, this I found:

First, that in doing this, *I tooke hold of follie*, though my wisdome, in some measure, restrained me, yet I tooke hold of follie; That is the nature of these things, when a man is conversant with them, they depriue him of wisdome, they leade him on to follie; that is; they draw a man on to sensible and outward things, to corporall things, they abstract and with-draw his minde from *God*, and from wisdome, and from spirituall things; this I found, sayth he, that the more I had to doe with them, the more my wisdome forsooke me, the more I tooke hold of folly, the more it grew vpon me, the worse I was by meddling with them, and by being conversant with them.

Secondly; Sayth he, I found an emptinesse in all; I found them emptie Cisternes, I looked for contentment in them, but I found none.

Thirdly; not so onely, but I found a vexation of spirit, for that which is said of Riches, that they are *Thornes*, (they are such *Thornes* as doe not onely choake the good seede, but they pricke and gall vs) so it may be said of these, they haue  
Thornes

4  
Store of ser-  
vants.

5  
Paradises, i. e.  
pleasant Or-  
chards.

6  
Singing men,  
&c.

In all these he  
found:

1  
Folly.

2  
Emptinesse.

3  
Vexation.

Thornes in them, there is a vexation of Spirit in them.

4  
Restlesse care.

Fourthly, sayth he, I found they gaue me no rest neither day nor night; That is; All the while I was conuersant in them, I was full of care, and trouble, and thoughts; whereas those that are vacant from such things, are at rest, they haue rest in the night, and in the day, but I haue none; As if he should say, he will be occupied in all things of this nature, he shall finde a restlesnes in his soule.

5  
Sore travell.

Outward things yeeld vncertaine comforts, but certaine trouble.

Fiftly, saith he, I found that I had my labour for my travell; this *sore travell* I had, and that was all that I had. As if he should say; I found no comfort to answer it, I found no fruit from them, I found certaine labour, but vncertaine refreshments from them: This I found, that they cost me much trouble, and paines, but when I came to enjoy the fruit of them, to receiue comfort from them, then they fayled mee, then they deceived mee. Moreover, sayth he, I found no happinesse in them, no rest: for I was weary of my selfe, and of my life, and of all my labours, that I had wrought vnder the Sunne: for how could he finde that there, which was not there: for if *God* had ever sowne any happinesse in the Creature, he might haue reaped it from the creature, but in all these things it was never sowne: the Creature may giue as much as is in it, but to giue more is impossible. And therefore, saith he, I sought diligently, to see if there were such a thing there, but I found it not.

God hath not sowed comfort in the creature and therefore cannot reape it there.

Again;



Againe; Sayth he, moreover, when I had gotten all this, yet I found this, that I was not able to take comfort in it: for I saw that was the gift of God; That is; Further then he gaue me power to receiue any comfort from all the things that my hand had gotten, further I could not: for, sayth he, *Who hasted after outward things more then I?* The meaning is this, I indeuoured, to the vttermost of my power, to finde out contentment in the Creature, who could doe it more, with more diligence, who could hast after outward things more, and with more intention seeke for all the contentments that are to be found in the Creature then I? And yet, sayth he, I found it was not in me, but God dispenseth that according to his owne pleasure.

The last argument he hath against it, is, he must leaue all, I must leaue it.

But then comes an objection, I, but I shall leaue it to my Sonne?

True, sayth he, there is also a vanitie in this, for, sayth he, first, *I tooke paines in equitie, and in wisdome, and honestie, but I shall leaue it to him that hath not taken paines for all this.* As if hee should say, I shall leaue them the estate that I haue gotten by wisdome, but I cannot leaue them my wisdome to guide the estate when they haue it. This, sayth he, I found in my sonne for the present, this I see in *Rehoboam*.

But whereas it may be said, who knowes what he may be?

Sayth he, this is a misery, that I know not what

6  
No comfort.

The Creature cannot comfort without a power from God.

7  
we must leaue them.

Ob.

Answ.

A man cannot leaue his child grace to manage the state he leaues him.

Ob.

Answ.

The creatures  
abide on the  
Center where  
God hath set  
them.

Gods blef-  
sings carrie  
not long with  
evill men.

2  
We must giue  
the Creature  
its due.

he will proue; or, put case I could know what he would proue, who knowes what his sonne may proue? So that all this estate that I haue gotten, it shall not stay with them, it may be: for this is the nature of *Gods* blessings, (marke it) that they abide not but vpon that Center where *God* hath set them; if they come to a man that is wicked in his sight, they are vpon a Center, they are in a place where they will not rest, they will not abide; fire if it be out of its place, water, if it be out of its place, it is still wrastling, (though for a time it may be kept there) till it returne to its owne place; So it is with all those outward blessings; It is true, evill men they haue them, and perhaps their heires may haue them, but, if they be not right in *Gods* sight, these things will roule from them, they will not be at rest, as it were, they will not be established there, but they will goe to their proper Center. This he expresseth in the last Verse; *This is a vanitie* (sayth he) *that a man must gather, and heape vp, to giue vnto him that is good before God, this is also vanitie.* So that, if he had knowne what a one his Sonne would haue proved, yet he knew not what his other sonne would haue proved, and that all his estate should abide with him. Now, in all this, yet, sayth he, two things I haue observed. And, *Beloved*, what shall I say more? What can I say more than *Salomon* sayd in this poynt, to teach vs the vanitie, and the emptinesse of the Creature; yet we must not take from the creature more then we should, wee must giue its due to it, yet, sayth he, two things,



things haue I found, One is, that *wisedome is better then folly*; As if he should say; Looke vpon the whole Vniuerse, and see the varietie of the Creatures *under the Sunne*, both the Creatures and the workes of the Creatures, this I finde, that *wisedome is best of all*; though *wisedome be a vanitie*, though it be vaine, because it cannot helpe vs to true happines, it fals short there, yet, sayth he, it is the best thing vnder the Sunne, *as the light is better then darknesse*, and the sight better then blindnesse: for, sayth he, *wisedome teacheth a man to direct his way*, it guides a man, when another man knowes not how to goe to his journeyes end: *Wisedome teacheth a man how to avoyde mischiefe*, when a man that is in the darke, stumblcth vpon it, and cannot see it; That is the reason he giues. And yet, sayth he, there is a vanitie in it; sayth he, if you looke vpon the wisest man, and the most foolish, the same event befalls them, the same sicknesse, the same troubles, and vexation, the same death, *as dyes the one, so dyes the other*; That is; for the outward appearance of their condition there is no difference; Againe, there is a forgetfulnesse of both, both are swept away, both passe, and are blowne over, and they are even alike, the wise-man as well as the foole; But, sayth he, there is this difference, *Wisedome is the best of all vaine things vnder the Sunne*.

The second thing, that he hath found, is, that to enjoy them, to take the comfort, the profit, the benefit, and refreshment, that may be had

O 2

from

Two things  
Salomon ac-  
knowledgeth  
in the Crea-  
ture.

I  
That Wise-  
dome is bet-  
ter then follie.

It directs a  
mans way.

Both wise and  
foolish die.

2  
To take com-  
fort in Gods  
blessings, bet-  
ter then to  
heape vp still.

When we too  
much affect  
the Creature,  
we commit  
Idolatrie.

If we find lesse  
vanitie and  
more content  
in outward  
things then  
*Salomon*, we  
either

I  
Make Idols  
of them, or

from all the blessings of *God*, that he hath given vnder the Sunne, it is a better way, and there is lesse vanitie in it, then to heape vp still, and not to enjoy it. This I found, sayth he, that this is the best way for a man, to take the present benefit, this is the wisest way, so that this be remembered, that you enjoy them with weaned affections: that you doe not so enjoy them as to commit *Idolatrie* with them: for, if you doe so, indeede then there is a vanitie in them; for then the *Lord* lookes vpon you with a jealous eye, as that he will destroy both the things, and the man, as a jealous man will destroy the Adulterer and the Adulteresse. There is a vanitie in them then, but to enjoy them with weaned affections, this, sayth he, I found to be the wisest thing vnder the Sunne, rather then to heape vp, and increase possessions, and not to enjoy them. This is that which *Salomon* sayth. If a man say now; But I finde contentment and satisfaction, though *Salomon* found none, I finde I haue sweetnesse in enjoying pleasure, and mirth, and a high estate: Why, consider, if thou doe, I will say but this to thee, it is an argument, that thou committest *Idolatrie* with them, and therefore *God* hath made thee like to the very things themselues. You shall finde the *Psalmist* speaking of *Idols*, say; *They haue eyes and see not, they haue hands and handle not*; and hee addes this, *they that trust in them are like to them*. That is; This is the curse of *God* vpon those that worship *Idols*, the *Lord* giues them vp to as much stupiditye, as is in the *Idols*, that, they haue eyes and



and see not, that they haue eares and heare not. So, I say, when a man will so enjoy these things, that he can finde contentment in them, that hee can terminate his comfort in them; let him know this, that it is an argument that he is made like to them, that the curse of *God* is come vpon him.

Or else, it may be, because thou hast not summed vp thy accounts, thou hast not looked backe vpon them, as *Salomon* did, thou hast not yet run through the course of them, if thou hadst full experience of them, and of the end of them, as he had, thou wouldst finde them *vanitie, and vexation of spirit*. So much for the first, the emptines and vanitie of the Creature.

I say this, if *God* be *All-sufficient*, it should lead vs vnto a further knowledge of the Creature, and so likewise it should leade vs to a further knowledge of Almighty *God*: that is, to see a contrary fulnesse in him; I must runne briefly through this. Labour to see him in his greatnesse, labour to see him in all his Attributes, to see him in his vnchangeablenesse, to see him in his eternitie, in his power, in his providence. You shall see in *Psal.* 102. 24. what vse the *Psalmist* there makes of the Attributes of *God*: *I said O my God, take me not away in the midst of my dayes, thy yeares endure from generation to generation, thou hast before times laid the foundation of the Earth, and the Heavens are the worke of thy hand, they shall perish, but thou shalt endure, even they shall all waxe olde as a Garment*. The meaning is this, when a man hath proceeded to this, that he sees the vanitie of the

3  
Haue not full  
experience of  
them.

2  
*Deductions.*  
There is a ful-  
nesse in *God*.

*Psal.* 102. 24.

*Simile.*

Creatures, he lookes vpon them all, as they that will all weare and wax old as a Garment. A Garment that is new at the first, with long wearing, you know, will be spent, and will breake into holes, and at length be fit for nothing, but to be cast away. So, sayth he, shall the whole body of the Creatures be. Now, when we consider this, that it is a mans owne case, and every Creatures, let a man helpe himselfe with this, that *God* is eternall, and remaines for ever; and therefore, if a man can get to be ingrafted into him, to dwell with him, that will helpe him out of that weaknesse, and mutabilitie, and changeablenesse, that is in the Creature; and therefore in *Psal. 90.* saith he, *Lord thou art our habitation from generation to generation.* As if he should say; When a man dwels with *God*, he hath a safe house, a castle, that when generations come and goe, and times over our heads, when there is a change of all things, yet he is a *Rocke*, he is a *Castle*, he is a *Habitation*, there is no change in him. So that, when you find these defects in the Creature, goe home to him, and labour to see his immutabilitie, & eternitie. And so, likewise, when thou seest thy inabilityie to doe any thing, when thou seest that weakenes in the Creature, that it is not able to bring any enterprize to passe, then looke vpon his providence, & his almighty power, in that he doth all things that belong to him, in guiding the Creature.

My *Beloved*, the serious setting of our selues to consider the providence of *God*, and his almighty power, will discover to vs his *All-sufficiencie*  
more

*Psal. 90.*

*Gods All-sufficiencie proved by his providence.*



more then any thing besides. In brieft, consider this (to perswade you a little of the necessitie of it, that you may be fully convinced of it, that every particular, and every common thing must needs be guided by him, and directed by him; I would aske but this question) First, are not all made by him? You will grant that, that every Creature, even the smallest, are from him, there is no entitie but from him: Certainly, then there is an end of it: for he made nothing but for some end; and, if there be an end of it, he must guide it, and leade it to the end, otherwise, he should leaue the building imperfect, otherwise he should but begin a worke, and leaue it in the middle, otherwise the Creature should be lost, and perish, and that through a default of his. But there cannot be said to be any default, any want of goodnesse in him, in the great builder of things, and therefore it must needs be, that he guides every Creature vnder the Sunne, even the smallest of the Creatures, he guides and directs them to their ends. Providence is nothing else, but to guide, gouerne, and direct every Creature to their severall ends, and busineses, to which he hath appointed them.

Besides, how is it that you see things fitted one to another as they are? Is it not the providence of God? When you see the wheels of a Watch fitted one to another, when you see the sheath fitted to the sword, you say, this is done by some Art, this is not by accident. Even so it is in nature, you see a fitting of one thing to another, in the body, in

Gods providence proved,

I  
By the Creation.

Providence what.

2  
By the similitude of things one to another.

*Simile.*

the Creatures, in every thing, in all the senses, in the Sun with the ayre, in the eye with the light and the colours, with the transparent medium. The setting of one thing to another shewes that there is an Art that doth it, which is the providence of *God*.

3  
The constan-  
cie of things.

Besides, the constancy of things; we see, they goe their course. Those things that come by accident, that come by chance, and not by providence, they fall out vncertainely, now one way, and then another, but, we say, all the workes of nature goe in a certaine constant course.

4  
The necessitie  
of one gouv-  
ernour and dis-  
poser of  
things.

And, lastly; Looke but vpon a house, or a family; if there be not a providence, it will quickly be dissolved; there is not a Family, but it will be so; and therefore, there is a neede of government also in the great Family of the world: and if there be a government, it must needs be by him: for by man it cannot be governed: for the preservation of every thing is in the vnitie of it, and therefore, you see, any thing that is divided, that is the dissolution of it, as when the soule is divided from the body, and when the body is divided from it selfe; So, likewise, in a Family, or in a Common-wealth, when it is divided, looke how farre it goes from vnitie, so neere it comes to perishing, and the more peace and vnitie, the more safetie. Now if there were not one guider of all these, if there should be many guiders, there would be different streams, there would be divers well heads, and if there were divers principles of things, that should swerue this way, there would

Diuision  
breeds disso-  
lution.

*Note.*

be.



be a division in the nature of things, there would not be a vnitie, and by consequence, it would be the destruction of them. And therefore of necessity, first there must be a government, or els how could the family stand? and if there be a government, it must not be by man; and if it be not by man, it must be by one that is *God*.

Now the objections in briefe; wee see many things are casuall, and you may strengthen the objections out of *Eccles. 9. 11. I see (sayth he) that the race is not to the swift, nor the battle to the strong, nor yet riches to a man of understanding, but time and chance befalls every thing.*

To this, I answer, in a word, that it is true, there are chances that fall out in all these things, that we call properly casuall or accidentall, when something comes betweene a cause and the effect, and hinders it. As when a man is going a journey, and an Axe-head fall off, and either wounds him, or kils him, it comes betweene the effect and the cause, betweene his doing and that which he intended; if the fire be burning, and water cast vpon it, and hinders it, that is casuall, because it takes off the cause from its intention; So it is in this, wherein the *Wiseman* instanceth, when a man is strong, and some accident comes betweene, and hinders him from obtaining the battell; when a man hath wisdom, and some accident comes betweene, and hinders him from obtaining favour; This is that which we properly call chance. Now it is true, there is such a chance in the nature of the thing, but yet, consider

Ob.

Eccles. 9. 11.

Answ.

When a thing  
is said to be  
casuall.

The providence of God  
seene in casu-  
all things.

consider this, though this chance be contrary to the particular causes, yet it hath a cause, and it riseth from the vniverfall cause; so that it is called chance, because it thwarts, and comes betweene the intention of the particular cause, but it doth not differ from the intention of the vniverfall: for those accidentall things haue a cause, as well as the things that we intend haue a cause: somewhat there is that is the Author of all causes, that is the first of all causes, and therefore it is impossible that any thing should be totally by accident. And therefore, I say, whensoever you finde this, it is so farre from being casuall, if you looke into it exactly, that then the providence of *God* is most seene in it of all others. so far it is from comming by chance; because those things that are done by particular causes, according to their intention, we vsually ascribe it to them; but when there is an intercurrent action comes, that wee call chance, that belongs to the vniverfall cause, and is to be ascribed to him, and hence it is that the *Lord* vsually, in the dispensing and administering of contingent things, he turnes things rather by accidentall causes, by casuall things, then by those causes that haue influence into their effects; because his owne hand is most seene in it, he gets the greatest glory by it, when he turnes greatest matters by a small accident, as we turne a great Ship by a little Rudder, therein his power and his glory is seene. And therefore, I say, when you see such a vanity and emptinesse in the Creatures, labour to see the more fulnesse in *God*; if there

Providence  
most seene in  
things that we  
call chance.

Why *GOD*  
brings things  
to passe by ca-  
suall things.



there be such a mutabilitie, such an instabilitie in the Creature, looke vpon his immutabilitie, and his eternity, and labour to be partakers of it. When you see such an instabilitie in the creature to bring its enterprizes to passe, labour to see his almighty providence, and to be perswaded of it, to think with thy selfe there is not the least thing without this providence, there is not the least Creature that makes a motion, this way, or that way, but as it is guided and directed by him.

I would willingly adde one word concerning the tryall, now we haue sayd so much of the *All-sufficiencie* of God, and of the emptinesse of the Creature; All the question is now, how far we practice this. Let every man examine his owne heart, and aske himselfe these questions.

First, if a man beleue that *All-sufficiencie* that is in God, why doth he terminate his affections in the Creature? If there be nothing in the Creature, but emptinesse, why do you loue the Creature? why doe you feare the Creature? Why doe you rejoyce in the Creature immediately as you doe? *Beloued*, if there be nothing in the Creature, but all be in him, we should see through the creature, we should looke beyond it. It is that which is said of *Shisack*, 2 *Chron.* 12. he was but the *vi*all through which Gods wrath was powred vpon *Israel*; so it was true of *Cyrus*, he was but the *vi*all through which Gods goodnesse was powred vpon *Israel*. If you did looke vpon every man, vpon every friend, and every enemy, vpon every Creature, as an instrument of good or hurt to you,

Tryals of our  
beliefe of Gods  
*All-sufficiencie*.

I  
Whether wee  
terminate our  
affections in  
God, or the  
Creature.

2 Chron. 12.

you, as an emptie *vi*all in it selfe, through which *God* powres either his goodnes and mercy, or els his wrath, it would cause you not to sticke vpon the Creature, not to wrangle with men, not to hate men, or to be angry with them: for they are but the *vi*alls: It would cause you againe not to be proud of the friendship of men, not to be secure in them, not to trust in them, not to thinke your selues safe in them: for they are but *vi*alls, through which *God* powres his mercy, & goodnesse towards you.

Looking to  
God, will  
make vs quiet  
in injuries  
from men;

Consider whether you be able to doe this. Looke on *David*, when *Nabal* sent him a rough answer, an vntoward answer, he was exceedingly moved at it. When *Shemei* did the same, yea, and to his face, in a farre greater measure, he was not moved, what was the reason of it, but because when he looked to *Nabal*, he forgot *God*, he saw not *God* setting *Nabal* a-worke to giue such an answer, he looked not to *Nabal* as a *vi*all, but as if he had beene the principall in the action in hand? And therefore he was ready to fly vpō him with impatience (as you know how angry he was with him) but when *Shemei* did curse him, hee had reason, (he thought) to be quiet, and not in the other case: because he looked on *Shemei* as a *vi*all: *God* (sayth he) hath bid him doe it, and therefore he goes to *God*, and not to *Shemei*; If thou doe beleeuē this *All-sufficiency* in *God*, and this emptinesse in the Creature, why are you not able to doe this, not to loue the Creature, nor to terminate, I say, your affections in them,



them, but to use this world as though you used it not. That is; All things in the world, all the men in the world; for indeede you would use them, as if you did not use them, if you did see an emptinesse in them, and a fulnesse and an *All-sufficiencie* in God.

Secondly; if we doe beleue there is an *All-sufficiencie* in God, why doe we goe out from him, to take in present commodities, to avoyde present dangers? Why doe wee not serue him with the losse of all these? For if he be *All-sufficient*, it is no matter what thou loofest, thou hast enough, if thou hast him. You may see it in *Paul* (to resemble it to you, to shew you what I would haue sayd) sayth he, we serue the living God, we take much paines in our Ministry, wee suffer much, but haue nothing but imprisonment, nothing but fastings, and whippings, and stonings; and why doe we it? for we trust in the living God, and we thinke him to be *All-sufficient*: when he sayth, we trust in him, that is implied. I say, now looke to thy selfe, art thou able to serue him, without looking to present commoditie? Art thou able to doe as the *Disciples* did, when they were sent emptie, and yet were willing to do the worke, and were content to haue no wages given them, because they trusted in God, & thought he was sufficient? You see, our Saviour put them vpon it; it is true, they lacked nothing, but yet that was the tryall. *Moses*, when he might haue had present commoditie, he left all, he left the Court of *Pharaoh*, he left *Egypt*, and went emptie away,

2

If wee leaue him for present commoditie.

What makes  
Christians in-  
dure hardſhip  
in this world.

away, he did not turne aſide to theſe preſent Commodities, why? becauſe he thought the Lord was *All-ſufficient*. And ſo *Abraham*, he left his Fathers houſe, and came into a Land, where he had not a foot; becauſe he thought *God* was *All-ſufficient*; *God* ſpeakes to him, vpon that occaſion, *feare not Abraham*, thou art in a ſtrange Countrey, where thou haſt no body to provide for thee, yet *I will be All-ſufficient*. Thoſe that *wandered vp and downe in ſheepes-ſkinnes, and in Goats-ſkinnes*; no queſtion, they might haue had outward cōforts as well as others, if they would haue tooke that courſe that others did, but they were willing to leaue all preſent commodities: becauſe they truſted in *God*, that he was *All-ſufficient*. *They ſuffered* (ſaith the Apoſtle *Heb. 11.*) *the ſpoiling of their goods*, they loſt all, and wandered vp, and downe, and had nothing but *dens* to lye in, in ſtead of houſes, and *ſheepes-ſkinnes*, in ſtead of clothes. This they did, becauſe they thought him to be *All-ſufficient*. Conſider whether thou be able to doe this, to let goe preſent wages, preſent comforts, and commodities, and not to turne aſide to them: for, if *God* be *All-ſufficient*, what neede is there of them? If there be enough in him, why ſhould you ſtep out to them?

3  
Whether wee  
looke much  
to particular  
meanes.

Moreover, if *God* be *All-ſufficient*, why doe we ſtick ſo much vpon particular meanes, to ſay, if ſuch meanes be not vſed, I ſhall be vndone? if he be *All-ſufficient*, it is no matter what the meanes be, he is able to bring it to paſſe. It is vſu-  
all



all with men to say, if such a thing fayle me, I am vndone, & if such an evill be not removed. What are these but particulars? this sticking vpon particulars is a signe we thinke him not *All-sufficient*. *Isa. 50. 10.* See what an expression there is for matter of meanes, *He that walkes in darknesse, and sees no light, let him trust in the Lord God; he that walkes in darknesse, and hath no light, yet, if God be All-sufficient, put the case, there be no meanes at all, put the case, there be vtter emptinesse, that there be not a sparke of light, but that thou walkest in darknesse, and seest nothing to helpe thee, if he be All-sufficient, trust in him, let him that hath no light, but walks in darknesse, trust in the Lord: for he is then able to helpe him. Therefore, if we thinke him to be All-sufficient, when we loose any particular meanes, it is but the scattering of a beame, it is but the breaking of a Bucket, when the Sunne and the Fountaine is the same. Why should we be troubled at it? If we did thinke him to be All-sufficient, when one meanes is broken, cannot he finde out another, if he be All-sufficient? When he sayd to Paul, that all the soules with him should be safe, you see, there were divers meanes, all were not able to swim to the shore, and the ship was not able to bring them to shore, but yet, by broken boards, and by one meanes, and another, all got to the Shore; So the Lord brings things to passe in a strange manner, sometimes one way, sometimes another, hee breakes in peeces many times the Ship, that, we thinke, should bring vs to shore,*

but

*Isa. 50. 10.*

*Simile.*

GOD v<sup>th</sup>eth  
meanes that  
we thinke not  
of sometimes,

4

Whether wee  
see our selues  
vile.

Prov. 30.

A sight of Gods  
All-sufficiencie  
breeds cōtent  
in all GODS  
dealings.

but casts vs on such bords as we did not expect ; so he doth in the meanes both good and evill, somewhat comes in, and brings vs helpe that we never thought of. An enimie comes in and doth vs hurt, that we never dreamed of, and those, that we had our eye fixed vpon, it may be, doe neither of them.

And so likewise, if *God* be *All-sufficient*, if he be thus exceeding great, consider, if thou see thine owne vilenesse, thy ignorance, thy emptinesse, in comparison of him. When *Agur* looked vpon *God*, and saw his greatnesse. *Pro. 30.* he cryes out, that *he had not the vnderstanding of a man in him*. When *Iob* saw him in his greatnes, *he abhorred himselfe in dust and ashes*, he had spoken once and twice, but he would speake no more. And so *Abraham*, when *God* appeared to him, sayd, *I am but dust and ashes* : whether art thou able to say thus when thou lookest vpō *God* in his greatnes? First, art thou able to say, *I haue not the vnderstanding of a man in me* ; That is ; Canst thou see the emptinesse, and vanitie of thy owne knowledge? Canst thou learne, not to murmur against *God*, in any of his wayes? Canst thou learne to captiuatē, and bring vnder thy thoughts to the wayes of *Gods* providence? Canst thou doe, as *Iob* did, saying, *I haue heretofore taken exceptions, and murmured, and was discontented, and wondered at the wayes of God, and the works of his hands, I haue done this once, or twice, but now I will doe so no more*? *Iob* knew *God* as well as we know him, but when *God* spake out of the  
whirle-



*whirle-winde*, and made knowne his greatnesse to him, this was the fruit of it to *Iob*, though he had spoken once or twice, that is, before that time, yet now he would doe it no more. Canst thou be content to see the *Lord* going all the wayes that he doth, setting vp evil men, and putting downe good men, causing the Churches to wither, and the enemies to prosper? Canst thou see all this, and yet *sanctifie him in thine heart*? Art thou able to say, that *he is holy in all his wayes*, and in this to see the greatnesse of *God*, and thy owne folly and weaknesse? Canst thou say, that *thou art but dust and ashes*, and to say it in good earnest? Canst thou looke on thy selfe as on a vile Creature, as *Peter* did, saying, *Goe from me: for I am a sinfull man*? Then I will beleue, that thou hast seene *God* in his greatnes, I will beleue that thou hast seene him in his *All-sufficiencie*, that he hath presented himselfe by his spirit vnto thy soule, in some measure, when thou seest these effects in thy soule, when thou seest thy ignorance, and thy vilenes, when thou seest what an emptie Creature thou art, sure this is another thing, by which thou mayst judge, whether thou hast experience, whether thou hast practised this doctrine, that we haue delivered of the *All-sufficiencie of God*, and of the emptinesse of the Creature.

Moreover, if *God* be *All-sufficient*, why are we then so readie to knocke at other mens dores? Why are wee then so readie to goe to the Creature, to seeke helpe, and comfort, and counsell

P

from

Note.

5  
Whether we  
oft seeke to  
him?

from it, and to knocke so little at his doore by prayer, and seeking to him? for, if thou beleevest him to be *All-sufficient*, thou wouldest be abundant in prayer, thou wouldest take a little time to looke to others, thy chiefe busines would be to looke to him, not onely in praying to him, but in serving him, and pleasing him: We knocke at his dore as wel by the duties of obediēce, as by prayer, and seeking to him; if thou thinkest him to be *All-sufficient*, why doest thou not doe this?

6  
Whether we  
be content  
with Gods  
provision for  
vs?

*Simile.*

Againe, if thou thinke him to be *All-sufficient*, why art thou not content to be at his immediate finding? Put the case he deprive thee of all things else, and doe with thee, as parents doe with their Children, who giue them not a penny in their purse, but tell them they will provide for them, why art thou not content that *God* should doe so? What if he strip thee of all thy wealth, of thy liberty, of thy friends, so that thou canst looke for nothing but immediately at his hands, to feede thee as he feeds the *Ravens*, and the *Lions*, if he be *All-sufficient*, why dost thou not trust in him, in such a case, and rest vpon him?

7  
Whether we  
looke to e-  
vents in do-  
ing our du-  
tie?

Againe; lastly, if thou thinkest *God* to be *All-sufficient*, when thou hast any service, or dutie to doe, either belonging to *God*, or man, why dost thou not resolue vpon the doing of it without looking to the consequent whatsoeuer it be? For if he be *All-sufficient*, then all our care should be to doe our dutie, and to leaue the successe to him.



A servant that thinkes his Master is able, and willing to giue him wages, and provide for him sufficiently at the end of the day, or the yeare, or at the end of his service, he will be carefull to doe his worke, without looking to his wages, without making provision for himselfe, and so, if thou belecue *God* to be *All-sufficient*, thou wilt seeke no more but to finde out what thy dutie is, what rule thou oughtest to walk by, what service thou owest to man in such a case, how to keepe a good conscience in such a businesse, in such a straight, in such a difficultie, thou wilt set thy wits a-worke to finde out this; but when thy wit is over-running thy dutie, and thou lookest to the consequence (if I doe this and this, this will befall me) that is a signe thou thinkest not *God* to be *All-sufficient*, thou thinkest thy Master cannot provide for thee, but thou thinkest I shall be poore, when I haue done his service, and therefore I will provide for my selfe, I shall want comforts, I shall haue enemies come in vpon me; if thy Master be a *Sunne*, a *Shield*, and a *Buckler*, and an *exceeding great reward*, and thou beleevest him to be so, thou wouldest finde out onely thy dutie, and it is no matter what the consequence is; So you see the three men did, *wee haue resolved that wee will not worship thine Image*, and whereas you threaten to cast vs into a burning fiery Fornace, that we care not for, *God is able to deliver vs*, they did see *Gods All-sufficiencie*, and therefore they did the dutie. Certainly, *Beloved*, in any difficult case, no man will doe his du-

*Instances.*

I  
The three  
Children.

No man can performe a dutie that is difficult, without beleeving Gods *All sufficiencie*.

*Daniell.*

tie, except he be perswaded that *God is All-sufficient*; Those three men would never haue refused to worship the Idoll, except they could haue said, and thought in their hearts, *God is able to deliver vs out of thy hands, O King*. This they sayd, and resolved to doe.

And so *Daniell* resolved to doe his dutie, and not to goe a steppe out of the path, besides the Rule, Well; he shall be cast into the *Lyons denne*; yet he keeps his resolution firme; it was enough for him to doe his dutie, for the consequence of it, he left it to *God*: for he knew he was *All-sufficient*. You see, *God* watched over them, and delivered them all. And so likewise, in refusing to eat of the *Kings* meate, *Daniell* would not pollute himselfe, it was not lawfull for him being a *lew*, it might haue cost him his life, for ought he knew, if he had looked on the consequence, but he resolved to doe it. Sayth the Text, *he resolved in his heart to doe it*, and committed it to *God*. And we see in all these cases, *God* shewed himselfe sufficient. So he doth, when wee looke to our dutie sincerely, & faithfully, when we doe it, and looke not to the consequence, he is then *All-sufficient*, and will shew himselfe to be so. And the like we see in the case of *Mordecai*, he thought it was a sinne to bow to *Haman*, who was an *Amalekite*, he would not doe it; Well; but they shall all be destroyed, he, and all the *Jewes*; I but *God* was able to deliver them. And so he tels *Hester* confidently, the Church should be delivered, but he knew not how, but, sayth he, if it be not by thy hands.

*Mordecai.*

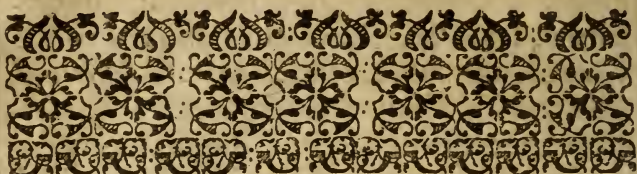


hands, thou shalt fare the worse for it, but certainly, sayth he, *deliverance shall come to the Church, one way, or other, God is All-sufficient*; Herevpon she resolveth, saying in effect whatsoever be the consequence, I will doe it, it is my dutie. And you know, *God shewed himselfe All-sufficient* in delivering her, and him, and all the people of the *Iewes*: So, I say, if thou wouldest finde out whether thy heart belceue all this, that is delivered, whether thou doe practise it or no: Consider, if thou canst doe this or no: Consider what thy duty is vpon every occasion, and never looke to the consequence, either to the losse of preferments, of riches, or favour: for *God is All-sufficient*, he can bring it in. Be it againe, on the other side, such crosses, and losses are like to follow vpon it, yet he is *All-sufficient*, so that thou dost it more or lesse according to thy opinion of his *All-sufficiencie*.

So much for this time.

F I N I S.

P 3 THE



THE  
SIXTH  
SERMON.

GENESIS 17. 1.

*Walke before me, & be thou perfect.*



WE haue already finished the first part of these words, *God is All-sufficient.*

Which words containe the Covenant on *Gods* part, *I will be All-sufficient*, which here is expressed in the generall, but in other places more particularly, as I shewed you then when we handled the words.

The other part of the words containe the *Covenant*, or condition required on our part; *Walke before me, and be thou perfect.* *God will be All-sufficient vnto vs*, that is his promise, and he requires of vs, that we should be *perfect* with him, he will be *All-sufficient* to them that depend vpon him,

he



he will be wholly theirs that will be wholly his.

So the maine poynt that we haue to handle, is that which *God* requires on our parts, without which we haue no interest in his *Covenant*, namely, that we be *sincere & perfect*, but before I come to handle this poynt which is the maine, I will touch an obseruation or two by the way.

And first from the Connexion, *I am God All-sufficient; therefore walke before me, and be thou perfect*, (I will but touch it, because I handled the negatiue part of it at large.) This we may obserue, that

*Every man is more or lesse perfect, as he is more or lesse perswaded of Gods All-sufficiencie.*

You see, that is made the ground of our *perfect walking with God*, that we beleue him to be *All-sufficient*, and therefore, I say, as our perswasion of that is more or lesse, so every man more or less is *perfect with God*; That is; Looke how a mans faith in *Gods* promises; and in his providence, is more or lesse, looke how he hath found, by his experience, *God* to be more sufficient to him, or lesse, so is every mans *walking with God* more or lesse *perfect*.

The reason of which is, partly, because it is *Gods* argument: when *God* vseth any argument, looke how far that takes place in the heart; looke how farre the vnderstanding is convinced of it, so farre it preuailes also with the will and affecti-

*Doct.*

Men are more or lesse perfect as they are perswaded of *Gods All-sufficiencie*.

*Reas. I.*

It is *Gods* argument to perswade to perfectnesse.

ons, and so farre it prevailes in the practise, and conversation of a mans life: Now when *God* maketh this the ground of our *perfectnesse*, so farre, I say, as a man is convinced of it, so farre as he is perswaded of it, so farre it will produce this effect, to make him *perfect*, and *sincere* in his *walking* with *God*.

*Reas. 2.*  
This perswasion heales selfe loue.

Againe, partly, the reason of it, is, because it heales that which is the cause of all our vnperfectnesse, and vnevennesse, which is selfe-loue. The reason why men walke not constantly, and perfectly with *God*, is because they loue themselves inordinately, they thinke to provide better for themselves: when a man is fully perswaded of *Gods All-sufficiencie*, it answers all those false reasonings, all those deceitfull arguments that selfe-loue is ready to bring to vs, vpon every occasion; there is no man departs from *God*, but he thinks, at that time, it is better for him so to doe: when it shall be answered him, *God is All-sufficient*, it is better for thee to keepe in the strait way, if thou seeke thy selfe by disobeying of him; it shall be worse for thee; when all the false reasonings of selfe-loue are answered, the heart must needs be *perfect*.

*Vse.*  
To labour for this perswasion.

The Use of it in brieue is, that we should labour to be perswaded of this truth, and apply it, and make use of it; vpon every occasion: when any command is presented vnto vs, when any thing is to be done, run to this principle, to be perswaded of *Gods All-sufficiencie*, that shall helpe thee to doe every dutie; that shall preferue thee from every



every sinne: for example, *God* hath commanded vs to *deny our selves* in our profit, in our credit, and our pleasures: and many times it comes that we are to performe this dutie in particular cases, cōsider seriously then of the strength of this principle that *God is All-sufficient*; it will make thee able to doe the dutie throughly. What though thou be a looser in thy credit? If *God* be *All-sufficient*, he is able to make it vp. What though thou be a looser in thy profit as *Amaziah* was? Is not he able to giue thee fourescore talents, sayth the Prophet to him? What though thou be a looser in thy pleasures, that thou loose or want *the pleasures of sinne for a season*? Is not he able to make it vp with *peace of conscience, & joy in the holy Ghost*? And so againe; Wee are commanded to *take vp our daily crosse*, & not to take base & sinfull courses to avoid crosses, and troubles, and afflictions, when wee meete with them in right and straight wayes, and surely, the way to performe this dutie, is to be perswaded of *Gods All-sufficiency*, let a man thinke that *God* is able to defend and carrie him thorow, that he is able to keepe him in the time of those sufferings, that it is he that keeps the keyes of the prison doore, that opens and shuts, when he pleaseth, it is he that makes whole, and makes sicke, *the issues of life and death, belong to him: Every mans judgement, though he seeke the face of the Ruler, yet it is from him*: let men consider, that it is not the Creature that inflicts any crosse, or affliction, or punishment vpon vs, but it is he that doth it by the Creature, and that will  
 inable

Note.

inable a man to beare any crosse, to passe through all varietie of conditions, and not to divert from a straight way, but to goe through the storme when he meets with it.

And so we may say of every other dutie, to exercise the duties of our particular callings, not for our owne good, but for the good of others: *Beloved*, this is a speciall thing men loose their liues, they loose that blessed opportunitie they haue to grow *rich in good Workes*, that whereas every day they might adde much to their treasure, to their reckoning against the day of Iudgement, whilest they serue themselues, and seeke themselues altogether, it is but time lost. Now, I say, what is the reason that men in the exercise of their callings, haue such an eye to their own profit, & not to the profit of others, whom they deale with, that they haue such an eye to their owne credit, and advantage, and not to others good? It is because they thinke they must be carefull to provide for their own estate, to looke to themselues, they haue no body else to doe it: Now let a man be perswaded that *God* takes care for him, that riches are as the shadow that follows the substance of a mans *perfect walking with God*, that it is *God* that giues the, it is he that dispenseth them, it is he that giues the reward, the wages belongs to him, the care of the worke onely belongs to vs; If a man would *deny himselfe*, & be a looser many times in his calling, and be content to doe many things for the profit of others, to vse those talents that *God* hath giuen him, not for his owne, but for his Masters advantage;

Why men  
seeke them-  
selues over-  
much in their  
callings.

Note.



advantage ; I say, if he would doe this, he should finde *God All-sufficient*, and the perswasion of his *All-sufficiencie* is that that strengthens a man, and makes him constant in the performance of it. This you may take for a sure rule, there is no one dutie that shall cost a man any perill, that shall cost him any labour, any losse that a man will be willing to doe, without the perswasion of *Gods All-sufficiencie*, he never doth it without this perswasion, he never fayles in it, but as farre as he fayles in the beliefe of this. For example.

*Note.*

*Abraham* when he was put on the hardest taske, to leaue his *Country*, and his *Fathers house*, hee was perswaded that *God* would be with him, and would blesse him : for *God* had made him a promise to doe it, it was easie then to performe it, but afterwards, when he began to shrinke, and to doubt of this, that *God* might fayle him, that he would not be *God All-sufficient* to him, as when he went downe into *Egypt*, he denied *Sarah* to be his wife, what was the cause of this sinne ? Bur because he was afraid that *God* could not defend him. And so *David*, how many hard taskes went he through, with all chearefulnesse, and constancie : but when he began to fayle of this perswasion, that *God* was able to deliver him from *Saul*, and to bring him into the Kingdome, then he begins to steppe out from that dutie, and way of obedience, that he should haue walked in, to flie to *Achis*, &c. Therefore the way, I say, to make our hearts perfect with *God*, is to increase

*Instance.*

The Sacrament sealeth both parts of the Covenant.

What God offers vs in the Sacrament.

increase this perswasion of *Gods All-sufficiencie*. Now this we should do especially at these times, when we are to receiue the Sacrament: for what is the Sacrament, but the seale of the *Covenant*, on both parts? It is the seale to the *Covenant*, on *Gods* part, hee promiseth to be *All-sufficient*, and the Sacrament seales this to you; when it is sayd to you, *take, and eat, this is my body*, the meaning is this, *Iesus Christ* giues himselfe, and *God* the Father giues him, and sayth, take him; That is; Take *Christ*, with all his: It is certaine, he is a Husband, that is *All-sufficient*, he is a field that is full of treasure, & so you must thinke with your selues, when you come to receiue the Sacrament, that *Iesus Christ* himselfe is given to you; That is, *Iesus Christ* with all his riches, and treasure, with all his benefits and priuiledges. Now, when you haue taken *Christ*, (as it is a free gift) then consider all those particular benefits, labour to dig that field, and to see all the varietie of treasures in it, you shall find that there is nothing that you can desire, but you shall finde it in him, you shall finde an *All-sufficiencie* in him, both for this life, and the life to come.

Againe; As this is the *Covenant*, on *Gods* part, that is sealed to vs in the Sacrament; so you must remember that you put to your seale likewise, to confirme the *Condition* of the *Covenant*, on your part: for so haue you promised, there is a stipulation, an engagement; remember that you keepe *Covenant*, and *Condition* with him, (for it is reciprocall:) for all *Covenants* must be mutuall,



mutuall, they must be betweene two parties, and remember, that *thou put thy seale to it*, that thou renew with *God* the Covenant, that thou hast made to walke before him perfectly. Now, the end of the Sacrament, is to remember this, *Doe this*, sayth *Christ*, in remembrance of me; As if he should say, you will be ever and anon readie to forget this Covenant.

Another point, that I desire to obserue, before I come to handle the maine, is from these words, *Walke before me &c.* It is a Metaphor I finde very frequently vsed in Scripture, and therefore wee will not passe it over, *walke before mee, and be thou perfect.* Whence we will therefore obserue, that

*There is a great similitude betweene a Christians life, and walking from place to place.*

I find not any metaphor in the Scriptures vsed more frequently, and therefore it should teach vs some thing: for a metaphor, you know, is but a similitude that is contracted to one word, it is but a short similitude, folded vp in a word, and somewhat is to be taught vs, some resemblance there is that we will labour to expresse, and make some short vse of it.

Whenthe *Lord* sayth to *Abraham*, *I am All-sufficient*; therefore *walke perfectly before me*, it is as if he had sayd, *Abraham*, I meane to be a good Master to thee, I meane to giue thee sufficient, wages, thou shalt want nothing thou needest; now be thou carefull to doe thy worke, be not idle,

*Doct.*  
A Christians  
life like a  
walke.

What meant  
by walking.

Particular ac-  
tions, are so  
many steps in  
our journey.

dle, sit not still, but be working ( for that is inti-  
mated by *walking* ) to *walke* is still to be acting in  
some thing, still to be working, to be in employ-  
ment, and not sit still, so that this is intimated to  
vs, when he sayth, *walke before me*, that the whole  
course of this life is like a journey from one place  
to another. And againe every particular action,  
is like so many steps taken to that journeyes end,  
and ( marke it, I say, ) looke what the rounds are  
in a Ladder, that goe from the bottom to the top,  
looke what the paces in a journey are, so many  
paces goe to make vp the journey, so doth every  
particular act goe to make vp y<sup>e</sup> Christian course  
that every man is to fulfill: so then, as every step  
a man takes, tends to some scope, or other, either  
East, or West, or North, or South, in generall and  
in particular. to some particular place, neare some  
Citie, some Towne, or some Roome, so every  
action in a mans life, it either tends in generall to  
East, or West; that is, to good or evill, it tends to  
the service of *God*, or to the service of *Sathan*, and  
likewise, in particular, it tends either to this good  
dutie, or to avoyd this particular sinne, to this or  
that particular service of *God*, of *Sathan*, or of our  
selues.

So that not onely the greater actions (marke it)  
but even the lesser, every one of them, it is like a  
pace in a journey, which that I may make plaine  
to you, you must know, that all the actiōs we do  
either be actions that belong to our generall, or  
to our particular calling, or such as fit vs to them.  
Now take the lowest and the meanest action,  
your



your eating and drinking, your sleepe & recreation, they are all steps that tend to this Iourney, that tend to this scope, every one of them is a step nearer to *God*, and to heaven, if they be rightly vsed; and from him, if they be not vsed as they ought; *Whether you eate or drinke, or what soeuer you doe, doe it to the glory of God.* What ever you doe, marke that supream scope, so that all actions tend to one or other of these; now you need make no question, but even those common actions are steps that lead to the journey; even as you see, a servant that is set to worke, or to goe a Iourney: that is to mowe, or to driue a Cart, even the whetting of the sithe, is a part of his worke, as well as the mowing of the grasse; the provendring of his horse, is a dispatching of his Iourney, a going on in it, as well as when he rides, and so the oyling of the wheele, is a drawing on, as well as every step he takes: So, I say, it is in these common actions, that we make lesse account of, our sleeping, our eating, our drinking, our recreation, every one of them, is a steppe in the Iourney. I speake it for this end, that wee may not neglect any action, that wee may not despise the least of our actions: for there is not one of them, but it is a pace, or a steppe: so that this you must make account of; every day you finish a great part of your space: for you do many actions. Now looke what actions you doe, see what they be, examine them at night; for every action is a step, and either you step towards *God* in it, or you step frō him; either you step towards heaven, or towards hell: there-  
fore

Actions that  
fit vs to our  
callings, are  
steps in our  
Iourney.

*Simile.*

The meanest  
action, not to  
be neglected.

fore looke to every action. But this is in generall.  
 Now in particular (to bring this similitude a little nearer) you must consider in a *walke* from one place to another, when you go in a Journey, you haue these particulars.

Five things  
 in a walke or  
 Journey.

First, There must be a place, a terme to which you walke, some whither, whither a man goes.

Againe; There must be a place, or terme from which a man comes.

Againe; There is a distance: for in a point, or a little space a man cannot walke.

Againe; There must be a ground to walke vpon.

And there must be a path: for in particular Journeys, as from *Thebes* to *Athens*, there is a straight path-way to walke to it, &c. These particulars we will expresse to you in this course of a Christian life.

I  
 That which a  
 man goes to.

I  
 Grace.

2  
 Gods glory.

3  
 Salvation.

First; I say, there must be a place to which a man goes, *terminus ad quem*, as we call it, and that is to grace, we trauaile to grace, we trauaile to the service, and glory of *God*, and we trauaile to *saluation*, these I finde in the Scripture to be the ends, and the aymes, and the scope, and mark, at which every man is to look in his journey, in the course of his life. Labour to *grow* in *grace*, which enableth vs to serue *God*, without which we can doe nothing: Labour also, when you haue it, to come to the fruits, and operations, and effects of it; that is, to spend your time in doing some thing that may tend to *Gods* glory, and service. And last of all, looke at the reward, looke at *saluation*, which



which is the end of that Journey, there is no question of the two former, that the end is *grace*, and *righteousnes*, there is more question of the latter, whether a man may make salvation, and the recompence of reward, an end, a marke, and scope, to which he travailes: but all these are our ends you shall see *Act. 26. 18.* *Paul* is sent to preach to the people; and this is the scope of his preaching, he was sent to *open their eyes, that they might turne from darknesse to light, from the power of Sathan to God, that they might receive the forgiuenes of sinnes, and inheritance among them that are sanctified by faith in Christ.* Marke it, that they may turne from darknes to light, there you see the scope is *light*; because without *light*, a man cannot see his way, *Grace* helps a man in his Journey, as *light* doth: the next thing is, *from the power of Sathan unto God*; That is, from living in bondage to *Sathan*, to serue *God*. to do that which stands with his glorie, and advancement, and then lastly: *that they may receive forgiuenes, & inheritance amongst them that are sanctified by faith in mee*; there is the reward: for a mans ayme is likewise that he might receive the inheritance, that he might be saved, and haue heaven in the end. So likewise you find it expressed *Philip. 3. 14.* *Paul*, sayth he, *pressed hard toward the marke*, for what purpose? for the *price of the high calling of God in Christ*, there you see that the ayme that *Paul* had in following hard to the marke, was a marke that he aymed at, and that he had expressed before *to bee found in the righteousnesse that is in Christ*, and, sayth he, that

Act. 26. 18.

Phil. 3. 14.

Heb. 11.

*I might obtaine the price of the high calling, the price (that is) the wages; as a man that runnes a race, there is a price propounded to him, and when he hath finished the race, he obtaines it, sayth he, this is one of my ends to obtaine the price: so it is said of Moses, Heb. 11. he had respect to the recompence of reward. So, my Beloved, in this journey you must make this account, you travaile towards grace, that is the scope that you ayme at; againe, your end is to serue God, to seeke his glory, that all your actions may tend to it, and lastly, that you might be saved. that you might haue the inheritance with the Saints.*

2  
That he goes  
from.

1  
Sinne.

2  
Sathans ser-  
vice.

3  
Damnation.  
The pathes  
of sin many,  
the journeyes  
and one.

*Simile.*

Now the terme from which we travaile is from sinne, from the service of *Sathan*, and our selues, and likewise it is from damnation; so that you shal finde this difference in it, that all men, though they haue but one Iourneys end, yet there are different places, from which every of them travaile; according to the different sinnes, to which they are inclined, some men had need to travaile from covetousnes, some men againe, from prodigalitic, these seeme to goe contrary wayes, yet both ayme at the same journeyes end, as two men that intend to come to *London*, one comes out of *Kent*, another comes out of the *North*, these men seeme to goe contrary, one goes *North*, and the other *South*, yet both agree in their Iourneys end, so it is in this travaile, some men are subject to be timorous, and discouraged, and cowardly in their actions, some men againe to be rash, and bold, these men haue contrary courses, yet they both  
travaile



travaile to the same mediocrity, to the same *grace*, to the same way of righteousnesse: so, I say, the termes from which we come are exceeding different, though the Journeys end be the same to every man. Looke what the severall inclinations of men are, even therein to part from himselfe, to *deny himselfe*, to resist his personal, and particular lusts, that is the terme, from which he is to goe; and so likewise it is to be considered, that we travaile from damnation, that every steppe that a man takes in the way of righteousnesse, it is so many steps *from death to life*, he is so much nearer his Journeys end: for *salvation is now neerer then when you beleeved*, sayth the Apostle; that is, looke as you travaile faster in the way of righteousnesse, so your reward is neerer, your comfort is neerer, and so you are farther from judgement, farther from destruction.

Now, on the other side, it is to be considered, that as this is the ayme of the godly man, to look to grace, and at the service of *God*, and at salvation, that is the way that they travaile; So there is another way that other men travaile, that looke at sinne, at destruction. I doe but set one by another, that you may learne to know the difference: there is a scopethat every man hath, whatsoever a man doth, though he consider it not, yet he takes every steppe by vertue of that utmost end that he hath. There is a generation of men that ayme at destruction, that ayme at sinne, at those *wayes that lead downe to the Chambers of death*.

And if you object, and say, I but no man propounds

*Answ.*  
Hell is the end  
of the course  
of wicked mē,  
though they  
ayme not at it  
in their inten-  
tion.

*Note.*

<sup>3</sup>  
The distance  
in it.

The dissimili-  
tude betweene  
God and vs.

pounds such an end to himselfe, there is no man intends the destruction of himselfe.

I answer; It is true, it is not the end of the man, but it is the end of the course, as we say, it is not *finis operantis*, but it is *finis operis*; as a theefe, that steales; his end is not that he should come to the gallowes, but his end is to get profit to himselfe, but yet it is the scope of the worke, though not of the workman; so I say in this case, a man that hath not his ayme to serue *God*, to walke toward him, though he obserue it not, his ayme is destruction, that is the end of his worke, that way he walkes in, *leads downe to the chambers of death*. So you see; First, there is an end, a terme to which every man goes; And, secondly, there is a terme from which every man comes.

Thirdly; in every Iourney there is a distance; That is; that dissimilitude betweene *grace*, & vs, and betweene *God*, and vs. Looke what distance, and difference there is betweene *grace*, and sinne; betweene righteousnesse and wickednesse, that is the space that every man is to goe, that is the distance that he is to passe through; so that even as in a Iourney you cast some part of the way behind you, and another part you are to passe vnto; so you are to thinke in this Iourney: Looke how much victory thou gettest over any sin, so much of thy way thou hast passed. Againe; Looke in what measure any sinne remains vnmortified, any lust is not fully overcome, so much of thy way thou art yet to goe: so likewise, it is in the defect of graces, that is the distance that thou hast



to fulfill. So in every mans particular calling, that course that *God* hath fixed to every man, that he hath prescribed to every particular man (to some longer, to some shorter,) this is the distance of a mans journey. *John Baptist* had a shorter course, he fulfilled his course, he preached not about three or foure yeares. *Paul* fulfilled his course likewise, a longer race, but it was that which *God* had appointed him; so the dissimilitude betweene grace and sinne; and againe, the course that *God* hath appointed every man to fulfill, & *serue God in his time*, this is the distance and the space of this Journey.

Again; the next to this is the ground: for a man must haue something to hold him vp, when he walkes, the ground vpon which he walkes, is the time of this life in this world, the latitude of this life, that *God* hath afforded to every man, that is the field, as it were, that he walkes in: we see in the world great varietie of men, and varietie of courses, that is the ground, the space allotted to him, he may walke whither he will, he may walk which way he pleaseth.

But lastly, as there must be a terme to which, another from, which, as there must be a distance, and a ground, so chiefly he that walkes must haue a certaine path, a certaine way to walke in. In a wildernes. there is ground enough, but there is no path, but when you goe to a certaine place, there must be alwayes a certaine way, a certaine highway, a path that leades to it: now the path that we haue to walke in, you haue it diversly expres-

2

The course that *God* appointed vs to fulfill,

4

The ground is the time of this life,

5

The path.

1  
Christ.

2  
The spirit.

3  
Gods Com-  
mandements.

Christ the  
way how?

The spirit the  
way how?

Note.

fed in the Scriptures: *Christ* is said to be the way, we are said to *walke in the spirit*, if you be led by the *spirit*, *walke in the spirit*, and the way of Gods *Commandements*; I will runne the way of thy *Commandements*, sayth *David*, when thou shalt inlarge my heart: and of *Zachary*, and *Elizabeth*, it is said they walked in the way of Gods *Commandements* without reproofe. These are sayd to be the wayes, or the paths that wee walke in, they all come to one: *Christ* is said to be the way: because as a man cannot come to a place, except he go in the way that leads to it, so no man can come to *God* the Father without *Christ*; that is; without his intercession, without his guidance, and direction, except he lead you to the Father, that you come as sprinkled with his bloud, as clothed with his righteoufnesse, except you come as being made accepted by his intercession, you cannot be accepted, and besides, except you go the way that he directs you: for he is the Day-starre, *(springing from on high)*, that *guides our feete in the way of peace*, without him you cannot come to heaven, you cannot come to the *throne of grace*: so he is said to be the way. *Againe*, the spirit is said to be the way, *walke in the spirit*; That is; walke according to the guidance of the spirit, follow the direction of the spirit; and so the way of Gods *Commandements*, they are sayd to be the way; because they are the rules we ought to walke by: So that the way is, when, in the name of *Christ*, when, out of respect to him, we walke by the direction of the spirit, in the wayes of Gods *Commandements*,  
when



when we obserue this rule. This is the way, this is the path.

Now, if you aske, how one should finde this way?

You must know, that though this be the way in generall, yet, in particular, that which must teach it thee, is to consider, first, there is a certaine tract that *God* hath made for vs to walke in, a certain path that he hath chalked out, that which he hath described in his Word, that which all the Saints haue trodden before vs, both those that liued in former times, whose examples are related to vs, and those that liue among vs; First, there is a tract that *God* himself hath made, the way of his judgements are *sine uestigijs*, &c. but the way of his Commandements are as a beaten tract, as a beaten roade; A way that himselfe hath made plaine; by many directions, by many way-markes that he hath set, that men might know them, and likewise by the course of all the Saints, which is like a beaten way that is trodden by many thousands, from generation to generation, this is one thing that you are to look to, see, if you be in that way, in the old way, in the way that the Law leads to, in the way that all the Saints haue gone in.

Now further if the question be, well; but how shall I keepe it? I may be ready to misse this tract.

I answer; there is a certaine sagacitie that *God* giues to a man, by which he findes out this way: for though the way be plaine in it selfe, yet, it is not so to every man, it is hard to finde out this particular way. These steppes of *Gods*

*Quest.*

*Answ.*

How to finde the path in this journey.

1

By the Word.

2

By the example of the Saints.

*Quest.*

*Answ.*

The Saints  
haue a secret  
gift to find  
out Gods.  
wayes.

*Simile.*

Commandements, I say, it is hard to finde them out, except there be a particular gift given him, even as you see, there is a gift given to the Dogge to finde out the Hare, to follow her steppes, there is a certaine sagacitie given to that Creature, that another wants, by which it follows the steps of the Hare, which way soeuer she goes: (I may vse it for a similitude, a farre off expression) So, I say, there is a sagacitie given to the Saints, a certaine new qualitie, that others want, by which they are able to finde out the steppes of Gods way; so that they are able to tract him: When they are at a losse, they will not run on vpon a false sent, but cast about, (as sometimes they loose God, sometimes they know not which way they must follow him.) This gift wee must labour to haue. Therefore *David* prayes so oft that *God* would teach him these wayes, that he would *make his way plaine before him*, that he would direct him, &c. As acknowledging that he was not able of himselfe, to finde it out, except *God* had guided him, and directed him to it.

One thing more is to be added, there is this similitude in this metaphor, that as, when a man goes a journey, it is a constant continued pace, it is not a little stepping to & fro, and walking for recreation, a walking as a man doth in a Gallery, but it is a constant course, he walkes on; So likewise

*The course of a Christian life, it is a constant continued terme of action.*

When a man doth not good by a fit or two, but when he continues in well doing, when it is the ordinary constant tract of his life. Now

*Doct. 2.*  
A Christian  
life is a con-  
stant course  
like a journey.



Now we will briefly make some vse of it, and the vses shall be but these two, according to this similitude, & the agreement of this walking with a Christian life.

If a Christian life, be of this nature, that it is like a walking in a Iourney, that every act is a steppe, then it should stirre vs vp to consider seriously, what a busines we haue in hand, to consider for what purpose we came into the world, namely, to goe a Iourney, not to sit still, not to be idle, we are to travaile a part of this Iourney every day, and therefore the first thing wee are to doe, is to choose a right way: you must know therefore, that there are many thousands (it is the common condition of men in the Church) that thinke they are in a right way, and so goe on in it without examination, whereas indeed every man by nature is set in a wrong way as soone as he comes into the world, wherein he travaileth, a way that leads to destruction; so that, till a man beginne to see his error, till he beginne to come seriously to consider, this is not the way I should follow, and to choose a contrary, he travailes not toward heaven, no man is in *our* *su*, as we say, no man is in this Iourney till then: *David* sayth, he chose the way of Gods Commandements. There must be a choice: and this must be vpon speciall consideration, for no man hath this without choice: now in choice there is not onely a taking a thing into consideratiō, (which is naturall) but then a man is said to chuse, when he pitcheth vpon it, when his resolution is fixed, when he determines

*Vse 1.*

The end of our being in the world is to goe a journey.

Every man by nature, in a wrong way.

How to know  
whither wee  
haue chosen  
Gods wayes.

termines vpon this way. Therefore, when you heare that there is such a walke, make that vse of it, choose the way of *Gods* Commandements. That is; willingly take that way, go it resolutely, sware within thy selfe, as *David* saith, *I haue sworn that I will serue thee*, and walke in thy way. I say, this we should bring our hearts to, and you shall know by this whether you doe so or no: A man, that chooseth a way, that resolues to goe that way, if he be out of it at any time, and be told, Sir you are out of the way, he is glad of the admonition, he is willing to goe into it againe: So that, I say, thou maist know, whether thou choosest the way of *Gods* Commandements, or no, by this, what doest thou when any suggestion comes from the *holy Ghost*, that tels thee, this duty ought to be done, this sin ought to be abstained from, art thou obedient to it? When thou art admonished by thy friend, that tels thee, this is not the way, this is an error, this is an obliquitie, art thou ready to turne out of it? art thou glad of such an aduertisement? When thou hearest rules given thee out of the word, from day to day, from Sabbath to Sabbath, art thou willing to practice the, when thy error is discovered to thee? It is a signe thou choosest the way. Let a man resolute on the way to a Coast, to a Citie, when it is discovered to him, that he is out of the way, certainly, if it be the way that he hath chosen, he will easily be readie, & willing to turne to it. Indeed, this is a signe a man hath chosen the way. *David* chose to serue the *Lord*, and therefore, when *Nathan* told him of his



his adultery, and murder, he quickly returned againe; So it is with all the Saints, it is not so with other men, when they are told of going out, they goe on still, because in truth, they haue not chosen the way of *Gods* Commandements.

Secondly; It is not enough to choose it in generall, but likewise, you must looke to every step you take, take heede to every steppe in this way. My *Beloved*, (as you heard before,) there is not an action, but it is a step, it is a pace in the way that leads, either on the one side, or on the other, either towards hell, or towards heaven, and therefore it is not enough to looke that you walke in the way in generall, but likewise, you must pōder your steppes. You see that expression *Pro. 4.* sayth the *Wise-man*. *Ponder thy wayes*, and order thy steppes aright; ponder thy wayes, that is, a man is to consider every steppe he takes, is this right? Doth this tend towards such a journey or not? This pondering of our wayes, is exceeding necessary, it is that which *David* constantly practised *Psal. 119. 36.* *I considered my wayes, that I might turne my feete to thy testimonie.* I considered my wayes; implying that; Except a man looke narrowly to it, except he consider his steppes, from time to time, except he reflect vpon them, and looke which way they tend, he will not be able to keepe the wayes of *Gods* Commandements.

Why; but it is necessary that a man must think vpon every action what his end is, when a man is busie in his studie, when he is busie in his trade, when he is busied in his particular calling, it is necessary

*Vse 2.*

We must ponder every step.

*Prov. 4.*

*Psal. 119. 36.*

necessary that every particular action should be looked vpon, that he should haue this actuall thought, whither doth this sted tend?

*Ans<sup>r</sup>.*  
How farre it  
is necessary in  
every action  
to thinke of  
the end.

I answer; It is not necessarie, that it should be done vpon every action, but that it should be so farre done, as is necessarie, to keepe vs in the right path, even as you see, it is in a journey, when a man resolues to go from one towne to another, he thinke not every step he takes, I am going to such a towne: for, by vertue of his first intention he takes these steppes: so that the marke and the ayme that he hath, is the cause of every steppe; though he thinke not of it in every step he takes: So in the actions that we doe, I say, if the ayme be right, though we thinke not vpon every action, we do, yet it is done by vertue of the first intention. And so *God* accepts of it. As, we see, an Arrow when it flies to the marke, or a Bowle, when it runs, there is not a new putting on, but by vertue of the first strength, by which it was thrown out, or by which it was shot, it passeth, & goes on towards the marke; so it is in a mans life: by vertue of the first ayme that a man hath, though he thinke not of it, vpon every particular occasiō, his heart goes on, he travailes towards the marke: therefore, I say, it is not necessary in every action. Notwithstanding, it is necessary that it be very frequently done: because we are so ready to goe out of the way. There is a straight way, that *God* hath chalked out to vs, and we are ready ever and anon, to turne out, we haue still some byas, or other, vpon vs, that drawes vs out from that way.

*Simile.*



Either some false feares, or some vaine hopes, or some fancy; and inordinate appetite, some thing, or other drawes vs out, that except a man looke very narrowly to it, except he be ever and anon reflecting vpon his wayes, he will not keepe the way, therefore it is necessary, that we be still considering, and pondering our wayes, and so much the rather, because, as the Apostle sayth, *Know you not, that many run in a race?* As if he should say, all the world travailes toward heaven, every man goes something that way: therefore, saith he, take heede; there are but a few notwithstanding, that get the goale, that get the price, few that obtaine, few that overcome: therefore, saith he, take heede how you runne. So, I say, there is much heed to be taken in this race, many goe out of *Egypt*, many that goe from sinne a certaine way, but they never come to *Canaan*, they walke a certaine way in the Wildernesse, but they come not home. Therefore to direct you in it, you must know this, that there is a length in this way, there is a rectitude, and a straightnesse in this way, and thirdly, there is a certaine breadth in this way. There is a length in this way, and therefore you must goe hastily in it, you must *run the way of Gods Commandements*, as *David* sayth: for there is a length in it; that is; it will not be dispatched with an easie pace. *G O D* requires every man to make hast in it, he must quicken his pace in the way to heaven. Now the cause why men goe on slowly in this way; is from halting; because they halt in this way: In other paces sometimes we grow flow by  
wea-

*Note.*

A length in  
Gods wayes.

The cause of  
slownesse in  
Gods wayes.

Halting dou-  
ble.

Halting, the  
ground of it.

wearinesse, but in the wayes of *Gods* Commandements, still our slacknes comes from halting, and therefore you haue that vsed often in the Scriptures; men are sayd to *halt betweene two opinions*, that is one kinde of halting betweene two Religions, he goes slowly forward in either of thē, that halts between two, he profits little, he goes slowly on. As there is a halting betweene two opinions, so there is a halting betweene two objects, *God* and the world. A man desires to serue *God*, and yet he desires to haue vaine-glory, or desires to make vp an estate, &c. I say, these diuers affections, these diuers respects to diuers objects, when a man hangs too much vpon the world, when he hath an eye too much vpon vaine-glory, when he is tooke vp too much with pleasures, & diuers lusts, this causeth men to halt in the wayes of *Gods* Commandements: halting, you know, is either when one leg is sound, and another lame, or when we goe with one leg in a higher way, and another in a lower way, it comes all to one: that is; when the heart doth not wholly looke vpon *God*, but lookes much to the world, therefore you see men much drēched in worldly busineses, that are overcome with them, that are drowned in them, they goe slowly on in the wayes of *Gods* Commandements, that goe with one leg in *Gods* wayes, and another out of them: And so likewise when one affection, and one desire shall be good, and another shall be lame, this causeth a halting in the wayes of *God*. And therefore, if you would run, you must haue both feete whole, and sound, with-



without lameness, and both feet must be in the way. When a man is thus disposed, he runs the wayes of *Gods* Commandements; Labour to finde what is the cause of thy halting, and of thy slackness, if it be worldly mindedness, the way to quicken thee in thy pace, is to weane thy heart from the world; if this be the cause that makes thee slacke, and dull, and heauey, and indisposed to prayer, and to other holy duties, (something thou doest, & thou goest in thy way, but slowly, and dully,) that is the way to heale it: And so againe, if it be some strong lust, be it what it will be, that causeth thee to halt, & to goe slowly on, heale that, & thou shalt be able to run the wayes of *Gods* Commandements. *David* calls it a straightning, when he could not run. Therefore, sayth he, *I shall run the wayes of thy Commandements, when thou hast enlarged my heart.* That is, Every lust is a straightning, the removing of it giveth a libertie to the heart, every lust is as fetters, and shackles that straiten the spirit, that are a bondage to the spirit, that take away the libertie of the spirit: Therefore the removing of the lust, whatsoever it is, that sets thee free, (as it were) and when thou art free, and at libertie, when there is no impediment, thou art able to run the waies of *Gods* commandements.

Lusts like  
fettlers.

*Gods* wayes  
straight.

The second is, there is a straightness in this way; there is no way that leads to any place, but it is straight: for if it were crooked, it would not lead to that place. So that every walke, every certaine walke, is straight, so are the wayes of *Gods* Com-

Commandements, they are straight; now straight is a relative word; that is, it is betweene two extreames, as we say, a Line is straight when it runs betweene two poynts, and goes not out, from either of them, that we call straightnes, if there be any exorbitatiō of the lync, now it is not straight but crooked, now the way is said to be straight in regard of these two termes. A man indeede goes from miserie to happinesse, and the wayes of *Gods* Commandements, are the straight wayes that lead to that; if you walk crooked in the way, you step out to one of the two extreames; that is, you steppe out from the way that leads to happinesse, you step out to some trouble, to some mischief, to some evill, to some punishment, when you step out from the way of *Gods* Commandements. So that that is to be observed, that this is a straight way; And therefore, seeing this leads straight to happinesse, and every declination is a stepping out to misery; You haue reasō to take it, for it is the shortest way, that is one condition: you haue two motiues to take this way.

Stepping out  
of **GODS**  
wayes tends  
to misery.

**Gods** wayes  
nearest.

One is, it is the shortest way, the other is, it is the plainest way. Wee haue a rule in the *Mathematicks*: Alwayes the straightest line is the shortest; looke how much bending, and crookednesse there is, so much the more length there is in it, the straightest way is the shortest: So, if thou wouldest go the shortest way to happinesse, keepe the way of *Gods* Commandements, (if thou dost not, thou goest about, thou art a looser by it) that is the nearest way: For example; that I may  
a little



Instances of  
stepping out  
of Gods  
wayes.

a little expresse it to you, *Jacob* when hee would goe about, & not keepe the straight way, when he would make hast to get the blessing, it was a going out from *Gods* wayes.; was it not a going about to his happinesse? You know, how many yeares trouble it cost him. So *David* when hee would goe out of the way, in his Adultery, and murther, did he not goe about towards his happinesse? Was he not an exceeding great looser by it? You know how much it cost him, what great afflictions he had, *the sword never departed from his house*; what great trouble, being cast out of his Kingdome by *Absalom*? &c: that was a going about to his happinesse. So this is a sure rule, if there be any crookednesse in a mans wayes towards *God*, it is a going about to happinesse. And so *Asa*, *his heart was perfect all his dayes*. But when he was out of the waies of *God*, when he stepped out of these wayes, and made to his feete crooked paths, did he not goe about for his owne happinesse? The Prophet comes, and tels him, *Asa*, because thou hast done this *from hence thou shalt have warre*: the case was this, *Asa* would needs seek to the King of *Affyria*, & the King of *Damascus* for helpe. it was a sinfull pollicy in him, it was a going about, hee should haue kept the straight way, and haue trusted *God* with it, but when he would do this, when he was crooked in his waies, it was a leading about to his happinesse, the Prophet comes & tels him, the host of the King of *Aram* should escape out of his hands, and likewise he should haue warre all his time, and so he had

R

much

much trouble at home, and warre abroad, and at length he was given vp to a fore disease that was his death. Thus he went about, and so doth every man when hee sinneth: for the other is the straight way.

It is the plainest.

1 Cor. 3.

No safetic out of GODS wayes.

Secondly; As it is the nearest way, so likewise it is the plainest way. When a man will go out of it, he meets with snares, there are vanities in those was; as it is sayd, *he catcheth the craftie in his owne deceit*, or in his owne actions, and enterprises, 1 Cor. 3. he catcheth the craftie; that is, if a man wil goe out of the way of *Gods* Commandements by any carnall pollicy and wisedome, it is not a plaine way, it is a way wherein he shall meet with one trouble or other, hee shall meete with some snares there, he shall not goe safely in it. So that, you may take that for a sure rule, when a man goes out of *Gods* waies, he is not safe, he is subject to some snare, to some net or other, wherein he may be taken: therefore let vs keepe the straight way, it is the best, and it is the neereft. As it is said of *Abymaaz*, he ran the way of the plaine, and so though *Cushi* went out before him, yet *Abymaaz* came to his journeyes end much before *Cushi*; because he went the way of the plaine: So he that goes through the plaine way, though he seeme to haue present disadvantage, and trouble, yet when all is summed vp, that will bring him soonest to his journeyes end, he shall come soonest to happines and quiet that way, he that takes the faireft course, by probabilitie in carnall wisedome, and pollicie, and steppes out of *Gods* waies, though he  
thinke



thinke that the nearest way, yet he shall find that he goes about. Let a man thinke with himselfe, by declining, I may escape such a trouble, such a strait, such a disadvantage, that will befall other men: perhaps thou maiest, but yet, I say, thou goest about, thou art no gainer by this, it shall be paid thee home in arrerages, thou shalt loose it in the long race, thou shalt find that he that goes the plaine way, shall come before thee to thy journeyes end, to happinesse that we all ayme at; that is certaine still, he that keeps the right way, he takes the shortest way to happines, he that thinks he takes a wiser course then *God*, and therefore will decline those troubles, by winded wayes, that another brings vpō himselfe by keeping the plaine way, I say, he shall find himselfe deceived, he goes about towards his happinesse.

Lastly; as there is a length in this way, and a straightnesse in it, so there is a breadth in this way, there is a latitude, a certaine proportionall breadth. The way to some man is broader then to others, and to the same man the way in some places is broader, in some narrower. The *Jewes* way was narrower, then ours, there is a Christian liberty that hath enlarged this way, & made it somewhat broader to walke in: for, as the Christian libertie is more, so likewise is the way broader: Wee haue more libertie then the *Jewes* had in many things, wee are freed from that *yoke of bondage*, that strict obseruation of Mosaicall Ceremonies. And so againe, I say, one Christian hath a narrower way then another; that as, a

*Note.*

A breadth in  
Gods wayes.

The way  
broader to vs,  
then to the  
*Jewes*.

Lawful things  
to be forborne,  
when they be  
occasions of  
sinne.

man is subject to more temptations, to more occasions of sin, so must he make his way narrower, he may not walke in so broad a path as another. Againe, the same man in some part of his way must choose a narrower way, in some he needes not; As, for example, a man that is subject to run out in such a recreation, another man may walke in a broader path in the vse of that recreation then he may; for to him it is an occasion of evill, he is readie to be snared, and to be transported with it: one man is apt to be carried to drunkenness, if he see but the Wine, if he come but neere it, he must not *looke on the Wine in the Cup*; one man is quickly set on fire with incentiues of lust with an object, he may not come so neere, nor be so bold with them as another man may, one man is apt, if he come to such a company, to receiue some hurt, to be intangled with them, he is apt to learn their ways, to goe along with them, such a man may not be so bold to come neere that company as another may, that is not subject to that temptation, so that there is a breadth and a narrownes in these ways.

Now our care must be not to goe beyond this breadth: for it is a *narrow way*, *there are few that finde it*, *Mat. 7.* Therefore, I say, we haue the more need to looke to it; that we step not aside, that we loose not our way. *Beloved*, it concernes vs much to looke to it; because, when we goe out of *Gods* paths, we are still exposed to some hazard, and to some danger, we should looke to it, not onely for obedience to *God*, but for our owne sakes: if a  
man

Mat. 7.



Our care must  
be to be found  
in Gods wayes.

man be found out of the breadth of this way; that is; if he take more libertie then he ought (for it is profitable for vs to know both our libertie, and our restraint,) hee shall finde still some miserie, or other come vpon him; take heede therefore, least *God* meete thee out of the way at any time; as he sayd to *Eliab*, *What dost thou here? What makest thou here Eliab?* indeede it was his fault, (when *God* had beene with him so mightily and had given rayne at his desire, and wrought such miracles, to send fire from Heaven to consume the sacrifices, and after to slay so many Prophets of *Baail*;) for a word of *Iezabell*, a weake Woman, to runne from her so many miles, as farre as his feete could carry him, it proceeded from timorousnesse, and feare: *God* meetes with him, and saith, *What dost thou here Eliab? What makest thou here?* As if he should say; thou art out of the way. Though the *Lord* dealt mercifully with him, yet it was his fault, he was out of the way, sometimes feare puts vs out of the way, and sometimes againe other passions, as *Hagar* went out of her way from her mistress (as we see in the Chapter before the Text) *Hagar Sarahs maid, whence comest thou? And whither goest thou? Gen. 16. 18.* Where we see he puts her in minde of that dutie shee did owe to *Sarah*, of that particular calling she was in; As if he should say; *Hagar* dost thou remember what thou art? dost thou remēber what particular calling thou art in? Art thou not *Sarahs* maid? Thou shouldst be about *Sarahs* busines, what dost thou here in y<sup>e</sup> Wildernes,

Gen. 16. 18.

running from thy mistress? If thou be *Sarabs* maid, whence comest thou? And whither goest thou? As if he should say; thou art out of thy calling, thou art out of thy way.

So you must thinke with your selues, when any man goes out of his calling, when he goes out of the duties of either of his callings, if *God* should meete him, if an Angell should meete him, and should say, What dost thou here? Thou that art a Minister, what dost thou doing the thing that belongs not to such a one to doe? Thou that art a Tradesman, a Lawyer, a Student, whatsoever the calling and busines be, that *God* hath set thee in, when thou art stepping out to by-ways, that are not sutable to such a calling, *God* may say to thee and thou maiest say to thy selfe, as the Angel said to her; *What dost thou here Hagar Sarabs* maid? He puts her in minde of her calling, so must we, and so much the rather, because wee are never out of our way, but at that time we are from vnder *Gods* protection, we are from within the pale, we haue no promise of safety. it makes vs exposed to some hazard, or other, and, therefore, let vs be carefull of this. As the *Israelites* in the wildernes went not a step, but as far as they saw the Cloud going before them, so, I say, goe not a step but as farre as you haue a warrant, as farre as you see *God* going before you, and this shall be for your comfort.

Ob. But you will say, it may be, *God* will lead me by these straiter rules to prison, to losses, to crosses, to disgrace, to losse of preferment, to losse of friends?

*Beloved,*

The danger  
of being out  
of *Gods*  
ways.



*Beloved*, know this, that the Cloud, as it was a direction to them, so it was a protectiō likewise, they never followed the Cloud, but they were safe, the Cloud was a defence to them wherefoever they went: As we see, *Esay 45. The Lord will create upon every place of Mount Sion, and upon the assemblies thereof, a Cloud of smoke by day, and a shining flame of fire by night: for upon all the glory there shall be a defence.* In the Verses before he had said, he would lead them by the Spirit, this leading of the spirit he compares to the leading of *Israell* in the Wildernes, as they were led with the Cloud, so shall you, and if you follow the Cloud, it shall be a defence to you: so, I say, walke with *God*, and he will be a defence to you: it is no matter what the waies are, he is able to beare you out: for safetie is a part of your wages; therefore that belongs to him, your busines is nothing, but to finde out what your way is, & to walke in it, the care of the worke belongs to you, and the other is not your care: therefore (to shut vp this exhortation) learne to doe this, to pray, that *God* would shew you his wayes, that he will incline your hearts, that he will teach you, as he doth the *Ants*, & the *Bees*, and not onely shew you the wayes you are to walke, but giue you a secret instigation, & inclination to them, and if you seeke him, and your hearts be vpright and depend vpon him, he will shew you the path that you are to walke in: vpon that condition, that your hearts be sincere, and vpright. Again, let vs depend vpon him, that we may seeke to him, and trust in him, and he will shew vs the way.

R 4

And

*Answ.*  
 God will be  
 a Cloud for  
 defence and  
 direction to  
 them that fol-  
 low him.  
*Isay. 45.*

Safetie a part  
 of our wages.

Having found  
the way, wee  
must runne.

Our pace in  
Gods wayes  
must answer  
our meanes.

*Simile.*

*Note.*

And, as we are to seeke the way, so wee must run it, and not be slow, and slacke in it, but runne the way of Gods Commandements; that is; goe apace. Now every mans pace is according to his meanes, and his abilitie, according to the might that God hath given him: for that may deceiue vs; A man may thinke he goes fast, when he goes but slowly; because it is not according to his abilitie. As, you know, a tal man when he doth but walk, he goes much faster then a child when he runnes, and yet he goes but slowly; because it is not according to his abilitie. *Beloved,* our walking is faster or slower, according to the several meanes, and strength that God hath given to every one of vs: some man hath a larger vnderstanding, hath more grace, more experience, better education then another; he must runne faster, he must doe much more good in his owne person, he must be more frequent & fervent in holy duties, he must be more diligent in drawing others to God; another, that hath received lesse, though he goe a slower pace, yet it may be running to him, when the former doth but walke: So; in every particular; A rich man that giues so much, it is but a slow pace to him, when another, that is poore, giues lesse, and that is a quicke pace to him. And so in like cases. Therefore, I say, let vs choose out the right way, let vs pray to God to direct vs, to shew it to vs, vpon every occasion, that wee may not misse it. And let vs not onely walke, but let vs walke apace, and run the way of Gods Commandements. So much for this first Vse.





THE  
SEVENTH  
SERMON.

GENESIS 17. 1.

*Walke before me, & be thou perfect.*



WE proceede to the second Vse which remaines; I told you the similitude lies in these 2 things. First, in the manner of the journey, there is a Terme to which wee goe, there is another, from which there is a distance, there is a path, &c.

The second Similitude was in the constancie, and continuednesse. Now our second Consequence, or Corollarie, we must draw from the second Similitude, betweene a Christian life, and a journey from place to place, I say, it agrees with it in this, that they are constant, there is a continued tenor of actions in a Christian mans course: from whence, I say, we draw this: If it be

fo

No man to  
be judged by  
some particu-  
lar actions.

so, if there be this Similitude betweene them; why, then let no man judge of himselfe, or of others, by a step, or two; let him not judge of himselfe, I say, by a few actions, but let a man consider, what his walke is; *walke before me, and be perfect*: Let a man consider what the ordinary, and vsuall course of his life is: if you should do otherwise, if you judge a man by an action, or two, you shall see, the best of the Saints haue bene subject to diuers saylings, you shall see *Noah* drunke, and you shall see *Lot* committing incest, you shall see *Moses* speaking vnadvisedly with his lippes, you shall see *David* committing murther, and adulterie, and making *Vriah* drunke, many such saylings you shall see in all the Saints, you shall see *Hezekiah* boasting of his treasure, you shall see *David* numbring his people, &c. So that, if you judge of men by a few actions, and not by their constant course, you shall condemne the generation of the just.

Againe, it is as true on the other side, if you will judge a wicked man by a few steps, and not by his ordinary course, you shall be as ready, to justifie y<sup>e</sup> wicked; you shall finde *Cain* sacrificing, you shall finde *Saul* among the Prophets, you shall see *Iudas* among the Disciples, you shall see *Herod* entertaining *Iohn Baptist*, you shall see him heare him gladly, doing many things at his Preaching, and admonition, this you see frequent, and vsuall: Therefore, I say, we are not to be judged by a few actions, and a few paces, but by the constant tenor of our life, by what we doe in ordinary,

Use 2.  
No man to  
be iudged by  
some particu-  
lar action.

Iudging of  
men by one  
or two actions  
condemnech  
the righteous  
and iustifieth  
the wicked.



ry, and vsuall course: for there is no man so good, but he may haue some swaruings, though he haue chosen the way of *Gods* Cōmandements, yet oft he may misse that way, he may be oft ē drawn out of y way, he may often be transported with some strong temptation. Againe, on the other side, there is scarce any man so bad, but sometimes he may come into the way. You haue men that haue no constant place to travaile to, yet, for a fit, they may goe into the high way, as a theefe, or a robber may doe. Therefore, let vs learne hence, not to judge our owne estate, or other mens, or censure either our selues, or others by a few actions: And I haue this ground for it, that you may see the reason of the rule. A mans cōstant course proceeds from the inward root, and frame of his disposition, from those principles, that are ingrafted in him, I say, his constant course proceeds from it. Those same by-scappings out, whether they be to good, or evill, they doe not proceede from the frame of the heart, but from the evill that is in the good, and from those good things that may be in the evill. You shall see it so in nature: Take a river, let it be dammed, and stoppd vp, yet if the course of it be naturall, if the vent, and streame of it be to goe downward, at the length, it will over-bear the damme, and will runne over it; or let water that is sweete, be made brackish by the comming in of Salt-water, yet, if naturally it be sweete, at the length, it will worke it out; so, I say, it is with every man, looke what the constant streame of his dispositiō is, looke what the frame

of

*Note.*

The constant course of life comes from inward principles.

*Note.*

*Simile.*

Why a Christian continues not in the evil he doth, and a wicked man in the good he doth.

Outward occasions forcible to good and evil, but they be transitory.

Instances.

of it is, that which is most naturall, and inward to a man, though it may be dammed vp, and stopped in such a course, for a time, yet it will breake through all impediments. Though there be some brackish, some evil, and sinfull dispositions, that may breake in vpon him, yet hee will weare them out; So it is as true on the other side; let a wicked man step into a good course by some trouble he is fallen into, or by some good familiaritie, or good education, or some good Minister, yet long he will not hold in it, he will breake through that impediment: because his naturall disposition, the streame of his heart runs another way.

Besides this ground of it: there is another cause of it; Because the outward occasions both for good and evil, I say, they are both forcible, and yet transitory. Evil men haue some outward things, some outward helpes, which put them on to a good course, they are so effectuell, and yet God suffers them not alwayes to haue them, but takes them away, they are but transitorie: Therefore a man may walke in a good course, whose heart is not yet right, and yet long he shall not doe it: because those outward occasions shall be tooke from him: As, for example, *Isaiah* walked in the waies of God, all the while that *Iehoiada* lived, here was the outward occasion, he was drawne with another mans synewes, hee was heated with another mans heate, and when that man was tooke away, you see, he fell to his owne course, and byas againe; the outward occasion

was



was strong, but it was but for a time, and so he returned to his old course.

The like in the case of *Vzziah*, he was hemmed in for a time, with *Zachariah* the Prophet, but, sayth the text, after his dayes, his heart was lifted vp to destruction. And so *Herod*, he kept within compasse, he was stirred vp to doe many things at the Preaching of *John Baptist*, but he did not alwayes continue: for *God* so disposeth it, in his providence, he will not suffer evill men alwayes to haue these outward occasions of good; As it is as true, on the other side, good men may haue strong temptations, that may transport them for a fit, but *God* will not suffer them alwayes to lye vpon the godly, he will not suffer a temptation of affliction, *he will not suffer the rod of the wicked to lie alwayes vpon him*, it may for a time, and he may for a fit, *put out his hand to wickednes*, he may vpon some exigent; vpon a sudden, when he is put to it, vpon some outward trouble, or crosse, when his heart is shaken, and distempered, when he is not himselfe, but *God* so disposeth of it in his providence, that they shall not alway lye vpon him, but they shall be removed in due season, as well as the helpes to good shall be taken from the wicked. So, you see, that may come to passe for a few steps, for part of the Iourney, an evill man may goe right, and a good man may swerue from the straight way: Therefore, let vs neither judge our selues, nor others by it: for if we should, we should iustifie the wicked, and condemne the generation of the iust. So much shall serue for this Vse, and for this poynt. The

Note.

The next, and maine poynt, that we intended, was this; That

*Whoſoever hath interest in Gods All-ſufficiency, muſt be a perfect man.*

That is; He muſt be ſincere, he muſt haue integrity of heart; though he may be ſubject to many infirmitieſ, yet *God* requires this of him; If I be *All-ſufficient*, ſayth he, to any man ( that is the ſcope of it ) he muſt be perfect with me: I am *All-ſufficient*, therefore be thou *perfect*, otherwiſe thou haſt no interest in this *All-ſufficiency* of mine. The poynt is cleare, and it is a poynt well knowne to you, I ſhall not need to confirme it by any other places of Scripture, but rather ſped the time firſt in giuing you the grounds of it: And ſecondly, in ſhewing to you what this intireneſſe, and perfection and ſinceritie of heart is.

Firſt, I will ſhew the grounds why no man ſhall be ſaved, nor ever haue part in this *All-ſufficiency* of *God*, except he be *perfect*, except he haue integrity of heart.

Firſt; becauſe the new *Adam* ſhould otherwiſe not be ſo effectually as the old; the new *Adam* ſhould not be ſo powerfull to communicate grace and life, as the old *Adam* is to inſtill corruption and ſinne; for the ſinne, that hath beene conveyed to vs by the firſt *Adam*, hath no integrity in it, it hath gone over y<sup>e</sup> whole ſoule, there is a whole *body of death*, that hath poſſeſſed vs; Now if there ſhould not be in thoſe redeeming a&ions by *Chriſt* a contrarie integrity, and perfection, a throughout holines, (as I may call it.) The plaifter then

ſhould

*Doct.*

None but perfect men haue interest in Gods *All-ſufficiency*.

*Reaf. 1.*

Elſe there would be more power in old *Adam*, to communicate ſin, then in the new to inſtill grace.



should be narrower then the fore, and the remedy should be inferior to the disease. *Boloved*, you know, a leprosie is gone all over, except the holinesse went all over too from toppe to toe, I say, there would not be an answerableness in the second *Adam*, he should not be able to doe as much good, as the first was able to doe hurt.

Secondly ; the worke of Redemption should be done but by halues, if the *Lord* should dispense with imperfect holinesse. The workes of Creation, you know, were *perfect*, *God* looked vpon all his works, and he saw that they were very good. Now doe you thinke the workes of Redemption come short of the workes of Creation? Are not they likewise perfect? when the *Lord* shall looke on that worke, shall he not say likewise, it is *very good*? If you doe marke the parts of it, hath not *Christ* redeemed vs from our vaine conversation? The *holy Ghost*, doth not he mortifie every sinfull lust? The bloud of *Christ*, doth it not wash every sinne? The Word, and meanes of grace, doe they not strike at every rebellion? It is certaine, they doe, and therefore, there is an integritie required in all: otherwise, I say, there should be an imperfection.

If you object, notwithstanding this, though *Christ* hath redeemed vs, yet, you see, There are many imperfections left in men; and therefore, how can you say the workes of Redemption are perfect?

I answer ; They are not perfect in degrees: for they must haue a time of ripening, but that which  
wants

*Reas. 2.*  
Else Redemp-  
tion should  
not be perfect.

*Ob.*

*Answ.*  
The workes  
of redempti<sup>o</sup>  
perfect in parts

though not  
in degrees in  
this life.

wants any part of perfection, though it be ripened when it wants the roote, and principle, when the frame, & first disposition is not right, let it grow vp never so fast, it will never be perfect: So this is true of the workes of Redemptiō, of the workes of *God* in a mans heart, of destroying the workes of *Sathan*, and setting vp a new building, which is the worke of *Iesus Christ*, & the end, for which he came; I say, this is true of it, it is perfect, it wants onely growth: As you may say, it is a perfect seede, when it is ripe it will be a perfect flower; or it is a perfect plant, when it growes vp, it will be a perfect tree, it is perfect in all respects. Such a perfection is in the workes of Redemptiō, and, if the heart of man be not entire, if the worke of grace be not throughout, if there be a defect in the principle, & constitution of it, there should be a defect in the workes of Redemptiō, which indeed cannot be.

Reas. 3.  
Else Gods  
Commands  
should be im-  
possible.

Thirdly, if there were not a perfectnes of heart wrought in all those that should be saved, the commands of the Gospell should be commands of impossibilitie: for the Gospell requires at our hands, that we should haue respect to all the *Commandements*, that we should keepe the whole Law in an *Evangelicall* manner; that is in a true endeavour; the Gospell requires that wee should loue the *Lord our God with all our hearts*, for the truth of it; It requires, (in a word) that we should keepe the whole Law, in that sence, so as to square our liues to it; to keepe it in all truth, and sinceritie, though we cannot reach the highest top, and de-  
gree



gree of it; Now if the heart were not perfectly holy, that is, throughout, there could be no proportion betweene the Commandements, and the facilitie and abilitie vpon which the Commandement lyes: for it is certaine, except the heart were perfectly holy, it could not keepe the whole Law, there were an impossibilitie, we should not reach every Commandement. And therefore, there must be integritie and intirenesse in the heart, that we may be able to keepe them, at the least in an Evangelicall sincere manner, though we cannot perfectly keepe the whole Law of God.

Fourthly, it is required: because otherwise there should not be a correspondencie, and agreement betweene the *Covenant on Gods part*, and on ours: *God hath sayd, he will be All-sufficient*, but he requires this againe, on our part, that we be altogether his; *My Beloved is mine, and I am his*; and *Psal. 18. I will walke perfectly with them that walke perfectly with me*; there are the termes of the *Covenant*, the *Lord* will haue it thus farre vpon even termes, there shall be an integritie on both sides, and therefore if a man be holy but by halues, that makes not the match, it makes not the agreement betweene the *Lord* and vs: for all and halfe is not a match, but all, and all is that which makes the match, the agreement and sutablenesse betweene *God* and vs; and this is another reason why it is required.

Now last of all, this perfection, and integritie is required: because otherwise, all that we doe is

S

nothing

There is a proportion betweene a perfect heart, and GODS Commandement.

Else the Covenant were not mutuall betweene God and vs.

*Psal. 18.*

*Reas. 5.*  
All is nothing that wee doe without this.

nothing, it is to no purpose: for except you seeke the *Lord*, and serue the *Lord* with a perfect heart, you serue him not at all, you cannot serue him as *God*, you cannot serue him as a Master, you cannot serue him as a *Lord*, as a soveraigne commander, except your hearts be perfect with him: This reason I take out of *Math. 6.* a place well knowne, *No man can serue two Masters.* That is; It is true, a woman may loue many as friends, but shee can loue but one as a husband: A man may looke to many subordinate ends, but he can haue but one vltimate end: A man may haue respects, he may affect many things in a remisse manner, but to affect many things in the highest degree, it is impossible, it can be bestowed but vpon one: Therefore, I say, to serue him as *God*, it cannot be, except the heart be wholly bestowed on him; if you will take in any thing with him, either credit, or profit, or pleasure, now you make *God* an Idol, and you make that as *God*; so that whatsoever a man loues, and respects or obeyes: I would aske him but this question; Either it commands the same thing with *God*, when it commands vnder him, and so, in yeelding to that, you obey *God* himselfe, or else, it commands somewhat different, and if you yeeld to that, and not to the *Lord*, you reject him, and take that for *God*. Therefore, I say, the heart must be perfect, or else the obedience is nothing at all. So much shall serue to shew you the grounds of this, why such a perfection, and sinceritie and integritie of heart, is required in all those that shall be saved.

*Math. 6.*

*Note.*

*Note.*

But



But the chiefeſt buſineſſe will be here ; to ſhew you what this integritie is : the beſt way to finde it out, is to open to you all thoſe expreſſions in the Scriptures, by which it is preſented to vs, and you ſhall finde them to be theſe five : And in the opening of them, we ſhall ſufficiently ſhew you, what this ſinceritie or perfection of heart is.

First, you ſhall finde it often expreſſed, by *puritie*, and ſoundneſſe, *Bleſſed are the pure in heart, and God is good to Iſrael, even to them that are of a pure heart.* Now what is it to be *pure*? That is *pure* which is full of it ſelfe, and hath no other Heterogeneall thing mingled with it ; So, that heart is *pure*, which hath no ſinne in it, which is holy, which hath a renewed qualitie of grace, which hath an inward regenerate man, that will mingle with no ſin, that is full of it ſelfe, and admits not the mixture of any ſinne. My *Beloved*, I muſt be warily vnderſtood here, I ſay, it admits not the mixture of any ſin. It is true, ſin may cleave, and adhere to a man, as droſſe doth to the ſilver, but it mingles not with the regenerate part, nor that mingles not with it ; that is, it enters not into the frame and conſtitution of a mans heart, it is not weaved into the texture of his heart ; it is no ingredient into the very frame, and fabricke of it, but though ſinne be there, yet the heart ſtill caſts it out of it ſelfe, it reſiſts it, and rejects it, and purifieth and cleaſeth it ſelfe from it, this properly is a pure heart: As in other things, you ſay, a thing is pure, when it is ſolid, and cleare, and vnmixed, though it may haue ſome droſſe, and ſome mud cleaving

What ſinceritie & vprightnes is.

Sinceritie ſer forth by five expreſſions.

I  
Puritie and ſoundneſſe.

Puritie what.

Note.

cleaving to it, you say, it is pure gold, when it is digged out of the mineral, though there be much drosse in it, and we say, it is a pure ayre, though; for a time, there be many fogges and mists, and adventitious vapours within it. So, we say, it is pure water, though there be many inundations of mud cast into it, or that come from the spring, or Channell from whence it runnes; So a man may be said to haue a pure heart, that is, a *perfect* heart, though there be an adhesion of much drosse, many evil thoughts that cleave to him, yet, I say, they mingle not with him, that is, *Beloved*, it is certaine, that the holiest men haue a fountaine of originall corruption in them, & from this fountaine sinnes arise continually, as the scumme in the pot, but yet, if the liquor be pure, and good, if it be right wine, or right hony, whatsoever the liquor is, though the scumme arise, still it purifies it selfe, and casts it out; this is the propertie of a pure heart: with the impure it is quite contrary, the scumme ariseth as in the other, but it is sodden in, it is mingled and confounded with it, there is not such a segregating, such a cleansing disposition in it, but there is a mixing of them together: this similitude you shall finde *Ezek. 24. 12.* whence I take it, *shee wearied her selfe with lyes, &c. And her great scumme went not out of her.* There is a similitude going before of a *boyling pot*, into which much flesh was put. to which he compares the children of *Israel* of that time, but this is the conclusion that *God* makes, *her great scumme went not out of her*; As if he should say, it is very true, the

A pure heart  
casts out sin,  
as pure liquor  
doth scumme.

*Ezek. 24. 12.*



Note.

the holiest men haue their scumme rising in their hearts, as well as the wickedest men, but, saith the Prophet, here is the difference, *her great scum went not out of her* : That is, though it arose, and might haue beene cast out, it was not so, but was sodden in, and mingled together. And therefore sayth he, *her scum shall be consumed with fire*. That is, *God will deale with her, as we do with pottage, when the scum is sodden into them, we cast them in the fire, and the reason is given in the words following ; for I would haue purged thee, but thou wouldest not be purged, therefore thou shalt not be purged from thy filthines, till I haue caused my wrath to light vpon thee* : As if hee should say, I put my Word to thee, which is as fire, I vsed such ordinances, and meanes, I withheld none of them, and with those I would haue purged thee, not by the inward purifying worke of the spirit : for that could not efficaciously be resisted ; but I would haue purged thee, that is, *my Word is as fire* ; It is a segregating thing, that differenceth, and puts a separation between the scum, and the liquor, as that indeede was the end of the Prophets, to *separate the precious from the vile*. Now, saith the Lord, when these meanes were vsed, when thou hadst the Prophets that would haue separated the precious from the vile, in thy heart as well as to doe it in the companies of men : Seeing this had no fruit, nor effect vpon thee, but still thy scum, & filthines continued in thee, and thou wast not purged : therefore, I will destroy thee, thou shalt never be purged, but my wrath shall

It is not ha-  
ving impuri-  
ties rising in  
the heart that  
makes it im-  
perfect, but  
the abiding  
of them.

light on thee : So, my *Beloved*, it is not the having impurities in the heart, that makes the heart imperfect, ( that is the conclusion I grow to ) but it is the suffering of them to be mingled, even with the inward frame of the heart.

Thus you shall finde, if you would know the true difference betweene a pure and perfect, and an impure and vnperfect heart, it stands onely in this ; he that hath a pure heart, there is in him a cleansing, and purifying, a segregating disposition that casts out whatsoever evill comes, though it be continually rising, yet still hee casts it out, though he be still falling into some sinne, yet still he is repenting, though many times he be mired, yet still he washeth himselfe againe, hee cannot endure it, he doth nor, as the swine, delight in it ; but he hath another, a contrary disposition, he still clenfeth himselfe from it : That I take to be the meaning of that, *Mat. 15.* where it is said, *That which comes from within the man, as adultery, fornication, &c. they defile the man.* The meanihg is this, when sinne riseth in a man from day to day, if he cherish sinne, and entertaine it, and suffer sinnes to dwell, and abide in his heart quietly, without disturbance, if he suffer them to be sodden in, as it were, now they defile the heart : But if sinnes arise in the heart, and hee continually resist them ; he continually cast them forth, he continually clenfeth, and purifieth himselfe from them, such a man is not defiled with them ; nor is his minde defiled, nor his conscience defiled ; but notwithstanding this continual Ebullition of evils ( that

Mat. 15.



I may so call it ) he is a man of a pure heart, and with *God*: and this, I say, is one of the expressions of *purenesse*.

And so likewise *soundnes*, when a man is found at the heart, that is another expression of this perfectnes. Now a thing is said to be found (as an Apple, you know, is said to be found, when it is not rotten at the core, though there bee many specks in it; and a Ship is said to be found, when there is no leake in it, though it may haue some other flaws and defects; And a Vessell is said to be found, when there is no cleft in the bottom, though it may otherwise be bruised & battered, yet, you say, it is a sound Vessell) I say, so it is in this case, when the bottom of the heart, and the inward frame of the heart is right and found: Though a man be subject to many faylings, yet this is a perfect man, he hath a sound heart; whereas on the other side, take a man, my *Beloved*, (that wee may shew you what this rottennesse at heart is) who doth admit a constant neglect of any dutie, or an ordinary commission of any sinne, such a man may properly be said to haue a leake in the bottom of his heart, to bee rotten-hearted, to be vnfound at the bottom; But a man, that, though he be subject to infirmities, yet had rather die then omit a knowne dutie, or to be in a knowne sin, I say, this man, though he haue many infirmities, yet he hath a sound heart: And the reason of it is this, because such a man although he haue some weaknes, some sicknesse, and infirmitie hanging vpon him, yet hee

Soundnesse.

Soundnesse,  
what.Vnfound hear  
ted, who.

Hypocricie  
commonly  
discovered be-  
fore death.

will grow it out, as one that is found in his bow-els will weare out his sicknesse, and distemper, as it is said, *if the inside be cleane*, the outside will follow: And that is true, on the other side, let the inside be rotten, though there be a faire & a golden outside, as in an Apostle oft times, that fairenes doth not continue long, but rottennesse will possesse the outside also; That we see often in experience, & you shall seldome see it otherwise; (I thinke there is scarce an example of it) but that an hypocrite, a man of an vnsound heart, though he may carrie a faire shew long, yet, in the end, even the outside shall be tooke away, that shall vanish also, and rottennesse shall seize vpon it: for that is the nature of things, that are vnsound, they stay not there, but they putrifie, & corrupt more and more, So that, you see throughout the Scriptures still those that were of imperfect hearts; that is, that had vnsound hearts, they were discovered before their death; as *Amaziah* was, he held out long, and so was *Ioash*, and divers others; It is a rule, I thinke, that seldome failes: because *God* hath said, he will curse *the name of the wicked*, and *it shall rot*. Now except their hypocrisy should be discovered in time, and that their outside were removed, and made as rotten as the inside, how should his name rot? So much shall serue for this first expression, that it is expressed by *purenesse* and *soundnesse*.

2  
Simplicite.

Secondly; you shall haue it expressed by *simplicite*, and singlenes of heart; he, whose heart is *perfect before God*, he is said, *Mat. 6.* to haue a *single eye*;



eye; and *Iam. 1.* he that is imperfect is said to be a *double minded man*, contrary to which is *ἀπλῆς*, a man that hath a simple heart, a heart without guile, a single heart. Now, if wee can finde out what this singleness of heart is, this singleness of eye, and of heart, you will finde out this perfection, that is here spoken of; *Walke before me, and be thou perfect.* Now a single heart is so called from the singleness of the object, that is a *single eye*, that lookes but vpon one object, and that is a single heart, that lookes but vpon one thing: likewise that is a *double eye*, and a *double heart*, that lookes vpon two objects, and is divided betweene two, and knowes not which to choose; like a man that is in *bivio*, in a double way, he stands, and lookes on both, and knowes not which to take; so an imperfect hearted man, an vnfound hearted man, he stands, and lookes vpon *God*, and vpon the world, and he knowes not well which to choose, sometimes he is following the one, sometimes the other, this is his Condition, he is distracted betweene both; such a man hath a double eye, and therefore, sayth the Text, *a wicked eye*: for so it is called, *if the eye be single, all the body is light, but if the eye be wicked*: (for so it must be interpreted) if the eye be double, which is a wicked eye. So, my *Beloved*, an vnfound hearted man is not described to you by any thing so plainly, and perspicuously, as by this, that his heart is not pitched vpon *God* alone; but he hath an eye vpon *God*, and an eye vpon credit, he hath an eye vpon *God*, and an eye vpon his wealth, vpon his pleasures, or what-

*Iam. 2.*

Heart single  
and double.

A signe of an  
vnfound heart

whatsoever it is, when there are two objects: for in that regard a man is said to haue *a heart and a heart*, not as commonly it is taken to make a shew of one thing, and haue another within; But it is a heart & a heart, when there are two objects, vpon which the heart is set, that the heart is diuided between two, and so it is cloven asunder, as it were: & so it is a double heart, by way of diuision and not by having one thing in shew, & another within. Now then, if you will finde out what a perfect man is, I say, it is he that hath a fixed resolution to cleaue to *God* alone, that hath his eye vpon him, and vpon nothing besides. This is a single heart, when a man shall resolue (for instances, will best make it cleare to you) when a man shall say, as *Ioshuah* did, Well, saith he, I see you are ready to take diuers wayes, but I am resolved for my part, for me and my house, *wee will serue the Lord*, that I am resolved on. So *David*, *I haue chosen the way of his commandements, I haue sworne to keepe them, and that I will doe*: When a man is once resolved throughly, when he is grounded, and hath a fetled resolution, an vnchanged resolution, that pitcheth him vpon one, he is no longer in doubt betweene two, this is a perfect hearted man. So *Moses* takes this resolution, I will *suffer affliction with the people of God*; as if hee should say, I haue chosen it, whatsoever become of me, though I be a banished man, though I liue a poore life, though I turne from being *Pharaobs* sonne in Law to keepe sheepe in the *Wildernesse*, yet this is my resolution: here I haue fixed

Note.

A signe of a perfect heart.



fixed my staffe, this will I doe. Herein the perfection and integritie of his heart was seene; So the three men, *Sidrash*, *Mesech*, and *Abednego*. This, say they, wee are resolved vpon, whether wee be delivered, or not delivered, whether wee die or liue, whatsoever come vpon vs; wee will serue the *Lord*, *wee will not worship thine Idoll*. And so *Iob*, though hee kill mee, yet will I trust in him; That is; though he multiply miseries vpon me, even to the very death; yet I am resolved to serue him, my heart is there pitched, his, will I be. This is to haue a single eye, and a single heart; When the heart is divided, it is imperfect, such a man is *unconstant in all his wayes*, sayth *Iames*: Such a one was *Saul*, and such a one was *Amaziab*: that indeed is the case of all hypocrites. And to this, I adde, that which is said *Matthew 8*. the fourth ground is sayd to haue an *honest heart*; an honest heart stands in this, that a man resolues to serue the *Lord* with *patience*, and with *abstinence*, that is the definition, that I will giue of it, hee that hath an honest heart, hee resolues to serue *God*, in all things with *patience*, and *abstinence*, one of them is exprest in the Text, *he brings forth fruit with patience*, the other I adde, for a more full explication of it. The meaning is this, hee hath an vpright, and honest heart, that so pitcheth vpon *God*, that hee will not be drawne aside for any thing: Now there are but two things that draw vs aside; that is, either *persecution*, *affliction*, and *trouble*. And for this the honest heart hath

Math. 8.  
An honest  
heart, what.

Two things  
draw vs from  
God.

hath patience, he resolves to suffer them, whatsoever they be, and therefore he is able to goe on: or, on the other side, pleasures, and divers lusts, that drew away the third ground, as persecution did the second: here the honest heart hath a resolved abstinence, he is content to part with them, and to be without them: therefore he brings forth fruit when another doth not; that is, another may have a faire blade, but either persecution, or else pleasures, and divers lusts come betweene, and intercept his maturitie, that he never comes to any bearing of fruit, to any purpose; This expression I put together with singlenesse of heart, a heart without guile, and without mixture, because there is a similitude betweene them. So much for that expression likewise.

Integritie;  
which consists  
in three  
things.  
Ierem. 10. 3.

A third Expression there is in the Scripture, which you shall finde in these words, *Iere. 3. 10. They did not turne to me with their whole heart, but feignedly.* And very oft, *Thou shalt serue the Lord thy God with all thy heart.* So that the wholenes of the heart, the integritie of the heart, he that hath this is a perfect man, hee, that wants it is an vn-found hearted man. Now what is this Integrity, and wholnes of heart, you shall see in these three, the integritie of the subject, the integritie of the object, and the integritie of the meanes, whereby the subject, and the object are joyned together.

I  
The Integrity  
of the subject.

The Integrity of the subject, that is the heart of a man, that I call the subject. The Integrity of the object I call the Commandements, when he hath respect to all of them; The Integrity of the meanes



meanes I call that, which brings the heart, and the Commandement together; that is, the vse of all holy Ordinances, and the abstinence from all occasions, that may draw vs another way. So now he is a *perfect* man with *God*, that first hath a whole heart; that is; such a heart whereof every part, and facultie is sanctified: There is no part of it, but it is seasoned with grace, there is no wheele in all the soule, but it is turned the right way, according to that, *1 Thes. 5. He is sanctified throughout, in body, soule, and spirit*, I say, when a man shall finde every thing within him readie to prayse the *Lord*, and to looke toward the *Lord*, all that is within him. There is not any thing within him, of which he can say, the bent of it is another way. I say, such a man hath an integritie of heart: Another man, you shall finde it thus alway with him, that, though in many things hee wish well, and hath a good meaning, and good purposes, yet there is something or other, hath stollen away something in his heart, something within him is not right, it may be in his feare, he cannot say he feares *God*, and nothing else: for there are many things that he feares more then *God*, so he cannot say of his loue to *God*, that that is right, it may be, it is misplaced, though many other things may be right in him, he loues riches, he loues credit, he loues reputation, he loues his ease, and conveniency, his practise, and employment; So that, if *God* and these should come in competition, he would be readie to violate his conscience towards him, rather then to part with these:

A whole heart  
what.

1 Thes. 5.

Note.

these: And so his griefe, that is not principally for sinne, there is somewhat, or other, that you shall finde him sayling in, there is not an integritie in the subject.

2  
Integritie in  
the object.

Iam. 3. 2.

Iam. 1. 26.

And secondly, there is as little in the object; he hath not *an eye to all the commandements*, whereas the perfect hearted man, there is no dutie but he giues vp his heart to it: And againe, there is nothing forbidden, no sinne, but his heart is averse from it, and he resists it to the vttermost. You shall see this expression, *Iam. 3. 2. He that can guide his tongue is a perfect man, in many things we sinne all, if any man sinne not in word, he is a perfect man*: Compare this with *Iames 1. 26. If any man among you seemes to be religious, and refraineth not his tongue, but deceiues his owne heart; this mans religion is in vaine*. I say, you may take but this one instance, that this is the judgement of the *holy Ghost*: should a man haue an eye to e-very Commandement, and should he but fayle in this one thing, not bridling his tongue, but giue vp his tongue to evill speeches, to let it walke loose, vp and downe, whither it will, if he doe but neglect this one particular, yet, sayth the Text, all the rest of his Religion is but vaine; Why? Because there is not an Integritie in the object, he hath not an eye to the whole Law, so that, if a man fayle in this, hee is not a perfect man, if either it be in the subject, or in the object.

3  
Integritie of  
the meanes.

Or thirdly, if it be in the meanes, that knits these together, that is, take a man that will not  
vse



vse all *Gods* Ordinances conscionably, & in their season; that he doth not pray, and receiue the Sacrament, and vse the Communion of Saints, and fasting, and every one in their season: I say, if he doe not vse all the meanes: And againe, if he doe not abstaine from all the occasions, but if he venture vpon evill occasions, and incentiues to lust, vpon such objects, as are readie to worke vpon him, I say, if there be a defect in these, he is an vnperfect, and vnsound hearted man; as you may say of a mans body, if you see he faile in any of those things that are essentially to a mans health, that hee will not drinke, nor hee will not eate, nor hee doth not sleepe, he fayles in the meanes that should make him sound; or else if hee adventure vpon the occasions that may corrupt him, he venters vpon poysoning, and infecting dyer, infected, and pestilent ayre, &c. he cannot haue a sound body; no more can such a one haue a sound soule: So, I say, that the wholnesse, and integritie of the heart, it lyes in these three put together. First, the heart must be all sanctified: If you say, how shall we know that? Thus: he hath respect to every Commandement, he fayles not in any thing, he fayles not in looking to his thoughts, nor in looking to his speeches, he doth not neglect any affection that riseth in him, at any time.

But how shall a man know, whether he haue done this, or no?

They hang so one vpon another, that you may know the first by the second, and the second by the

*Simile.*

the third, you may know whether a man haue an eye to every Commandment, if he vse all the meanes, and abstaine from all occasions of sinne: for if thou doe not this, pretend what thou wilt, thy heart is false. So much for this third.

4  
Vprightness or  
straightnes.

Psal. 37.

The ayme of  
an vp-right  
man.

The rule of a  
perfect man.

The fourth expression, that I finde in Scripture, is *vp-rightnesse*, or straightnesse of heart: the word, in the originall answers (*Rectitudo*) and an vp-right man, in the originall is as much as (*vir rectus*) a straight man: Marke the way of the vp-right, and perfect man, his latter end is good, it is peace, *Psal. 37*. That is, of a straight man: So the straightnes of the heart, if we can find what it is; we shall know what it is to haue a perfect heart with *God*. Now the straightnesse of a man (for so I will rather expresse it in the Concrete) is seene in this, whether he hath straight & vp-right ends: An vp-right man you shall know by his aymes; he hath a right end; the ayme, and scope, and marke, that his eye is vpon, is *Gods* glory, and his owne salvation, to doe, and suffer the will of *God*, whatsoeuer it is; that is to be faithfull and diligent in his calling, to be serviceable and profitable to others, these are the things that are in his heart, these are the right ends; and he is sayd to haue a right heart, whose ends are right, that pitcheth vpon right, and straight ends, and likewise, he that goes by a straight rule: for a right end never hath a crooked rule leading to it. But if a man would know whether he hath a right end: thou shalt know it by this, there needs not any oblique way to lead to such an end, but thou wilt go by a straight



straight rule; that is the way of *Gods* Commandements is the rule that thou wilt walke by: Therefore if thou finde this in thy heart, that there are devices, and plottings, & windings, and turning waies, that thou projectest to thy selfe to bring any enterprife to passe, now thou goest not by a straight rule, but by a leaden *Lesbian* rule, by a bended rule: whereas a right man, his eye is still vpon the rule, he considers not so much this, and this will I bring to passe, as hee considers with himselfe, what is the rule I ought to walke by: For indeede every man hath some certaine rule, and principle in his heart, and all the actions that hee doth, proceede from those secret rules, though himselfe take not notice of them. Now this is planted in the heart of an vpright man, that still he goes by a straight rule, though he could desire many things might be brought to passe, yet if the rule will not hold, he will not seeke it. This you shall finde *Gal. 6. Peace on the Israel of God, as many as walke by this rule.* They are the true Israel, that keepe the right rule; so I will commend this to describe to you a right, and straight man, when his end is right, and his rule is right: That is, when his heart is not a crooked heart: for it hangs all vpon a string, crooked ends, and crooked wayes, and a crooked heart. He that hath a right heart; that is, not a perverse, and froward heart; as we see *Prov. 17. 18. A froward heart (as the translation is, that is a crooked heart) it findes no good.* A man is then said to haue a crooked heart, when if you will lay to

T him

*Note.*

*Gal. 6.*

*Pro. 17. 18.*

A crooked  
heart how  
discouered.

Pfal. 125.

5  
Approving a  
mans selfe to  
Gods sight.

1 Cor. 2.

him any straight rule; that is, giue him any right precepts, tell him this you ought to doe, this is the iust course, this is the way you ought to hold, you shall never bring a crooked heart, and a straight line together, his heart will still be starting aside from it, it will not cleaue to it, it will not accommodate it selfe to that: for his heart is crooked. Therefore, when we giue straight Counsells to them that haue crooked hearts, we doe but loose our labour. If it were a straight heart, straight Counsell, and it would loone agree: such an expression you see *Pfal. 125. He that seekes himselfe in crooked wayes, I will lead him forth with the workers of iniquitie*; That is, when the inward bent of a mans heart is crooked, when it will not entertaine straight, or right Counsells, but is still jarring, and disagreeing with them, such a man *God* rejects: Therefore (sayth he) he will leade him forth with the workers of Iniquitie; That is, he will reckon him as a worker of Iniquitie, and so will he deale with him.

The last Expression, that I finde in Scripture, to set forth this perfection of heart is to doe every thing in *Gods* sight: When thou hast an eye vpon the *Lord*, as well as hee hath an eye vpon thee. So you shall finde, *1 Cor. 2. As of sinceritie in the sight of God*, where the second is an explication of the first, and so here, *Walke before mee, and be perfect*: That is, if a man walke before *God*, and approue himselfe to him, he is a perfect man, for that shewes the difference betweene perfecti-  
on



on and soundnesse of heart, and vnsoundnesse : the one is truly such as will endure the vtmost tryall, such as will endure even the eye of *God* himselfe, when that which is feigned, and counterfeit, will not endure it : so he is said to haue an vnsound heart, that, like a drugge, carries the name, and the shew of a true drugge, but it is not such as it is taken for, it hath a shew of a Diamond, or Pearle, and is not such ; but he is said to haue a sound heart, that will endure the touch-stone to the vtmost tryall ; that is able to say to *God*, *Lord thou knowest mine Innocencie, as David did, and Lord, I beseech thee, search my reynes, and my heart ; when one can say, as Hezekiah, Lord, thou knowest, that I haue walked with an upright heart.*

Now, I say, when a man is so entire, when there is such truth in him, that bring him to what touch-stone you will, let him be brought to the light, hee knowes his workes aright, he is not afraid, let *God* himselfe looke into his heart, that hath pure eyes, that can search every cranie of it, to whom every thing is naked, yet hee shall finde him true : that is, hee doth every thing, ( if *GOD* looke to the most inward retired thoughts,) in *Gods* sight, he approues himselfe to him, such a one hath a perfect heart. So much shall serue for the opening of this to you, what it is to bee a perfect man ; I will apply it very briefly.

You haue scene the ground why *God* requires perfection, and that no man can bee

A sound heart will endure the tryall in Gods sight.

*Vse 1.*  
To examine our selues whether we be perfect or no.

saved without it, let vs make this vse of it, to try our selues; let a man examine himselfe whether he be a perfect man, or no: you will say, how shall we doe it? Indee, I confesse it is a hard thing to doe: for men are *children in understanding*, and, as children are apt to be deceived with guilded things, they see the outsides to be faire, they see a faire peece of gold, but they are not able to finde out the base mettall, that is hid within; So it is our case, for the most part wee are not able to finde out this truth, whether our hearts be imperfect, and vnfound, and rotten, or no: Therefore we had neede of helpe, I will name one or two.

1. Propertie;  
A willingnesse  
to do and suffer  
any thing  
that God com-  
mands.

And this is one rule ( I take but such as I finde in Scripture ) that our Saviour giues, by which you may try your selues; sayth he to the young man, when he comes to professe to him, that he had done thus and thus from his youth, sayth he, *if thou wilt be perfect, goe sell all that thou hast*: As if he should say; wouldest thou know now if thou be perfect, that is, whether thou haue a sound heart, or no, *goe sell all that thou hast*: As if hee should say; thou shalt know it, by this, that is the meaning of the Rule, *Goe sell, &c.* Let a man looke round about him, if there be any thing in the world, any evill, any calamitic, that he is not willing to suffer; if againe, there be any blessing, any comfort, that he is not willing to part with, I dare boldly affirme it, that such a man is an vnfound hearted man: for example, put the case that such a thing befall him, as

Note.



whether it be thus broad, that is ( that I may expresse it fully to you ) whether you walke so exactly, that you haue not onely an eye to the main poynts of every Commandement, but you obserue the least particle of every Commandement, the least Iota, the least pricke, and poynt, that you finde in every Commandement. Except you doe this, I say, your hearts are not perfect: the scope of that Chapter is to require the exact keeping of every Commandement, to the least, and to the smallest things. And there are these three reasons put together, to confirme it.

Three reasons  
why we should  
be exact in  
keeping the  
Commande-  
ments.

One is this, ( sayth he, ) every jot of the Law, is of so much worth, though you thinke it a smal thing, *That it were better that heauen and earth should perish, then that it should.* It is of greater price then the whole world. Therefore the Lord, will not haue the least jote of the Law to perish.

Againe, sayth he, the *Pharises* would keepe the great Commandements, the principall poynt, and part of every Commandement; but the particles of it, the nicer poynts of it, they would not keepe. And, sayth he, *except your righteousnesse goe beyond theirs, except you goe further then they, you shall never be saved.*

Then the last is, that I named to you before, *you must be perfect, &c.* There must be such a latitude, for the extension of your perfection, though not for the intention, and degrees of it, as is in your heavenly Father, you cannot be saved else. Therefore, if you say, this is a hard  
con-

1

2

3

condition; *Beloved*, you must know this, that *Iesus Christ* hath given to all those that shall be saved *grace for grace*; that even as he requires perfection of obedience, in a latitude answerable to all the Commandements, to all the particles of them, even a perfection answerable to his owne perfection; so he hath given vs *grace for grace*, that is, he hath given vs an inward abilitie of graces which answer every Commandement, hee hath given vs *grace for grace*, as the Father giues limb for limb, part for part, there is not a little finger, not a toe, but the Father giues it the Sonne, so the Sonne of *God* giues to vs, *Moses brought the Law, but Grace comes by him*; and when he would shew what grace it is, it is grace of such a latitude, that it enables you *to be holy, as he is holy, in all manner of conversation*, there is another expression like that, *to be perfect as your heavenly Father is perfect*. Therefore, if you would haue the testimony of sinceritie, and perfection to your selues, take heede you neglect not the smallest things. I know how vsually it is found fault with, when men are so curious to looke to every moate (it is to be more nice then wise) it is too much straightnesse, and too much precisenesse, and exactnesse: but I beseech you, consider the ground, I will be bold to say this; that man that neglects the smallest thing, say it be vaine speech vpon the Sabbath day, say it be the neglect, or overly performāce of prayer from day to day, though he will not omit the maine dutie; though it be but a vaine speech, or vaine thoughts,

*Simile.*



thoughts, though it be that which the best are continually subject vnto, yet, if it be so that hee haue not continuall eye to them, so that he neglect not the smallest of these things, or if you can name any lesser Commandement, I say, let any mans heart be of this constitution, that he neglects them, that he hath not a speciall eye to the obseruance of them, a speciall care to keep them, he is vnfound, and rotten at the heart, he shall never be saved continuing such, for the confirmation of it, I will name but that one place, *Prov. 19. 16.* *He that keepes the Commandements, keepes his owne soule, but he that despiseth his way, shall dye for it :* That is, he that keepes the Commandements every way, that lookes to all the Commandements, and every particle of them, & sees how far they reach as they are particles of the Cōmandement. The Cōmandement saith, *thou shalt not kill*, but to be angry with thy brother, to admit an inward distemper of malice and envie in thy heart, this small thing, though it be but a transient passion, yet thou must make a speciall conscience of it. And so, *thou shalt not commit adulterie*; That is the main of the Cōmandement, yet, if thou haue an adulterous eye, an adulterous tongue, or adulterous thoughts in thee, these are the touches of vncleanness, the tinctures of it, I say, except thou makest conscience of these, and keepe the command thus farre in this extent, and thus exactly, thou doest not keepe thine owne soule, for *he that thus keepes the Commandements, keepes his soule*, but, sayth he, *he that despiseth his way*, that is the word

Neglecting  
the least of  
our wayes a  
note of vn-  
foundnesse.  
*Prov. 19. 16.*

word I meane to vrge, *he shall dye for it*; that is, he that thinkes thus with himselfe: Alas! these are poore, and small things, they are things of little moment, and therefore hee despiseth them; Well, sayth he, he that despiseth the least thing, he that despiseth any of his wayes; that is, the least particle of any Commandement, you see, what he saith, he doth not say, he shall be afflicted for it, but he shall dye for it. Therefore I pronounce this out of that place as well as the rest, that he that despiseth any of his wayes, any part of *Gods* Commandement, seeme the dutie to be of never so little moment, vnlesse he repent, and amend, he shall dye for it; for now he despiseth some of his wayes: *Beloved*, a godly man though he fayle much, yet this is an inseparable proper-  
 tie of a perfect heart, still he hath an eye vpon every thing, he doth not despise the least of his wayes, the least step, the least particle, the least tincture of the Commandement, but he hath respect to all.

So much for this time.

F I N I S.

Note.





# THE EIGHTH SERMON.

GENESIS 17. 1.

*Walke before me, and bee thou perfect.*



See now proccede to the rest of the properties of this perfection, that you may trye your selves by them; And we will hold the same course wee did, in opening to you the nature of this perfection: that is, wee will open to you those places of Scripture, wherein are expressed the proper effects of a perfect heart: And therefore, to that second we will adde this as a third that will keepe you from misunderstanding it: that is, we must be perfect, as our heavenly Father is perfect; that property of perfection you shall finde, 1 Iob. 3. 3. *Hee that hath this hope in him, purifieth himselfe, even as hee is pure.* So likewise, 2 Cor. 7. *Since wee have such*  
*promises,*

3. Property.  
He purifieth  
himselfe.  
1 Iob. 3. 3.

2 Cor. 7. 1.

Eccl. 30. 12.

promises, let vs cleanse our selves from all pollution of flesh and spirit: That is, those that have these promises and beleve them, will bee still cleansing of themselves: Contrary to which is that generation spoken of, *Prov. 30. 12. There is a generation that are pure in their owne eyes, but yet they cleanse not themselves from their filthyneffe.* So that, my beloved, to have a purified dilposition, to have a heart and a spirit ready to cleanse it selfe, this is to have a perfect heart: So that a godly man, he may bee many times defiled with sinne and uncleanneffe, hee may have his heart many times muddy and impure, he may have it clouded and overcast with passions and unruly affections, but yet it cleares up againe, and hee comes out of them all with more brightnesse, and with more clearenesse and purenesse of heart. The substance of it is this: we deny not that a godly man may fall into many finnes, into many impurities, into many defilements, but yet he ariseth out of them againe by an assiduous and daily repentance, and stil he growes up daily to more and more perfection; as *David*, and *Hezekias* and the rest; wheras, on the other side a man that hath an imperfect & unsound heart; though hee bee recovered out of a sinne againe, and againe, yet he returnes to it, as it is said, *2 Pet. 2. 14. men that have eyes full of adultery, that cannot cease to sinne: that which is said of that sinne there ( they cannot cease to sinne: that is, though they make many Covenants with God, to leave their sinne of uncleanneffe, yet they have*

An unsound  
heart cannot  
but relap.  
2 Pet. 2. 14.



have eyes full of adultery, that cannot cease to sinne, I say ) it is true of any other sinne, to which an unsound hearted man is given up, he cannot cease to sinne, as *Pro. 19. 19.* *A man of much anger shall suffer punishment though he be delivered, his anger shall come againe:* that is, though hee bee often punished for his anger, for his distempered anger and passion, though he finde many evill effects of it, and so be delivered from it by many purposes to returne to it no more; yet, saith he, his anger will come againe and againe; So that it is true which is said in the generall, *Let the foole bee beaten in a mortar,* yet he will returne againe to his folly & wickednes, it cannot bee beaten out of him: it is the nature of an unsound-hearted man, though he be often delivered, he will returne againe and againe. *Ierobam,* though he were admonished, yet still hee will returne: the *Israelites,* though they were often quieted, and satisfied, yet being a stiffe-necked people, they still rebelled and murmured against *God*; so did *Pharaoh*: so that you may take this for a sure rule, that, take a man whose heart is not sound, all the miracles in the world, all the preaching, all the admonitions, all the mercyes, all the afflictions, all the experience that he can gaine by all the passages of *Gods* providence towards him, and about him, will not keepe him from returning to his sinne, but still hee fals backe to it againe and againe it gets strength still; but with a man that hath a sound heart, that is perfect, it is not so,

*Pro. 19. 19.*

All Gods dealings will not keepe an unsound heart from sinne.

he doth not easily returne againe, but though he doth fall for a time ( as I deny not but he is many times overtaken with the same infirmity ) yet he still cleanseth himselfe.

*Object.*

But, you will object, take the holiest man, may he not relapse many times into sinne, may hee not fall into the same sinne againe and againe; yea, even into grosse, and great transgressions?

*Answer.*

A holy man may relapse into sinne.

Beloved, I cannot deny but he may, ( for we must not take away the righteousnes from those that are perfect, whilest wee seeke to exclude those that are hypocrites and unsound-hearted, and therefore I say ) I deny not that there may bee many relapses into the same sinne, though the heart be perfect and sincere; and therefore, to shew you plainly the difference, wee must spend a little time in this point. There are these foure differences betweene the turning againe of a man whose heart is unsound, and the relapses that are incident to a man whose heart is *perfect with God.*

4. Differences betweene alle relapses of found and unsound-hearted men.

1. Difference. A holy man gets ground of sinne by it.

First, you shall finde this difference between them, that a man whose heart is perfect with *God*, though he doe re'apse into sinne, yet still hee gets ground of his sinne, even by every relapse, (marke it) I say, he gets ground of sin, and grace gathers strength by it; whereas on the other side, an unsound-hearted man, the oftner hee falls the more sinne gathers strength, and even the goodnesse he seemed to have had, is lessened more and more, till at length it be quite abolished.



abolished. This is a point much to be observed.

The ground of it is this; because any grace, where it is a proper grace, where it is a right grace, let it bee wounded by any relapse, by any transgression, I say, it gathers strength even by that relapse, it is the nature of true grace so to doe; It gathers strength, even from the contrary, as fire doth when it is compassed about with coldnesse, by an Antiperistasis, so it is with grace: It is a common saying that you have, and true (as you commonly understand it) that vertue growes stronger when a man falls into affliction: but more true, if thus taken, that Grace gathers strength, when it selfe hath received a wound, when the Grace it selfe is weakned, as thou thinkest, it gathers more strength. As, for example, let a sound-hearted man, whose grace is true, and right and genuine, and not counterfeit, let him fall into any transgression that gives a wound to his graces, say he fall into any act of intemperance, of anger and passion, hee gathers more strength by it, these contrary graces they grow brighter by it: It is not so with other men, the more they fall the weaker they grow: *David*, when once he had committed the sinne of cutting off the lappe of *Sauls* garment, none was more carefull than he was, afterward, hee would not offer him the least violence: And so *Peter*, when the grace of courage and boldnesse for the Truth had once received a wound by his denying of *Christ*, you see what strength hee gathered by

*Similes.*

*Note.*

*Instances.*

Acts 4. 12.

2 Chron. 32. 25.

Corruptions  
discovered in  
relapses, that  
lay hid before  
in Gods chil-  
dren.

it, he grew afterwards the boldest of all the Apostles, As you see, *Acts 4.* So it is generall with all the Saints: even those words, by which it is expressed in the Scripture, discover as much unto us; *Hezekiah*, when he was falne into the sin of pride and boasting of his Treasure, saith the Text, *he humbled himselfe*: you shall finde, *2 Chron. 32. 25.* the words there used, are, the Lord tryed *Hezekiah*, the Lord left him, that hee might try him, and know all that was in his heart: The like phrase is used of *Peters* falling, *Satan desires to winnow thee, but I have prayed for thee, that thy faith doe not faile*: Now marke it, when they doe fall into any sinne, it is to them as a tryall to the Gold, and a winnowing to the Corne; every sinne, every temptation, every fall, though Satan intend to burne out the good metall, yet the issue still is this, they lose nothing by their fals, but their drosse, the Chaffe is all winnowed out; every sinne they fall into, discovers that corruption that before they tooke no notice of; as *Hezekiah* knew not the pride, before, that was in his heart, but that action discovered it to him; so it was thereby cleansed and emptied forth: So likewise *Peters* cowardlinesse and fearefulnesse was discovered by that act, hee knew it more, and therefore was more watchfull against it, hee gathered more strength against it: so that this is the nature of the relapses of the godly, that still they empty their hearts more and more of those sinnes that they fall into: againe,  
the



the graces to which they give a wound, still gather more strength; but with others it is not so, still they are weakned by their relapses, the good things they seemed to have, are still lessened, and suffer diminution, till at length they be quite abolished. That is one difference.

The second is, though a godly man fall backe to sinne againe and againe, yet he never fals backe to the allowance of any sinne: there is a great difference, my *beloved*, betweene these two, betweene returning to the act of a sinne, and the allowance of it: Another man doth not onely returne to the sinne, but hee returnes likewise to the continuance in it, he is ready, in the end, either to excuse the sinne, to finde out some device and excuse for it, or else he is ready to say, I see it is impossible for me to overcome it, I see there is no remedy, I must give up my selfe to it: This you shall see in the relapses of *Saul*; *Saul* tooke a resolution more than once, that he would persecute *David* no more; and no doubt this resolution was exceeding hearty for the time; but, you see, he did not onely returne to the act, but to a continuance in it, and an allowance of himselfe in it. So likewise did *Pharoah*, hee resolved many times that hee would let the people goe, and made that promise to *Moses* and to the *LORD*, that hee would let them goe; but, you see, he returned againe, not onely to the sinne, but to such an allowance of it, that hee excused himselfe in it, hee thought rather, he had erred in

2. Difference,  
A godly man  
allows him-  
selfe in no sin,  
the wicked do.

Instances.

his purpose of letting them goe, and so continued still to retaine them. This you shall finde in all the fals of Hypocrites, in all their relapses, that in the end (how-ever for a time they may resume their purposes againe) they weare them out, and they steppe backe to a resolution to continue in that sinne; they thinke thus with themselves, I see it is a sinne that prevailes against mee, I am not able to resist it; it is too strong for me, and therefore I will goe no more about it.

3. Difference.  
In their manner of rising.

Thirdly; as there is a difference in this; so there is a difference in their manner of overcoming, and in their manner of returning, when they arise out of a sinne, when they preserve themselves from it after a relapse, by which you may judge likewise; for you may judge the one by the other: A man whose heart is unsound, may take to himselfe a strong and fixed resolution, by which hee may resist the sinne, and yet this banke may bee borne downe by the violence of Temptation: But in a godly man the resistance is otherwise, and accordingly the relapse is of a different nature: for the resistance is after this manner, it is as when you see one streame resist another, as you see in Rivers that are subject to ebbing and flowing, there runnes a contrary streame that over-bears it; so it is in those that are sound-hearted, there is a strong inclination that carries them another way, such as was expressed, *Gal. 5. 17. The Spirit lusteth against the flesh: so that,*

*Similes.*  
How a sound heart resisteth sinne.

*Gal. 5. 17.*



that, if you marke the manner of their over-  
 coming, the manner of their rising out of  
 their relapses, you shall finde them to bee in  
 this manner; put the case the flesh, for some  
 brunt, for some fit, have gotten the better,  
 notwithstanding, saith he, the Spirit lusts a-  
 gainst it, and suffers not the flesh to doe what  
 it would; that is, there is a contrary streame  
 within him, which resists those desires of the  
 flesh, that bindes them againe, and leads them  
 captive, as before the Spirit was led captive:  
 In others it is not so; there may bee a certaine  
 fixed resolution, which may resist a strong  
 temptation, as a banke or a rocke resisteth a  
 strong billow: but there is a great deale of dif-  
 ference between this, and those risings out of re-  
 lapses that are done by a contrary streame, by  
 the lusting of the Spirit: for they have no such  
 spirit in them, to lust against the flesh, and so to  
 binde it, as it were, to overcome it, that they  
 returne no more to those sinnes, to which be-  
 fore they were given up.

Last of all, there is this difference betweene  
 them; hee that hath a perfect heart, he that  
 is sound-hearted, while hee is himselfe,  
 hee never relapseth into any sinne; marke it,  
 while hee is himselfe; which note I take  
 out of *Romanes 7.* a place which you know:  
*It is no longer I, but sinne that dwelleth in me:*  
 that is, as if hee should say, I, while I am my  
 selfe, never fall into any sinne; but when I am  
 distempered, when I am overcome, and over-  
 ruled

4. Difference.  
 A godly man,  
 when he is  
 himselfe, sins  
 nor.

Rom. 7. 20.

ruled by sinne, that dwelleth in me, then I sinne and fall backe: but, otherwise, I say, a godly man, while he is himselfe, never relapseth into any sinne, he cannot sinne, because he is borne of G O D, he keepes himselfe that the evill one touch him not; the ground of which is, because while he is himselfe, he that is in him, is stronger than all the world: 1 *Ioh.* 4.4. *He that is in you, is stronger, &c.* That is, if hee be upon even termes, still hee gets the victory. But now let there bee an inequality, let him not be himselfe, let there bee some violent transportation from the flesh, so that he is led captive by it, now he is overcome: for hee is not himselfe in such a case; it is, as *Paul* saith of himselfe, *the good I would doe, that doe I not, and the evill that I would not doe, that doe I:* that, as you see in a Combate betweene two, suppose that one that were the stronger, and were it upon equall termes, would carry the victory; notwithstanding, when his adversarie gets the hill, and hath the wind of him, he overcomes him, and leades him captive: so it is in this case; the Spirit, the regenerate part, though it might and would alwaies get the better, were it upon equall termes with the flesh; yet, when the flesh shall get the hill, as it were, get upon the hill of temptation, and shall have wind to drive the smoke upon the face and eyes of the Combatant, that is, to blinde him; in such a case, upon such a disadvantage, he is overcome, and falls into sinne: And therefore you see how the

Apostle

*Ioh.* 4.4.

*Simile.*

When the regenerate part is overcome.



Rom. 7. 21.

Apostle expresseth it, *Rom. 7. 22. I delight* (saith he) *in the Law of God, according to the inward man:* as if he should say, That is my constant course; might I doe what I would, That would I alwaies be doing; that is my inclination, there is my delight; but yet (saith he) *I see a Law of my members, rebelling against the Law of my minde,* leading me captive to the Law of sinne; that is, there is a strong power within me, that sometimes distempers me, and puts me out of my selfe: that he calls a Law; because it is commanding and powerfull like a Law; and the Law of my members, (whereas the other is called the Law of the mind) because, though it be through the whole soule, yet principally the force and vigour of it is seene in the members, that is, in the inferiour parts of the soule: saith the Apostle, when I am thus distempered, and put besides my selfe, when there is such a Law rebelling against the Law of my minde, in such a case, I am overcome, and led captive; but when I am my selfe, I sinne not, it is the sinne that dwels in me. So much shall serve to have shewed you the difference betweene those relapses which godly men are subject to, and those turnings and fallings backe into a continuance in sinne, to which other men are subject: For, my beloved, it must not seeme strange to us; for both are alike subject to infirmities, both are subject to returne; as you see, a sheepe may fall into the myre as soone as a swine, for the commission of sin, and so likewise for the omission of duties:

*Similes*

duties: an Appletree may have a fit of barrennes and unfruitfulness, as well as a Crabtree, or any other; but the difference is great in the manner of them, as we shewed: But still the maine difference is to be remembred, that he that hath a perfect heart, is still cleansing and purifying himselfe; the other doe not that, but so fall backe to sinne, that they wallow in it, as a Swine doth in the myre. So much shall serve for this.

4. Property,  
He presseth to  
the mark that  
is before him.

Phil. 3. 12, 15.

A fourth property of a *perfect heart*, you shall finde expressed, *Phil. 3.* if you take the words together, from the 12. verse to the 15. (for I say, the course we will hold, shall bee, to open to you those places, where the Scripture sets downe the characters and properties of *A perfect heart*;) *not as though I had already attained it, or were already perfect; but I follow after, if I may comprehend that, for which I am also comprehended by Iesus Christ, &c. I presse hard to the marke, for the price of the high Calling of GOD in Christ Iesus: Let therefore as many as bee perfect, be thus minded.* The meaning of it is this, saith the Apostle, this is my course: I have not yet attained to perfection; but, saith he, this I doe, I ayme at the utmost, even at *the price of the high Calling of God in Iesus Christ*: I ayme at the utmost, even at the toppe of perfection: and againe, saith he, *I follow hard to it*: And, saith he, not only I, but *as many as are perfect, let them be thus minded*: where, by the *perfect*, he meanes, you see, not one that hath already a perfect holinesse, but one that is sound-hearted: for, he  
had



had said before, *not as if I were already perfect*; and yet here hee saith, *Let us as many as be perfect, be thus minded*: so you shall find heere these two properties of a perfect man, of one whose heart is perfect with God.

First, he aymes at the highest degree of holinesse, hee lookes at the very marke it selfe, hee lookes at the toppe at the standard, at the utmost exact line of holinesse, and hee labours to square himselfe to it, though hee cannot reach it, yet it is his endeavour, hee propounds not to himselfe a shorter journeyes end than he should doe, but his ayme is even at the very toppe of perfection, at a perfect conformity to the Image of *Christ*; for that is it the Apostle here speakes of, that *wee may bee conformable to the Death and Resurrection of Iesus Christ*, this was his ayme: whereas on the other side, another, doth not so but hee sets a certaine compasse, a certaine limit to himselfe, there hee fixeth his staffe, hee doth not intend to goe any further, hee doth not intend to *grow up to full holinesse*, as it is expressed, *2 Cor. 7. 1.* hee doth not intend to be *holy as the Lord is holy, in all manner of conversation*, this is not his intent, this is not the thing hee aymes at. So herein they differ hee that hath a perfect heart, hee followes hard after the marke, hee aymes at the very toppe of perfection; and the ground of this difference is, partly, because a man that is unsound-hearted will not bee at so much cost and paines for heaven, as to ayme at the top of perfection,

he

Which consists,

1. In ayming at the highest degree of holinesse,

An unsound heart aymes not at perfect holinesse.

2 Cor. 7. 1.

He will not be at the cost and paines.

hee thinks thus with himselfe, that to bee so straitlaced, that he must be exact in every thing to observe all his speeches, that hee may not speake freely; and to give an account of all his time, and of all his actions, that he may not walke in many things according to his owne phantasies, according to his owne delight and pleasure, he thinks, if hee must bee tyed to this, that he may not, at any time, give the bridle to his humour and to his inordinate appetite, but still hee must be so restrained and fettered, and pinioned, as it were, to walke by an exact rule, that all his actions, and all his steps may be pondered; he thinks with himselfe, it is more than hee shall ever be able to doe; hee doth not indeed prize *Christ* and heaven at such a rate, that he will be thus exact and perfect; and therefore he aimes not at it, he never goes about it: And partly againe; because *God* indeede is not his ayme but his owne safety, his owne happinesse and security, his owne escaping of Hell and Iudgment: therefore hee doth not seeke simply to please *GOD*, and to keepe his Commandements, but he seekes so much perfection as will serve his owne turne; and therefore hee doth with it, euen as a lazie scholler doth, that intends not simply to excell in learning, but would have so much learning as should passe through examination, and get a degree; or as a man that labours not simply to get an excellency in the Art of Arithmeticke, but would have so much only as would keepe a Marchants

booke;

2.  
He aymes not  
at God, but  
himselfe.

Simile.



booke ; or as a Lawyer that would have so much Law onely as will serve his turne, as will serve his practice : I say, when a man aymes at this, you doe not say knowledge is his ayme, for were it so, hee would desire to know whatsoever is knowable, hee would set no limits to himselfe, were knowledge his ayme simply : but wee may say truely of such a man, it is not learning, but it is his trade, his degree, or some such particular thing, that is his ayme : So it is with a man whose heart is unsound, and not perfect with God : God himselfe is not his ayme, and therefore hee doth not desire to keepe his Commandements perfectly and exactly : for did he so, hee would set no limits to himselfe, he would doe as *Paul* doth here, hee would ayme at the utmost degree of perfection ; but such mens ayme is their owne profit, their owne advantage, their security and deliverance from Hell and from Iudgements : that is, they doe not care for holinesse simply considered, but so far as it may serve such a turne, as it may deliver them from such a Iudgement, as it is a bridge to lead them over to such a benefit to themselves.

And the last ground of this difference between them, that they ayme not at the utmost degree, is, because an unsound-hearted man hath not so much light in him, as to discover to him to shew to him the utmost degree of perfection. A man that hath but a morall light, a naturall, common light, is able to see grosse Evils, and common duties that are contrary to them :

3.  
He wants light  
to discover exact  
holinesse.

them ; but the exactnesse of perfection that is required, he sees not ; or if hee doe discern it, practised by others, yet in his judgement hee disallows it, he thinks it is a thing more than needs. Whereas a man that is sound-hearted, one that is perfect, hee approves it, he sees an excellency in it, hee admires it in others, and would faine imitate it himselfe : and hence is the difference, those that are unsound, they ayme not at perfection ; it is not their scope, they desire not the utmost, the highest degree of holinesse ; whereas a man that hath a sound heart, still he labours to adde to that which is wanting, in his faith, in his love, in his obedience: And this is one difference, that hee that is perfect (saith he) is *thus minded*.

2 A perfect heart followes hard to the marke.

The second is ; *hee followes hard*, hee doth not onely make the marke his utmost ayme, but hee followes after it hard ; that is, it is the property of a man that is perfect, that hee doth not loyter in the way, but hee followes hard to the marke though hee bee subject to many decayes, to many swervings and declininges, yet still hee makes them up againe, still hee repaires those breaches in his heart ; and though many times he step out of the way, still hee recovers himselfe againe ; so that his constant and ordinary worke is, every day to make his heart perfect ; where he finds any crookednesse to set it straight againe ; where hee finds any defect, hee labours to supply it ; this is his ordinary and constant course : So, *be-  
loved*



loved, you shall finde this difference betweene a man that is imperfect, and another that is sound hearted, that the one still amends his heart, hee still makes it up, he still brings it to a good temper, that is his worke from day to day, that hee sets it right and straight before *God* in all things: and you shall see such an expression, *Mat. 18. 1.* there the Disciples aske *Christ* this question; *Master,* (say they) *who shall bee the greatest in the Kingdome of God?* Our Saviour takes a little childe, and sets him up amongst them, and saith, *Except you be converted as one of these little children, you shall not enter into the Kingdome of God.* The meaning is this, I see there is a pride arising in your hearts, you are looking after great things for your selves, this ariseth of a selfe-concept you have; I tell you (saith hee) Except you convert from this evill, except you turne your selves from it, except you become as this childe, and empty your selves of this pride, and become humble, as this childe, become little in your owne eyes, as this childe is, you shall not enter into the Kingdome of Heaven. So that the meaning of it is this; that a man who is sound-hearted, he is still following hard, hee is still making his heart perfect from day to day, he is still turning to *God* againe and againe, as it is said, *Lam. 3. 40.* *Let us search and try our wayes, and turne againe to the Lord:* that is, it is his constant worke: My beloved, this is the nature of a mans heart, still there is something or other arising amisse in it, as you see

A Christians  
daily worke to  
reforme his  
heart.

*Mat. 18. 1, 2, 3.*

*Lam. 3. 40.*

*Simile.*

see weedes in a Field. As it is in a Corne field, except you weed it, and till it, and plow it, and manure it, and never give it over, it will bee overgrowne with weedes, and wax Fallow againe, and not be fit to beare Corne with any constancy; so it is with our hearts, except wee still plow them, and weede them, and watch over them, they will be ready to grow fallow, they will be ready to bee overgrowne: therefore I say, it is the property of a man that is *perfect*, he is still returning, and making up the breaches and defects; as wee see, *2 Ioh. 8. Let us looke to our selves, that wee lose not the things that wee have wrought, but that wee may receive a full reward:* Marke, let us looke to our selves, that we lose not the things wee have wrought; as if he should say, even those that are *perfect*, that are sound-hearted, there is this property in them, (though he deliver it by way of exhortation, yet it is a property that is never separate from them) they still looke to themselves; that they lose not the things they have wrought: and see, my *beloved*, there is great reason for it: for a man may lose all that he hath wrought, he may lose his reward altogether, as you see, *Rev. 3. 11. Take heed, hold that thou hast, lest another take thy Crowne.* You know, *Ioash* went farre, and so did *Iehu*, and so did those *Israelites* in the *Wildernesse*; and yet they lost their reward, for not looking to themselves: but this is for those that may fall quite away: But for the *Elect*, that can never fall quite away, this diligence

*2 Ioh. 8.*

*Rev. 3. 11.*

gence



gence is required, and is proper to them; they still looke to themselves, lest they lose that which they have wrought, lest they should not receive a full reward: for, though they cannot lose their reward altogether, yet they may lose a part of their reward; as, you see, *David* did, because he did not looke narrowly to himselfe, he did not follow hard to the marke (for in some things they may faile, though it bee their property to looke to themselves; that I expresse to you by the way: I say, part of their reward they may lose, for) the Sword departed not from his House: if, like those builders, 2<sup>d</sup> *Cor. 3.* *you build hay and stubble, you shall bee saved, (if your hearts be upright) yet as by fire: that is, you shall be scorched by the fire, it shall have some impression upon you, something or other upon your name, or some other judgement; somewhat you shall have; but this is their property, They looke to themselves, that they lose not the things they have wrought, but that they may receive a full reward:* For still they are apt to fall backe from the degree they have attained: And againe, the sintull lusts they thought they had mortified, are ready to returne: now *he that is perfect, is thus minded,* hee not onely aymes at the utmost, but from day to day, he makes up the defects that he finds in his heart, and againe, labours to bring downe, and to mortifie those lusts that are renewed, and begin to gather a new strength, and to bud forth againe; this is their property: so, I say, if thou

A wicked man loseth all, a Christian may lose a part of his reward,

2<sup>d</sup> *Cor. 3. 12.*

1. Reason.

2. Reason.

wouldest know whether thou be perfect, marke what thy ayme is, whether thou ayme at the utmost degree of holinesse, or whether thou set limits to thy selfe; and likewise, whether thy constant course be, to make thy heart perfect with *God* from day to day, and to walke exactly with him; whether thou bee carefull to husband thy time, that thou mayest have leasure to doe it: for, my beloved, a man cannot doe a thing exactly, except hee have time to doe it in: And therefore, *Eph. 5. walke exactly, not as fooles, but as wise, redeeming the time*: As if hee should say, if you would walke exactly, redeeme the time, it is your wisdome; for else your lose all your labour: walke exactly, and not as fooles; for else you had as good doe nothing at all; be so farre wise, that you doe not lose the things you worke; and to doe this, redeeme the time that you may have leasure to doe it: I say, consider whether you bee willing so to husband time, to gaine so much leasure from your other calling and affaires, that you can spend time to search your hearts, in trying your wayes, in setting all things straight within you, that you may walke perfectly with *G O D* from day to day. So much for this property likewise; *so many as are perfect, let them be like-minded.*

The next property of this perfectnesse of heart, you shall find in those two places compared together, *Ier. 3. 10. They have not returned to me with their whole heart, but fainedly*: if you compare that with *Hosea 7. 14. the Lord there*

*Eph. 5. 15, 16.*

5. property,  
It is a whole  
heart.  
*Ier. 3. 10.*

*Hos. 7. 14.*



complaines, though they did returne and sanctifie a Fast, and did seeke him very devoutly, saith hee, *you returned not to the most High, but against mee have you rebelled.* The meaning of both places is this; They have not fought mee with their whole heart, but feynedly; the word *Feynedly*, shewes, that by whole heart, hee meanes there, a true heart: So that, as you would judge now of an unsoundhearted friend, you say, he is not perfect, hee is not sound, he is not true, when his actions carry a shew and appearance of love, and his heart doth not answer it; There is a dissonancy betweene the appearance hee makes, and his heart: His heart is known by this, hee loves not the person of his friend; Hee may observe him, for some other respects, but his person hee doth not inwardly respect: So, if a man would know whether his heart be perfect with G O D, let him consider whether hee doe not as false-hearted men are wont to doe, that observe other men out of respects, because they see those parties have power to doe them good or hurt, therefore they are diligent to observe them, as the Apostle saith, *They have the persons of men in admiration, because of advantage:* That is, they have them in admiration, they are very obsequious to them, ready to doe them offices of friendship; But it is for their owne advantage, not because they love their friends, they are not affected to their persons. Contrarie to this is singleness of heart, when wee *love not*

Whole heart  
what it is

*in the word only, but indeed and in truth:* when we love with a pure love, such a man, we say, comes to be perfect with his friend: and so it is in this case, when a man lookes on *God*, as one that hath power to doe him good or evill, as one that hath power to advance him, or to cast him downe and out of these respects he serves him, and obeyes him, and will doe many things for his sake; but yet he doth not serve him with a single heart; that is, he doth not inwardly love the person of *God*, he doth not looke on him as he is separate from al punishments and rewards, as he is sequestred from all such respects, so as to be hearty to him.

Unfound men  
seeke not God  
for himselfe.

This was the fault of the Jewes; saith he, they returned againe, but to whom was it; to their corne, to their oyle, and not to the most High: they returned, and were very devout to keepe the Fast, ready to heare, *but against mee they rebelled.* The meaning of it is this; the *Jewes* returned to the *Lord*, they were carefull to please him, but it was because they desired freedome from the famine and war, and other calamities; and therefore they served the *Lord*, but they did not lay hold on *God* himselfe, upon the graces and comforts of the Spirit, upon Eternall life, these were not the things they did inwardly respect; and therefore *God* himselfe they loved not, to him they did not returne, (as you shall see, because I will use that expression of laying hold on *God*, and on Eternall life, *1. Tim. 6.*) when the Apostle had spoke there of divers men



men that are contentious, hee puts these two properties together ; they are exceeding contentious and covetous, *they reckon gaine godlines; but thou*, saith hee, doe not so ; *but fight the good fight offaith*: doe not contend with such a kinde of contention, and in such a manner as they doe: and againe, saith hee, when they lay hold on wealth and preferment, and such advantages, do thou lay hold upon *eternall life*. I say, this was the case of the Iewes, they layd hold on such benefits as a carnall man is capable of, such as indeed they conceived to come from the *Lords* hands only, and therefore they returned unto him but they did not lay hold upon *G O D* himselfe upon eternal life, upon the spiritual priviledges, & promises of grace, and therefore they returned to him but fainedly ; that is, they did not seek the face of *God*, that which is required, *2 Chron. 7. 14. If my people humble themselves, and seeke my face*: that is, seeke my presence: this they did not.

2 Chron. 7. 14.

A sound hearted man seeks the Lord himselfe.

Now with those that have sound hearts, it is not so, but they seeke the *Lord* himselfe ; they are thus minded, that if they may have the *Lord* himselfe, though they bee stripped of all things else, they doe not much heed it ; though they passe through evil report, though they lose their estates, let them bee put into what condition they can bee, yet they are content to have the *Lord* alone for their portion, for they looke on him as an *exceeding great reward*: as long as they may have his love, as long as they may

have him, though alone, they care for nothing else: thus they are affected. When GOD puts them to it, as you see, *Naomi* put *Ruth* and her other daughter to it, saith shee, Wilt thou goe with me? I have nothing for thee, *Gods* hand is gone out against me, I have no more sonnes in my wombe; or, if I had, thou wouldest never stay till they were of age: When they were put to it thus, one daughter forsooke her, namely, *Orpah*, and returned backe to her people; But *Ruth* gave her this answer; Bee it so, yet whither thou goest, I will goe, I will dwell where thou dwellest, I will never forsake thee: So it is with the Saints, they choose the *Lord*, though alone, they cleave to him alone, they reckon it reward enough, if they may have him, as you see *Abraham* did, as *God* said to him, I my selfe will be thy exceeding great reward; he would not so much as take any thing from the King of *Sodome*, Why? Because, saith hee, it shall never bee said that he hath made *Abraham* rich: *God* alone shall make me rich, he is reward enough, hee is *Allsufficient*, I will not take any of these things in with him: All the Saints are thus minded, they are contented with *God* alone, because they looke on him as an *Allsufficient* reward, they have a good opinion of him, and therefore they forsake him not; whereas others have been in admiration of him, but for advantage, when they have gotten what they would have, and are delivered from what they feare, they start aside, like a broken Bow, *Hosea* 7. the



place before named, as you see *Ieroboam*, 2 Chr. 22.1. Saith the Text, the *Lord* helped him till he was strong, and *when hee was strong, hee and all Israel departed from following the Lord.*

2 Chron. 22.1

And so *Vzziah*, 2 Chronic. 26. It is said, the *Lord* helped him till hee was mightie, and what then? When hee had gotten what hee would have, *his heart was lifted up to his destruction*: That is, hee served *God*, as it were, a slippery tricke; then he departed from him, when he had gotten what hee desired, which was a signe hee did not returne to the *Lord*, or that he did serve him with his whole heart, but feynedly; he did not seeke the *Lord* himselfe, hee did not seeke his face and presence.

2 Chron. 26.7,  
16.

And the ground of all this is, because they have no constant fixed good opinion of *God*, but they thinke well of *God* for fits and for times, as we see the *Israelites* did; They would follow *God* for such a time in the *Wildernesse*, after hee had refreshed them, and delivered them; but as soone as new trouble came, when they wanted bread, and water, and flesh, presently they murmured againe, and grew discontented. And so *Ioram* King of *Israel*, when he was pressed with famine, saith he, I will wayt no longer upon the *Lord*, but he would needes take away *Elisha's* head, the Man of *God*, that exhorted him to wayt on *GOD*. Thus it is with men, they have no constant good opinion of *GOD*; But it is not so with the *Saints*; They have knowne the *LORD* himselfe, *hee hath shewed*  
his

Vnsound men  
thinke well of  
*God* by fits.

his owne selfe to them, that good opinion they have of him, is fixed and established; it is the *Lord* himselfe that hath taught it them; and that which they have beene confirmed in by long experience, and therefore they will never forsake him, nor part from him; it is hee himselfe whom they have chosen. And this is the next difference betweene an unsound-hearted man, and he that hath a perfect heart, that he seekes the *Lord* himselfe, his heart is perfect with him, when another returnes not to the most High, but remains to serve him for other ends, and for other respects; but against the *Lord* himselfe, when he hath served his turne, he is ready to rebell.

6. Poverty.  
He accounteth the Gospel wisdom,  
1 Cor. 2. 6.

The next property you shall find, 1 Cor. 2. 6. *Howbeit we speake wisdom to those that are perfect, not the wisdom of this world, or of the Princes of this world, but the wisdom of God in a misterie, even the hidden wisdom that GOD hath ordained before the world to our glory:* Here is another property the Holy Ghost sets downe of a perfect-hearted man; the Apostle, when he had said, I come not among you with the excellency of wisdom, or the words of man, but my ayme is, my desire is, as to know Christ crucified alone, so to teach nothing else to you, and to preach to you in the plaine evidence of the Spirit, and of power; whereas it might bee objected, I but, *Paul*, every man thinks not so, many men thinke you would doe better, if you would preach as other men doe,



doe, and be curious and quaint of Oratory:saith he, these things,as I deliver them,whatsoever they may seeme to other men, yet to those that are perfect, they seeme wisdom; though others may despise it, and reckon it foolishnesse, yet to the perfect it is wisdom. So that I gather hence, a perfect man in this is distinguished from another that is not sound hearted, that hee hath eyes to see the wisdom of the Holy Ghost he knowes wisdom.

Now a perfect man is there so called, in opposition to him that is only *animalis*, that hath only a reasonable soule and no more; for that is the word, the same word that is used in another place of this Chapter, the naturall man, it is translated, but the word in the Original signifies a man that hath only naturall abilities, and endowments, and naturall perfections, such a man is reckoned an imperfect man, a man that is not sound: But saith the Apostle to a man that is perfect, that is, to a man that hath, besides the strength of naturall gifts, the sanctifying Spirit that enlightneth him, that the Spirit of G O D possesseth and informes his soule, it joynes with his soule, it is dwelling in him; such a one is a perfect man, saith hee, and you shall know him by this, hee discernes the wisdom of G O D, hee judgeth aright of it: so that, my *beloved*, the meaning of it is this, there is a certaine wisdom of God, there are certain things, that no naturall man in the world reaches or relishes: take the hypocrite, that goes the furthest  
in

A man meerly  
naturall is an  
imperfect man

Heb. 6. 4, 5.

in the profession of holinesse, even as farre as the second or third ground, even as farre as those, *Hebr. 6.* that were much enlightned, and had *tasted of the power of the world to come*, yet this wildome that we speake of here (we speake the wisdome of *God*) consists of such things as they never knew; Certaine things that the most knowing Man that lives in the Church of *God*, that is not regenerate, can never know them, as he saith, ver. 9. *such as eye never saw, &c.* signifying thus much, the eye and the eare are the senses by which knowledge is gathered; yet Mans eye never saw, and his eare never heard, &c. and his heart, that is more active than eyther of them, never understood them.

You will say, What are these things? They are expressed by divers names in this Chapter, They are called the wisdome of *G O D*, they are called the wisdome of *G O D* hid in a Mysterie, the deepe things of *God*, the things of the spirit of *God*, the things that are given us of *God* for our glory: *Beloved*, these are things that no unsound-hearted Man did ever sound; And therefore I will be bold to say to you, if ever you knew these things, if ever you reckoned these things wisdome, certainly your hearts are perfect, you are not meere naturall men, but you have received the Spirit of *God*, that is, the sanctifying and enlightning Spirit of *God*.

Quest.

But you will say, How can it be, that a naturall man should never know these things?

Answ.

*Beloved*, I say, it may bee very well: for they are



are things that no Minister in the World can teach you; wee may propound them to you, and you may heare them seven yeeres and seven; you may read the very same things in the Scriptures, and in other Bookes, a thousand times over, and yet, for all this, not understand them: It is *the wisdom of GOD in a Myserie*; and they are *the deepe things of GOD*: As a man may looke on a Trade, and never see the mystery of it, he may looke on artificiall things, pictures, or any thing else, and yet not see the Art by which they are made; as a man may looke on a Letter, and yet not understand the sense, something there is that he sees, and something that he sees not, nor it enters not into his heart; (and therefore it is said, *seeing, they see not*; which argueth that there is something that they see.) Thus there are some things, there is a wisdom of GOD, that an vnfound-hearted man can never know, it can never enter into his heart: which wisdom therefore if thou hast, certainly thou art a perfect man.

You will say, How shall a man know whether he know this wisdom or no, whether he thus judge of the wayes of GOD?

I answer; You shall know whether the wisdom you have, be such as belongs to perfect men, or no, by these foure things, which I will deliver distinctly unto you.

First, you shall finde this, that when this knowledge is discovered to a man, it exceedingly humbles him, all other knowledge doth not  
so,

The naturall man knoweth not the things of God.

*Quest.*

*Ans.*

Foure markes whereby to know this wisdom.  
1. It humbleth a Christian.

So, it rather puffes him up: But this brings a man exceedingly out of conceit with himselfe, it makes him to stand amazed at himselfe; that is the property of this wisdom, which shewes it selfe to be perfect: and the reason is, because it is a sanctified discovering wisdom; a wisdom, which that Spirit that gives it, enables him to make this use of, that hee useth it as a Lanthorne to his feet, as a light to discover the crookednesse of his wayes, to finde out the defects, to which he is subject, both in his heart, and in his conversation; therefore this wisdom discovers him, and opens him to himselfe; whereas the knowledge of any naturall man, or that any hypocrite hath in the World besides, opens him not to himselfe properly, but rather lifts him up, he useth it to reprove others, he useth it for other purposes, hee holds it as a light to other mens feet, hee makes not this use of it, to search the inside of his owne heart, he searcheth not every defect and cranny of his soule with it, and he finds not out himselfe what he is. Therefore, you see, as soone as they have been enlightned with this wisdom, (*Paul* and others) how they were confounded in themselves, how unworthily they thought of themselves. That is the first property of this wisdom, to humble.

2. He knowes things as he ought.

Another property is, He that hath that wisdom revealed to him, that is proper only to the perfect, those things that he knowes, he knowes them as he ought to know them; whereas another



other man, though he know exceeding much, yet hee knowes nothing as he ought to know, as we see, *1 Cor. 8. 2.* *He that thinkes he knowes any thing, knowes nothing yet as he ought to know it, saith the Apostle; hee knowes not sinne as he ought to know it, he knowes not the promises of grace, he knowes not eternall life, hee knowes not these as hee ought to know them: for, did hee; hee would be wrought upon by them; if he did know G O D as he ought, hee would feare G O D with all his heart, and with all his soule, and with all his strength; so, if he did know sinne as he ought, he would make it his chiefest sorrow, he would abhorre it, hee would not come neere it, hee would cleanse himselfe from it, he would flye from it, as from a Serpent, upon all occasions: So, did he know remission of finnes, hee would not esteeme so lightly of it as he doth, but hee would seeke it earnestly, even as a condemned man doth his Pardon. So that is the difference; they know not these things as they ought to know them; for; *beloved,* this is to be observed, when any man is converted to *God* by the revelation of this wisdom, he doth not alwaies know new things, he hath not new things revealed unto him; more than he knew before, but the same things he knowes now as hee ought to know; whereas before, though hee knew them, hee knew them not as he ought to know them: hee never knew sinne what it was, hee never knew what grace was, all those promises and threatnings*

*1 Cor. 8. 2.*

An unfound man, though he know much, knoweth it not as he ought.

Conversion is wrought by knowing things otherwise than we did before.

nings, all that wisdom of *God* revealed in the Booke of *God*, in the holy Scriptures, he never knew it as he ought, therefore it is not profitable to him, to bring him home, and worke a change. This is the second difference.

3. He discernes things that differ.

Thirdly; Wisdom to the perfect, is such wisdom, as enables him to distinguish of things that differ, he is able to discern between good and evil, as you shall see an expression of it, *Heb. 5. but strong meate belongs to those that are perfect*: (for so it ought to be translated, and so it is in the Originall) the old Translation, *by reason of custome*; and the new, *by reason of use*: but neither is so full as the originall, *by reason of habit*, in respect that they *have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil*: that is, hee that hath this true wisdom, he hath such a distinguishing facultie, that, as the taste discernes of meate, or, as a man that is accustomed to taste Wine, can easily discern between good and bad, so, (not by meere custome, as other men have it, but) by a certaine wisdom that is infused into you, you are able to discern betweene good and evil, even as the senses doe: (for that is the scope of the place.) As the senses discern betweene colour and colour, betweene taste and taste, so there is an ability in those that are perfect, to discern betweene good and evil: so that, take such a man to whom this wisdom is revealed, you shall finde such an aptnesse in him to discern betweene good and evil; that is, hee knowes  
the

Simile.

aliquis



the voice of the Shepheard, hee knowes and discernes between that which is good, and that which is counterfeit ; hee knowes morall goods and evils, what is to be chosen, and what to be refused ; this hee knowes, such a distinguishing faculty he hath, this is proper to those that are perfect; the like you shall have expressed, *Rom. 12. be renewed in the spirit of your mind, that you may discern the good will of God* : that is, that you may distinguish between the good will that is truly perfect, and that which is not his will ; This property will follow a minde that is renewed, hee will bee able to discern what another cannot.

Rom. 12:2.

Lastly, that I may conclude ; Hee to whom this wisdom is revealed, he that is *perfect*, there is a wondrous change in his judgement ; that which before seemed foolishnesse to him, now hee reckons it to bee true wisdom ; and that which before was the greatest wisdom, now it appears to be foolishnesse; as a Child, when hee is growne to yeeres, and is perfect, the things that before he magnified, now hee disregards them; & the things that before hee made no account of, now they are prized and esteemed ; such a difference there is, such a change in the judgement, when once this wisdom is revealed. So it is in other things : take a yong beginner in any thing, a young Scholler, hee judgeth otherwise of the exercise of what hee learns, than when hee is growne to maturity ; as wee see, a man that is unacquainted with

4. His judgement is changed:

Simile.

Simile.

Musicke, that hath no skill in it, the common tunes like him best ; but when hee growes a skilfull Musitian, he cares not for them ; those that have more perfect Musicke in them, those he regards when hee hath a more skilfull care : so, that is the meaning of the Apostle, *we speake wisdom to those that are perfect* ; as if hee should say, they are able to discern things, their judgement is another kind of judgement than yours is, or than their owne was before ; that which they could finde no relish in, no taste, when they are perfect once, they finde a more excellent use in it than others : so that this change of judgement, judging otherwise both of the persons and of the things, argues they are perfect. And this is the last signe that I will now name to you, of this property heere spoken of, *we speake wisdom to those that are perfect* : that is, it is the property of those that are perfect, to reckon that wisdom to be wisdom indeed.

So much shall ser ve for this time.

FINIS.

THE





# THE NINTH S E R M O N .

GENESIS 17. 1.

*Walke before me, and bee thou perfect.*



**B**Efore wee delivered to you certaine properties or adiuncts which are not disjoyned from this sincerity or integrity of heart: That which wee have now to doe, is to shew you the effects of it, what operation it hath in the heart.

First, you shall finde this to bee one proper effect of it, that it teacheth a man to exalt GOD in all his waies, to lift up GOD in all his waies, above himselfe, above his owne ends, above any thing that tends to his owne happinesse: for indeede herein is sincerity of heart seene, when a man prefers GOD before himselfe in all things: for hollownesse and unsoundnesse of heart

Effects of sincerity.

1. It exalteth God,

Psal.<sup>4</sup> 138.13.

heart is in this, when one prefers himselfe before *God*: it is a sure rule, and it is practised by all the Saints, which you have, *Psal.* 138.13.

*Thy Name O Lord,* (saith the Prophet there) *is onely to be exalted.* The meaning is this, when a man hath any businesse to doe, when he hath any designe or project in his thoughts, he is not to thinke how hee shall advance himselfe, or any end of his owne, but (saith hee) *O L O R D* thy Name only, thy Name onely is to bee exalted. Such an expression you shall finde, *Prov.*

Prov. 4.8.

4.8. speaking of wisdome and describing the sincerity of their hearts that sought it; it is expressed by this phrase, *Exalt her, and she shall exalt thee*: that is, looke not to thy selfe, to the way that thine own heart shall suggest to thee; but what way wisdome and godlinesse shall propound, exalt and prefer those wayes before thine owne, and let wisdome alone forexalting of thee, take thou no care for that, *exalt her*: And it is a phrase frequently used in the Scriptures, that *G O D* is to be exalted, to be lift up: the meaning of it is this; as when a man takes another and sets him upon his shoulders, that he onely might be preheminent, that he onely might appeare, and bee exposed to view, and himselfe stand in the crowd, and not be seene; so when a man exalts *G O D* in all his wayes, that he may have advancement, and honour, and preheminance, though himselfe appeare to bee no body; this is to exalt *G O D*, and this is the proper effect of sincerity and integrity of heart.

Another

r. In matter  
of profit.

01. 11. 11.  
11. 11. 11.



Another man whose heart is not sound, howsoever hee may exalt *God* in many things, hee may exalt him in many Commandements, he may seeme to seeke him, and to seeke him diligently, yet he doth all in such a manner, that he may exalt himselfe, and his owne ends, above the *Lord*: you shall best see it in particulars.

The Pharises did many good workes, (saith the Text) *they did them to be seene of men*: that is, they had an eye to themselves, that themselves might be exalted in what they did, that they might be seene, that they might be heard: And so *Iehu*; though he were imployed in an honourable service, and hee did it diligently, which was to avēge the quarrell of *God* against the House of *Achab*, and so did it, that he went through with his worke, yet hee had an eye upon himselfe all the while: *Come and see*, (saith he) *my zeale for the Lord of Hosts, &c.* as if hee should say, indeed I doe all this for *God*; but hee secretly intimates in his speech, before hee was aware, that it was the appearance and preheminance of himselfe, that he might have the praise of the zeale and diligence that he showed in the worke, he exalted himselfe.

Look upon the Saints now, and you shall see a quite contrary disposition. *John Baptist* takes this resolution to himselfe, saith he, let me even decrease, that is my condition, I am content to doe so, and let *Iesus Christ* increase; so he be exalted & honoured, I am content to decrease, I am content to wither in my honour and

Instances of  
men exalting  
themselves.

Of men exalting  
God.

2 Cor. 4. 5.

reputation which I have had, so the *Lord* may receive advantage by it: So likewise *Paul* is an excellent example, 2 *Cor.* 4. 5. saith he, *I doe not preach my selfe, but the Lord Iesus, and my selfe your servant for his sake.* I doe not preach my selfe, the meaning is this; saith he, in my preaching, my ayme is not that I might set forth my selfe, that men might looke on mee, on my wit, on my learning, on my eloquence; no, saith hee, I desire that I might be concealed, as it were, that I might bee obscured and hidden in the world, and that *Iesus Christ* might onely appeare, that hee might be seene, that those that heare me, may have their thoughts and affections carryed to him alone; I am but a spokesman, but the friend of the Bridegroom, I would have your affections bestowed on him, therefore I set out him altogether; for his sake I am your servant, and I carry my selfe as a servant, that still my Master may have honour, This *Paul* did, and thus he exalted the *Lord*. And so *Moses*; w<sup>h</sup>en the Spirit of *God* was powred upon many of the people, that they grew up to some ripeness of gifts, and so seemed to bee more equall with him, *Moses* seemed to bee obscured by this meanes, in the opinion of *Iosuah*, who comes and tels him, *Doe*st thou not see what these men doe? *Moses* answered againe, hee was very well contented, So *God* might have honour, that himselfe should be somewhat obscured and lessened; *Doe*st thou envy for my sake? And this is the disposition of all the Saints,



Saints, that looke what *Ioab* did in the case of *Rabbah* the Citie, when hee besieged it, and was ready to take it, he sent to *David*, saying, come thou and besiege it, lest the Victory bee attributed unto mee; the same the Saints are exceeding careful of, that God might still have the preheminance, that still, whatsoever victory they have, whatsoever worke they doe, it might be attributed to G O D, and not to themselves, this is their constant disposition to exalt him: Therefore you see how jealous the Apostles were of it, *Acts 4. 12.* when the people were ready to exalt them for the Miracle they had wrought, say they, in some indignation, *why looke you on us, as if wee by our godlinesse had done the worke, to make this man whole? No, say they, the Lord hath done it, that hee might exalt his Sonne.* They were carefull to preferre, and to exalt him: and heerein indeed our sincerity consists. This is an instance for matter of honour, that in any matter of credit, it is the disposition of those whose hearts are upright, who walke before God perfectly, to exalt the Lord, and to set him above themselves.

*Acts. 4. 12*

So likewise it is in all matters of advantage, and profit: the heart of an upright man saith thus; so God and the Church may be gainers, it is no matter though I be a loser; so God may have honour, and his people be saved, and the worke goe on, and the Gospell may have free passage, it is no matter what becomes of mee. You see, this disposition was in *Moses*, and in

2. In matter of profit.

*Paul: saith Moses, Let my name bee blotted out of the Booke of life, let me lose all my reward and recompence, so the Church of G O D may bee safe: and so Paul, though I bee separate from Christ, yet, so the Church of the Iewes may bee safe, so Christ may bee honoured in their worshipping of him, and cleaving fast to him, it is no matter; there is that scope in it. So likewise Act. 20. 24. there is an excellent expression, saith the Apostle, I passe not, my life is not deare to me; so the ministration be fulfilled, that I have received, to testifie the grace of G O D: that is, though I bee a loser every way; though my life be in danger and in hazard, though many other afflictions may befall me of divers kinds, I passe not for them, so the ministration may be fulfilled, so the Lord may be exalted, so the grace of God may bee testified, I passe not, I heed it not, I regard it not: Whereas another man whose heart is not sound and upright with God, saith thus within himselfe, It is no matter though such a Church, though such a People, though such a Kingdome, or such a Nation perish, so I may be safe, so I may enjoy my comforts, my ease, my profit, my liberty, this is in the heart of every naturall man: but a man whose heart is perfect with God, stil exalts him, both in matters of credit, and likewise in matter of profit and advantage.*

3. In matter of pleasure,

Last of all, in any matter of pleasure: He finds his heart disposed after the same manner; hee saith thus with himselfe; I care not though  
my



my owne desire of pleasure and ease be crossed, to men may bee pleased in that which is good for edification; as wee see that disposition in *Paul*, 1 *Cor.* 10. 33. saith he, *I please all men in all things.* Saith hee, *I have liberty to eate flesh,* and I desire to use that liberty, it is acceptable to me as to any other; notwithstanding, I will even deprive my selfe of that liberty, to please men: and not in this only, but in all things else; and why? for, saith hee, *I seeke, not my selfe, and my owne profit, but the profit of many, that they might be saved;* and that is the reason of it: And why did he seeke the profit of many? We see in the 31. Verse hee gives this rule, *whether you eate or drinke, &c, doe all to the glory of G O D* for this cause, saith hee, I doe not please my selfe, but others; I please other men in all things, because I would glorifie G O D: that is, in pleasing them, *God* is advanced, he is preferred and exalted: therefore, saith hee, I please not my selfe, but I please others in all things. So, I say, that is one effect, and the first that I name to you, that it is the property of sincerity and integrity of heart, to set a man aworke to exalt G O D, to prefer God before himselfe in all occasions.

A second effect arising from sincerity of heart, from this perfectnesse of heart, is this; he whose heart is perfect with *God*, you shall find in him this disposition, that he is not moved to his maine actions ordinarily, but by vertue of some command from G O D; if hee have not  
some

1 *Cor.* 13. 33.

1: Effect:  
Nothing  
moves a si-  
cere man but  
Gods com-  
mand.

Some such motive, he stands still, and stirs not.

Every natu-  
rall man seeks  
himselſe;

The ground of this is, because while a man seekes himselſe, while a man is unſound-hearted, while he is full of himselſe, ( as every man is till he bee regenerated, till his heart is changed ) come and tell ſuch a man, informe him, and ſay to him, Sir, this will make for your profit, or this is for your credit, this will bee for your advantage, it preſently mooves him, and ſets him a worke : for his end is to ſeek himselſe, but let his heart bee changed, and be perfect with G O D, to ſeek him, now motives drawne from theſe reſpects, doe not ſo much worke upon him ; but let a Commandement come from G O D, let it be thus preſented to him, This is the will of *God*, this is for *Gods* glory, this hee will have performed by thee ; theſe are the motives that worke upon him in the generall faſhion and courſe of his life ; other reſpects, that are more prevalent with him before, they moove him not now ; but when they are ſuggeſted, as in former time, he ſtands ſtill, as it were, as a Ship that is becalmed, that hath no wind to move it : but when a Commandement comes from *God*, that Command fills the Sailes, it fills the faculties of the ſoule, that moves it to and fro, that indeede is the ground that ſets this man a worke ; in all the actions, and in all the courſes of his life, you ſhall ſee that metaphor uſed *Col. 4. 12.* (it is *Epaphras* prayer for the people, that *Paul* here expreſſeth ) *Epaphras* a ſervant of *Chriſt*, one of

*Simile.*

*Col. 4. 12.*



you saluteth you, and alway strives for you in prayer, that you may stand perfect and be filled with all the will of the Lord; Marke, this is the thing hee prayes for, that they might stand perfect: Why, how should it be knowne they were perfect? Saith he, this is the effect it will produce, you shall be filled in all the will of the Lord, that is, as the word signifies in the Originall, when a man is filled with the Commandement, even as the sayle of a Ship is filled with wind, so when a man findes this disposition in himselfe, that the principall motive, that which sets him a worke upon all occasions, is some Commandement from God, and not selfe-respects, it is an argument that hee is perfect, that he is filled with the will of the Lord: otherwise hee would stand still as a Ship, when the Sailes have no wind to drivethem: this is an argument of perfectnesse and integrity of heart. The like expression you shall finde, *Psal. 119.6. Then shall I not be confounded, saith David, when I have respect* (marke the phrase; for it is the phrase that hee chooseth to expresse his sincerity by) *when I have respect to thy Commandements.* That is, saith hee, the time was, and it is so with other men, that when a Commandement of God comes, they little heede it, they little regard it: if other motives come, which propound honour, credit, and advancement, and profit to themselves, those things they respect; but saith he, heerein is my sincerity seene, and upon that ground I desire I may not bee confounded, that I have

To be filled  
with the will  
of God what.

*Psal. 119.6.*

*Simile.*

To respect  
Gods Com-  
mand, what.

I have now respect to thy Commandements : even as you see, a man that hath some principall friend, that he regards above all the world besides, it may bee, when many others come and speake to him, and make suit to him to have something done, hee regards them not, but, if such a friend speakes, hee hath respect to him : or as a servant, if another man bid him goe, and bid him doe, he stands still ; but if his Masters command come once, he goes about it presently : for he hath respect unto him : this is *David's* meaning : for, saith he, *L O R D*, I have respect to thy Commandements ; other things move mee not so much ; but, if any Commandement come from thee, I have respect unto it and I presently goe and execute it : and in this regard hee is laid to bee a *man after Gods owne heart*, as wee see in the *Act. 13.22. I have found, saith the Lord, a man after mine owne heart* : that is a man of sincere, of an upright heart, a man in whose heart is integrity and sincerity, a man without guile ; & he proves it by this, saith hee, *He will doe whatsoever I will* : that is, if my will be known to him, that wil he do, that is the motive that leads him, that is the thing that stirs him upon all occasions : for that is the effect by which he is described to be a man after *Gods owne heart*, he will doe whatsoever I will.

Now, *beloved*, you may examine your selves by this, whether you may have those effects that arise from sincerity and integrity of heart ; consider what mooves you to every action.

Certainly

A&C. 13.22.



Certainly there is no man that goes about any busines, but there is some motive that sets him aworke: It is by vertue of the Commandement that thou goest about all thy occasions? Is it that that moves thee? Hast thou that respect to G O D S Commandement; that when other commandements come, thou regardest them little? but thou hast still an eye to that? as *David* saith, (which is an other expression of his sincerity,) *Mine eyes waite on thee, as the eyes of the handmaid waite on her Mistris*; that is, I am still looking to thee, to thy Word, to thy Commandement, any becke or nod from thee moves me, as the Maid waites on her Mistris, to see what her will is. This is the disposition of all the Saints; and therefore take heed of being deceived in this; *beloved*, it falls out oft-times that you shall finde them both implicated and involved together, (and therein comm only we are deceived;) a Commandement comes from *God*, and respects of our owne concurre: (marke it well, that I may take away this deceit) as for example; perhaps there is a service which the *Lord* himselfe commands, a man may bee very diligent in this worke; but, it may bee, there is not onely a Commandement of G O D to moove him, but there is much applause, there is a certaine lustre, and splendour that followes diligence in a good action, in some great businesse. Here now is a double motive; here is a Commandement from G O D, and withall there is credit and

Psal. 132. 2:

Gods command and our owne respects come together in many actions.

and esteeme from men. As I say of doing, so likewise of suffering; it maybe a man is to suffer, and it is G O D S will to have him suffer, and hee suffers for keeping of a good conscience; but withall, there is somewhat more mingled with it, there is esteeme from men: and so for other actions; diligence in a mans calling, it is true, is the Commandement of G O D, and the worke is the L O R D S, he doth it for him, hee ought to be diligent; but withall there is profit and reputation followes it, there is advantage comes to himselfe; heere, you see, there are more respects than one; here is the Commandement of G O D, and other respects likewise; & so for the hearing the Word; it is true, it is G O D S Commandement to heare, and a man comes it may be, out of some respect to that Commandement; but withall, there may be other respects mingled; a man may come to feede his understanding with new notions, with novelty hee may come to see wit and learning, or to know the humour and spirit of the Preacher, other respects may be mingled.

*Quest.*

Now (you will say) how then shall a man know whether it be the Commandement of G O D that moves him, if that be the proper effect of sincerity?

*Ans.*

How to know when we are moved to actions by Gods command.

Beloved, it is easie to know it by this; take a man whose heart is not sound, whose heart is impure, who is impure towards the *Lord*, and take out the other respects, and leave the naked Commandement alone, and he will stand still, he



he moves not ; let other respects bee tooke away, let the worke want the outward glory, and he stands still, hee goes not about it so diligently : let the suffering bee sequestred from the praise of men, which accompanies it, let there be nothing but a bare command, yea, suppose sometimes they incurre discredit with men, as sometimes they doe, in suffering, there is only a naked Commandement to encourage them to it ; I say, if the heart bee unsound, it stands still and moves not : but when the heart is upright, take away the Commandement, and leave the other respects, and it stands still on the other side ; by which you may know, that it is not respect to mens Commandements that moves a man, because when that is tooke out, when there is not the will of *God* signified in it, when he thinks with himselfe, this is not for *Gods* glory, I have no warrant from *God* to doe it, though there be other respects to my owne credit and profit, the heart stands still, as a Mill doth, when it hath no water nor no wind to drive it. This is an argument of sincerity, when still the Commandement moves it.

But this objection may be made ; May not a man be moved with other respects, may he not bee moved with regard to credit and advancement that may follow upon the performance of good duties ?

I answer, he may in the second place, he may not primarily be moved with it, it is the Commandement

A tryall of  
sincerity.

*Object.*

*Answ.*  
How other  
respect, be-  
side *Gods* com-  
mand should  
move us.

mandement that must set him on worke; but when hee is upon the way, these respects may carry him on with more facility and alacrity: as a servant that is commanded to goe a journey, if there bee concurrence of other things, if he have a good way, and good weather, and good company, and money in his purse, it is his advantage, he doth it the more willingly & cherefully; but if there be none of these, it is enough that it is his Masters businesse, that is enough to set him on work. You know, *Paul* had many hard taskes, when he went to *Macedonia*, and upon other occasions, you know what his entertainment was, and yet it was his Masters worke, it was his Commandement: for it is a sure rule, that as we ought to use all *Gods* Ordinances, so also we may use all *Gods* Arguments. It is an argument that himselfe useth, that wee may have respect to the recompence, *The reward of the feare of God, and humility, is riches, and honour, and life, &c.*

Quest.

If you aske, But how shal a man know when hee doth it thus in the first place, when hee is moved with the Commandement?

Ans<sup>r</sup>.

How to know whether we are moved principally with Gods Command.

I answer; you shall know it by this: A servant that seekes his Masters profit altogether, with the neglect of his owne, it is an argument that he serves him not out of selfe respects, but that which hee is primarily moved with, is regard of his Master. Indeed, here is the difference: A servant that trusts not his Master, so mannageth his businesse, as a Factor that still hath



hath an eye upon himselfe : For hee trusts not his Master : Another , that trusts him , that thinkes thus with himselfe , my Master is wise to observe , and is willing and able to recompence mee ; That servant lookes not to himselfe and his owne ends , but he doth his Masters businessse faithfully , and he cares not so it may bee for his Masters advantage : For hee loves his Master , and hee thinkes his owne good and prosperitie consists more in his Masters , than in his owne ; This is that that moves him , and therefore , without respect to himselfe , he serves him , he doth his businessse faithfully , he looks what may be for his Masters advantage , and not for his owne . So much for this second effect .

A third effect that ariseth from this sincerity or integrity of heart , is to serve the *Lord* , to doe his will with all a Mans might , to doe it exceeding diligently , not onely to have respect to his Commandement , but to doe it with all a Mans might and strength : when a Man doth it remissely , it is a signe hee doth it feinedly ; when he doth it diligently , it is a signe he doth it with a *perfect* heart . A servant , when hee slubbers over his worke , and doth but eye-service , it is an argument that hee doth it not with his whole heart , but feinedly : For when hee doth it heartily , he doth it painefully , he doth it throughly , and exactly , and with all his strength . The ground of it is this , because when a Man doth any thing truely , and in good earnest , when hee doth it for it selfe , hee doth it alway exceeding

Z

diligently ,

3. Effect. Nee  
serveth God  
with all his  
might, -

diligently, they are never disioyned. When a Man doth a thing for a respect, hee doth it so farre as that respect requires, so much diligence hee useth, and no more: You may see it in other things; If a Man have money but for his use, he will seeke so much as will serve such a turne, and no more; But if hee doe it for money it selfe, if hee love riches, hee will doe it with all his might, hee sets himselfe to it with all his strength. You have an excellent place for the expression of this in 1 Pet. 1. 22. Saith the Apostle, *Seeing your hearts are purified to love one another without feyning, see that you love one another with a pure heart, fervently.* The meaning is this, If a mans love bee sincere, without feyning; If it bee with a pure heart, without respects, without dissimulation, this propertie it will have, you will love one another fervently. Beloyed, these cannot bee disioyned, when one serves the Lord with a perfect heart, when his eye is upon him, when he doth trust to him, without any other by-respects, hee will doe it exceeding diligently. Therefore that expression you finde so oft in the Scriptures, *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God, with all thy Soule, with all thy heart, and with all thy strength,* it is not an expression of the degrees of love; That is not the sole scope of that place, but it is an expression of the sinceritie of a Mans love; as if hee should say, heerein is the sinceritie of a Mans love, this is an argument that a Man loves God, truly, and not for respects, when he loves him

with.

1 Pet. 22.

Looking to  
God in that  
we doe, makes  
us diligent.



with all his heart, and with all his might: It is so in all things; when you doe any thing for it selfe, you will doe it with all your might.

Besides, there is this further ground of it; you shall finde this, that when a Man doth a thing remissely, and overly, and perfunctorily, it argues alway a divided intention, it is an argument that the whole minde is not set on it, but that the intention is distracted, and bestowed on other things: Whence that common saying is, Hee that will bee excellent in every thing, is so in nothing; Because his intentions are divided. So, beloved, you know, this is the property of sinceritie, to have a *single eye*, to have the heart set upon one object, to looke to GOD alone; If a Man doe so, the heart is sincere, and hee that lookes upon God alone, hee must needs doe it with all diligence: whensoever a Man maides one thing, hee will doe it with all his might, because all the faculties, the intentions, the thoughts, and affections of the soule, they are then concentricall, & united, and drawne together into one point, they are still running in one channell: And therefore a Man that hath a sincere heart, that chooseth God alone, that saith thus with himselfe, I have but one Master to serve, I have but one to feare, I have GOD alone to looke to, my businesse is with him in Heaven, I thinke him to bee *All-sufficient*, and *an exceeding great reward*: I say, this resolution will alway accompany such a heart, that hee serves him with all diligence: If

The intention is divided, when things are done remissely.

Psalm. 72. 4.

Intention in a mans owne affaires, and remissenesse in Gods, a signe of impurity:

Holinesse the element of an upright, man:

there bee any worke of his to be done, hee will doe it with all his might: For that is the disposition of a Mans minde, when once he is able to say as *David* saith, *Psalm. 72. 4. One thing have I desired of the Lord, and that will I seeke, to see the beantie of the Lord, to live in his Temple, &c.* One thing have I desired, and that will I seeke with all diligence: When a Man desires but one thing, his minde will bee exceeding intent upon it; And therefore if you would finde out now what is a proper effect of sinceritie, you shall finde this alway to be in those, whose hearts are upright with *G O D*, that they give themselves up to his service; I say, they give themselves up to do it with all diligence: Therefore a Man that saith thus, I hope my heart is upright with *God*, and yet you see him exceeding busie with other things, the worke of *God* he doth not overly, he slubbers it over, hee doth it negligently, as a servant that doth eyeservice; but for businesses of his owne, hee is exceeding intent upon them, hee is overwhelmed with them, in following pleasures, and divers lusts, his minde is exceeding much taken up in things of that kinde; I say, hee doth but dissemble, when he saith he hath prepared his whole heart to seeke the *Lord*, that hee walkes before him perfectly, it cannot bee: a Man whose heart is upright, hath this disposition in him, that his speeches, his thoughts and his actions are still busied about things that belong to the Kingdome of *God*, holinesse in the element hee lives in,



in, he would stil be doing something that tends that way, by his good will he would bee doing nothing else: I say, thus hee serves the *LORD*, with all his might, and that is an argument hee hath a sincere and upright heart. You have a common saying, when a Man doth a thing exceeding diligently, he doth it for his life: Now a Man whose heart is upright, his opinion is changed of his owne happinesse, of his life and safety; Whereas, before, hee conceived it to consist in other things, now he knowes it wholly consists in the favour of *God*, in pleasing him, and in enjoying of him; And therefore when hee reckons his life to consist therein, hee doth exceeding diligently whatsoever worke tends to him, and to his glory. This is the third effect that ariseth from sinceritie, and perfection of heart.

A fourth effect is this; a Man whose heart is entire and upright, and perfect with *God*, you shall finde him thus disposed, hee suffers every grace to have its perfect worke: That is a signe the heart is sound, and entire, and perfect, when the graces of *God* are not restrained, when they are not dammed and barred up, but are suffered to have their perfect worke: as it is said of Patience, you shall see that expression, *Iam. 1. Let Patience have her perfect worke. Rejoyce* (saith the Apostle there) *when you fall into troubles of divers sorts, rejoyce, knowing that the trying of your Faith brings forth Patience, and let Patience have her perfect worke, that you may bee perfect and entire,*

4, Effect.  
Every Grace  
hath its per-  
fect worke.

1. Patience.  
*Iam. 1. 2, 3, 4.*

wanting nothing. Where you see, that this is put downe, as an effect that ariseth from perfectnesse and integritie of heart, when wee suffer the graces of God, (as patience in particular) to have their perfect worke. Now patience is said to have its perfect worke, when it endures all kindes of tryalls, for that is the scope of the Apostle; *Rejoyce* (saith the Apostle) *when you fall into trials of divers sorts*: That is, tryals that concerne you in Soule, in Body, in name, and in state, tryalls of every sort, and everie kinde: If Patience be perfect, (& it will be perfect, if it bee in a heart that is perfect, and entire, it will have a perfect worke) it will make us stay no where: So that patience hath then its perfect worke, when it will suffer any thing, bee it death, bee it disgrace, bee it imprisonment, or poverty, be it losse of friends, bee it what it will bee, afflictions of any kinde: Name all sorts of trouble that you can devise, if Patience have a perfect worke, it will beare all of them. When the heart is sound, then this Grace or any other hath a perfect worke: Therefore you see, men whose hearts are not sound, Nature will make a stand somewhere: A Man perhaps will beare many things for Religion, but if it come to death, there hee shrinks: A Man will endure much, but if it come to disgrace, or discredit, to losse of reputation, there his patience hath not a perfect worke: And therefore hee gives over, As Patience its perfect worke is seene in suffering, so likewise it is seene in doing,

Patience its  
perfect worke,  
what.

An unsound  
Man shrinks  
in some tryals



doing. So you see that expression, *Hebr. 12. 1.* *Seeing wee have such a cloud of witnessses,* (saith the Apostle) *let us runne the race with patience that is set before us.* The meaning of it is this: If Patience have a perfect worke, it will carry you through the whole race to the journeyes end; but if otherwise, a Man will runne so farre, or so farre; But when hee meets with such a rub, with such a barre by the way, there hee will make a stand, when hee comes to thicke way, or to thorny way, or to rough way; there hee will not runne; And why? Because patience hath not a perfect worke. Therefore, saith he, runne with patience the race that is set before you. So, a Mans heart is then entire, when everie grace, ( I instance now in this ) hath his perfect worke.

*Heb. 12. 0.*

If you object; But you see sometimes Patience, even in the best of the Saints, hath not a perfect worke, |but is sometimes interrupted? You see it was so in *Iob*; though hee were a Man of an upright heart, ( *G O D* beares that witnessse to him, hee was a just Man, one that feared *G O D* ) and likewise this grace was perfect in him, (as that witnessse is given him, *James 5. 11.* *You know the patience of Iob* ) yet notwithstanding this, it seemed to bee interrupted, it seemed not to have its perfect worke.

*Object.*

*Ans.*

Interruption  
in the Saints  
graces ariseth  
not from un-  
soundnesse.

To this I answer: That it did not rise from the hollownesse of his heart, or the imperfection of the grace, but it ariseth many times

from some other impediment, some other accident, from some distemper that may arise in the Soule, that sometimes may hinder even a perfect grace from having a perfect worke; as you see in the workes of nature, there may be a perfect Spring, and yet sometimes it may be hindered from running, by some outward impediment, it may some way or other bee dammed up: So it may bee a perfect Drug, fit and apt enough to worke, & yet some impediment there may be, that may hinder it, and choake it, and dead the vertue of it for a time, but it is but for a fit, ordinarily, and in ordinary course, every grace will have its perfect worke.

*Simile.*

2: Faith hath its perfect worke.

*Instances.*  
2 Chron. 25.  
7, 8, 9.

And as I say of Patience, so likewise you see, in all other Graces, (to give you another instance, the same the Apostle gives there of Faith) Faith, when it ariseth, when it dwels in a heart that is entire, that is perfect, it hath a perfect worke: When it is otherwise, it workes but imperfectly, and but by halves, I will give you an experiment of it; You shall see two notable examples of it, one in *Amaziah*, 2 *Chronic.* 25. You shall find there what worke Faith had in him; You see in the 8, 9, 10. Verses, *Amaziah* was to goe to warre against the *Edomites*, he hired one hundred thousand of *Israel*, which was halfe his Army, to goe and assist him in battle: there comes a Prophet from the *Lord*, and tells him, *Amaziah* know this, the *Lord* is not with *Israel*, and therefore separate these men, and send them home, if thou doe not, thou shalt fall before



before the enemy : For in the *Lord* there is power to helpe, or to cast downe; *Amaziah* beleevd the Prophet : So that you see, Faith had a great worke in him; But, faith hee, I am not able to hyre any more. That is no matter, (said the Prophet) goe with those thou hast; and hee was content to doe so, hee went on to the Battle; And in the next Verse, hee was encouraged to goe on: It was a great worke of Faith, to send backe halfe his Army, and to goe on so much encouraged notwithstanding, yet after, in the same Chapter, you shall finde, though Faith went thus farre in him, and carried him through so difficult a case, yet it had not its perfect worke: For immediately after hee had overcome the *Edomites*, hee set up their Gods, and a Prophet comes and tells him, *Amaziah, art thou so foolish, to set up the GODS of the Edomites; that were not able to deliver their owne people?* Saith the Text, *Hee would not hearken to the Prophet, but bade him cease, and the Prophet ceased.* So you see Faith had a worke in him, and a great worke, but herein hee had an unsound heart, as it is said; Verse 2. *Hee walked before the LORD, in the way of his Fathers, but not with a perfect heart.* And you shall finde this very story, that I have now named, brought in as an evidence that his heart was not sound, that his Faith had not a perfect worke: So farre his Faith went, thus farre he did by vertue of that Faith that he had, but

Men may doe much, and yet want saving grace.

Verf. 16.

1 Chron. 11.  
2, 3, 4.

but a perfect worke his Faith had not. Another example is in *Rehoboam*, 2 *Chronic. 11*. When the Kingdome was divided, and given to *Ieroboam*, and the tenne Tribes had made that defection from *Rehoboam*, hee gathered together ninescore thousand fighting men, to goe up against *Israel*: But, saith the Text, *The word of the Lord came to Shemaiah, a man of God, saying, Speake to Rehoboam, the sonne of Salomon, King of Iudah, and to all Israel, and Iudah, and Benjamin, saying: Thus saith the LORD, You shall not goe up to fight against your brethren, returne everie Man to his house: For this thing is done by mee. They obeyed therefore the word of the Lord, and returned from going against Ieroboam.* You see here a very great worke of Faith, that caused him to give over, to sit downe, to be content to lose so great a part of his Kingdome, and to looke no more after it: That, when he had an Army ready of valiant men, yet hee was content to sit downe, though hee were a Man that was not found-hearted, yet Faith had thus far a worke in him: And not onely for this time, but for three yeares after hee cleaved to the *LORD*, and served him in all things: And yet for all this, it had not its perfect worke, it carryed him not thorow: For afterwards hee departed from the *LORD*. This is a signe of an unsound heart, when Faith shall goe so farre, when it shall enable a Man to doe many things, and yet for al this, it hath not its perfect worke. Wee see the contrary in *Abraham*, *Rom. 4. 19.*

when

Wicked men  
may follow  
God for a time

Rom. 4. 19.



when he was put to it, when *God* had made him a promise, that hee should be the Father of many Nations, saith the Text, *hee was not weake in the Faith.* The meaning is, hee was not unsound, but was perfect in the Faith. What did hee doe? How did that appeare? Saith hee, hee went thorow, when the *Lord* came with such a promise, *hee considered not his owne body, that was dead;* ( for hee was an hundred yeares old ) *nor hee considered not the deadnesse of Sarahs wombe:* but ( saith hee ) *hee beleevd that hee was able that had promised.* This is given as an evidence of the truth of his Faith; hee made not a stand in such a difficult case: For hee was not unsound, but he was perfect in the Faith. So likewise, when he came to offer his sonne; herein the perfection of his Faith was seene. And by this you may know whether your hearts bee right, if you suffer every grace to have its perfect worke, when your Faith doth not picke and choose, and take heere a promise, and leave there another; Here to beleeve a threatning, another not to beleeve; Here to take hold on a Commandement, to beleeve that this is the will of *GOD*, in another case not to beleeve: For so doing is a signe of an unsound heart.

If you object, but faith many times hath not a perfect worke in the Saints, as *Moses* at the waters of strife, saith the Text, *hee fayled through unbeleefe:* And againe, *David*, when hee fled from *Saul* to *Achis*, wee see his Faith there had not its perfect worke: So likewise *Peter*, when  
the

Chusing in,  
Gods wayes a  
note of un  
soundnesse:

the waves beganne to arise, to swell, and hee beganne to sinke, his Faith had not a perfect worke.

*Ans<sup>w</sup>.*

True grace  
may bee inter-  
rupted, how.

To this I answer, that Faith may have a perfect worke, that is, there may be an aptnesse in it, that ordinarily it goes through the worke; though by some accident, it may bee hindred: for (marke the Faith of those) wee see *David*, though he failed at this time, yet at other times hee did not; No more did *Moses*, nor *Peter*, which is an argument that it rose not from un-foundnesse, from hollownesse of the grace, or of their hearts, but from some interveniall impediment, some passion; As it was a passion in *Moses*, he was distempered; and so it was a teare, a mist that was cast before the eyes of *Peter* at that time. Now you know a Man may be said to have a perfect eye, and yet, for all that, in a mist he may not be able to see as at other times; and a Man may be said to have a perfect hand, and yet a fit of a Palsie may make it shake, and make it unfit for any thing: So a man may have a perfect taste, able to distinguish one thing from another, yet when hee is in an Ague, in such a fit he takes things amisse; things that are wholsome, seeme bitter to him: So in the graces of the Spirit, there may be sometimes much imperfection admitted, when a Man is in the mist, when hee is in the fit, when some distemper some passion or affection, hath overcast and overclouded the Soule, as it were, and possessed the palate; These defects may bee, and yet the

grace

*Simile.*



grace may bee perfect. But you shall know it by this, ordinarily it is not so, it is but by accident; and therefore it comes to passe but now & then.

And as wee say of the grace of Faith, so (to give you another instance) Truth or the knowledge of the truth: this great grace, if the heart bee sound, will have a perfect worke; It will goe thorow, it will not make a stand heere and there, as it doth in those that are unsound, as you see, *Rom. I. 18.* it is given there as a signe of an unrighteous Man, when *they withhold the truth in unrighteousnesse*; that is, when the truth is not suffered to have a perfect worke; When there is truth, and they suffer it perhaps to informe their understandings, but they suffer it to goe no further; When they suffer it not to walke abroad into all the corners of the Soule, into all the inward roomes of it; Or, if they doe that, yet they suffer it not to come into the outward Courts of their conversation, it is a signe that this grace hath not a perfect worke, but is restrained: And such an expression you shall finde, *2 Peter 3. 5.* *This they willingly know not; (marke) that the Heavens were of old, &c.* Hee speakes there of certaine Atheists, that were mockers, and despisers, that were readie to say, *where is the promise of his comming? Doe not all things continue alike, since the time of our Fathers?* The Apostle answers them thus; Saith he, they have truth in them, there is light enough, *God hath borne witness to himselfe in their owne consciences; There are many things that they might*

3 Knowledge of the truth hath its perfect worke in a perfect heart.

*Rom. I. 18.*

*2 Peter 3. 5.*

might object hgainst these temptations of Atheisme: But, saith hee, they willingly will not know them; That is, they will not take them into consideration, as if hee should say, their will, because they will not be troubled, because they will live loosely, it suffers them not to understand, and to enquire into these things, that they might know them; *These things they willingly know not.* So, beloved, it is an argument that the knowledge of God, and the knowledge of the Truth hath not a perfect worke, when there is something that a Man willingly will not know, when a Man shall winke with his eyes, as it is said, *Matth. 13. 15. They winke with their eyes, that they might not understand with their hearts, and bee converted, that I should heale them. They winke with their eyes:* That is, when the light shines to them, they will not see it; When the conscience suggests something, when there is somewhat intimated, and whispered to the hearts of men, their will runnes a loose course; Therefore they will not suffer their understandings to be informed, they will not see all the light: Whereas a Man whose heart is perfect, if the light begin to appeare, if he see it thorow a crevis, hee opens the windowes of his Soule, and lets it in, even into every corner of it; And the ground is, because his heart is sound, hee desires to make his heart perfect, he is not willing to spare it in any thing, hee desires not there should bee any exempt place in his heart, or in his life, or any of his courses.

Matth. 13. 15.



courses ; for hee sees , *Hee that doth evill , comes not to the light* , *Iohn 3. 21.* but hee that loves the trueth , hee whose heart is sound , that is not an hypocrite , he comes to the light , he comes to bee enlightned in what he doth , *hee comes to the light , that his deedes might bee made manifest* ; that is , that it might bee evident that his workes are according to *Gods will* ; He desires not that the light should bee kept off . This is another instance . Patience will have her perfect worke , and the knowledge of the truth will have its perfect worke : So I may say of all other graces , Temperance will have its perfect worke , if the heart bee sincere and sound ; That is , it will restraine every inordinate appetite , it will cause a Man to forbear every inordinate delight , every inordinate pleasure ; It will make him withdraw himselfe from excesse in every thing , in dyet , in sports , in ease , &c . Solikewise Chastitie , holinesse and purenesse , it cleanseth the heart from all kinde of uncleannesse , if it have its perfect worke ; It suffers none of that leaven to remaine in Soule or Body eyther , neyther in the eye , nor in the thought . This is another effect of an upright heart , of one that is perfect with **G O D** , that every grace hath its perfect worke : And by this thou mayst know , whether thy heart be sound , or no .

I will adde but one more exceeding briefly , and so conclude . This is a fifth effect that ariseth from integrity , and sinceritie of heart ; It breedes in us a peaceablenesse and quietnesse of

Ioh. 3. 21.

5. Effect. The Spirit is quieted,

of spirit, as you may see, *James 3. ultimo*, *But the wisdom that is from above, is first pure, and then peaceable, gentle, easie to be intreated, full of mercie, full of good fruit.* The wisdom is first pure, and then peaceable: As if hee should say, The purity of wisdom, the perfectnesse, the entirenesse, the sinceritie which holy wisdom brings forth, it is seene in this effect, it will make the heart peaceable, *it is first pure, and then peaceable.* His meaning is, that peaceableness is an effect of the purenesse and entirenesse of the heart: So that, when any Mans heart is perfect with GOD, you shall finde this effect rising from it, that his heart is quiet, and humble, and gentle, and peaceable towards men; full of love, and of mercy and of good fruits, and of good actions, and workes: but when the heart is impure, and unsound, and hollow, it is awkward, and forward, and contentious, and implacable towards men; they are not full of mercy, but full of wrath; they are not full of good fruits, and good works and actions, but *they are like the raging Sea, that casts up mire and dirt upon those with whom they have to doe.*

So that this is the effect of a pure heart, it breedes a quietnesse, a peaceableness of spirit; whereas the other brings forth tumult & turbulent disposition: *they are easie to be intreated,* (to be handled) saith the Text; Whereas the others whose hearts are unsound, as *David* saith of the wicked, they are as thornes, that they cannot easily be handled, a Man cannot easily deale  
with

Forwardnesse  
an effect of  
impurity.



with them, they are not easily intreated. So, my beloved, this frowardnesse, this washpishnes of spirit, this implacablenesse, is a signe of an unsound heart, of an impure heart, of a heart that is not perfect with the Lord: as you see, the Devils are the most impure Spirits of any other, the most full of malice, and of envy, and revenge of any other. *Iesus Christ*, on the other side, as he had the most pure heart, so hee was the most gentle of all others: hee returned not rebuke for rebuke, but *hee was as a sheepe before the shearers*, &c. Vse a Wolfe or a Tiger never so kindly, they will bee still implacable and greedy: vse Sheepe never so roughly, they will bee meeke and gentle; so it is with the Saints, because their hearts are pure: I say, the ground of it is this, because an unsound heart breeds in it continually strong lusts, and eager desires; and eager desires are unyeelding, and unruly, and that is the cause of contention, and implacablenesse with men: whereas when the heart is cleansed, when it is pure and perfect, it is emptied of these strong and domineering lusts, it growes to a quietnesse of spirit, to bee quiet within, and when it is quiet within, it will bee peaceable towards others without. When it is quiet thus, the Spirit is ready to see G O D, and to yeeld to G O D in his providence, in all unkindnesses, and in all the evill dealings of men, a man is neither ready to murmur against G O D, nor to fret against men: for quietnesse followes a pure heart, as

Note.

Simile.

Lusts the  
cause of un-  
quietnesse.

unquietnesse, and awkwardnesse, and frowardnesse followes impurity and imperfection of heart. So much shall serve for this.

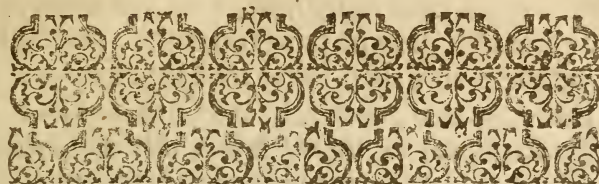
---

*FINIS.*

---

THE





THE  
TENTH  
SERMON.

GENESIS 17. 1, 2.

*Walke before me, and bee thou perfect. And I will  
make my Covenant betweene mee and thee.*



Will not repeat what hath been delivered, but come to that which remaines, and so proceed to the second Verse. The last effect therefore of this sincerity, or integrity of heart, is that which wee find expressed, *Mat. 5. 8. Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.* That is, this ariseth alway as an inseparable effect of purenes of heart, that it is able to see *God*; to see him here, and it shall see him face to face hereafter. When the heart is yet unsound and impure, it

Last effect of  
sincerity, To  
see God.

Mat. 5. 8.

1. In his attributes.

is not able to see him ; but when a mans spirit is cleansed from that drosse, from that corruption, a man is growne pure and entire, and faithfull, he is able then to see *God*, which before he could not doe ; that is, he is able to see *God* in his attributes, as *Moses* saw him that was invisible ; that is, hee saw in him more than he could see in *Pharaoh*, hee saw him in his power to recompence him ; he saw him in his wrath, and terriblenesse, if he had disobeyed him ; hee saw him in his goodnesse and mercy, and therefore hee chose him rather than *Pharaoh* or his favour.

2. In his works of providence

Againe, they are able to see him in his works as *Jacob* did ; it is said of him, *hee was a plaine man*, and he was able to see the *Lord*, hee was able to see him in the workes of his providence he was able to see him when he got the goods of *Laban* ; saith hee, *God hath tooke the goods from your Father, and hath given them to mee* : it is his speech to his Wives : hee did see him, when he met with *Esau*, (saith the Text) he saw the face of *God*, when hee saw the face of *Esau* ; he saw him in his cattell, & in his children that he had gotten : these are the cattell, and these are the wives, and the children, and the bands that *God* of his goodnesse hath given mee : he was able to see *God* in all these ; hee saw him in all his workes of providence and goodnesse : so likewise in all his chastisements, *David* saw *God* in the cursing of *Shimei* : It is the *Lord* that bids him doe it : And so *Iob*, hee saw  
God.



God, it is hee that hath given, and he that hath taken away, he overlooked those that were the immediate instruments.

Thirdly, they saw him in his guidance and direction, they are able to see the fiery cloudy Pillar, which way they are led by him; they are able to see which way he would have them goe, upon all occasions, when others walke in darkenesse, and they see not the way that God would lead them.

3. In his guidance and directions

Lastly, they see him in his Ordinances, they see God in the preaching of the Word, they receive it not as the word of man, but, as it is indeed, the word of God: they see him in the Sacraments, for they are able to discern the Lords body, that is, they are able to see Christ crucified, to esteeme him, and to set that price upon him as they ought, and so they come prepared; this they are able to doe, because they are pure: but when the heart is yet unsound and impure, they are not able to see God cleerely; a sight, and a knowledge they have, but it is another kind of knowledge. So much shall serve for this point.

4. In his Ordinances.

*And I will make my Covenant, &c.*

These words containe a further and a greater favour expressed to Abraham, than the former words doe: it was a great mercy, to him, to expresse thus much to him, *I am Allsufficient*, I am able to helpe thee, *I am thy exceeding great reward*, I am able to be a Sunne and a shield unto

thee, to fill thee with all comfort, and to deliver thee from all evill : but yet that which is here added, is a mercy of a much higher nature (saith the Lord) *I will make my Covenant betweene me and thee*; that is, I will not onely tell thee what I am able to doe, I will not onely expresse to thee in generall, that I will deale well with thee, that I have a willingnesse and ability to recompence thee, if thou walk before me, and serve mee, and be perfect, but I am willing to enter into Covenant with thee, that is, I will bind my selfe, I will ingage my selfe, I will enter into bond, as it were, I will not be at liberty any more, but I am willing even to make a Covenant, a compact & agreement with thee. *I will make my Covenant betweene mee and thee*: that is the generall. You shall finde it expressed more at large, *Verf. 7. Moreover, I will establish my Covenant betweene mee and thee, and thy seed after thee, in their generations for an everlasting Covenant, to bee a G O D to thee, and to thy seed after thee*: that is, as if hee should say, First, I am willing, not only to make it with thee, but with thy seed.

Gen. 17. 7.

Secondly, I will not make a temporary Covenant, but an everlasting Covenant, there shall be a mutuall ingagement betweene us, and it shall continue for ever, both to thy selfe and to thy posterity: in particular, it is added, *I will multiply thee exceedingly*, that is but a branch of the Covenant, *I will make thee a Father of many Nations*, thou shalt have a Sonne, and his children



children shall grow in number as the *starres of heaven*, and as the *dust of the earth*; that is but a particular: whence, this is the point that wee have to observe.

*God enters into Covenant with all those that are faithfull.*

For it was not with *Abraham*, as he was *Abraham*, but as hee was a faithfull man: and therefore all the faithfull are reckoned to be the *seed of Abraham*. For the opening of this to you, which is one of the maine points in *Divinity*; I will shew you these five things:

First, what this *Covenant* is.

Secondly, With whom it is made.

Thirdly, How we shall know whether we be in this *Covenant*, or no.

Fourthly, What the breach of this *Covenant* is.

Lastly, The reasons why *God* is willing to make a *Covenant* with men.

i. *What this Covenant is*. You must know, that there is a double *Covenant*, there is a *Covenant of Workes*, and a *Covenant of Grace*: The *Covenant of Workes* runs in these termes, *Doe this, and thou shalt live*, and I will bee thy *God*. This is the covenant that was made with *Adam* and the *Covenant* that is expressed by *Moses* in the *Morall Law*, *Doe this, and live*. The second is the *Covenant of Grace*, and that runnes in these tearmes, *Thou shalt beleeve,*

A a 4

thou

*Doct.*

God enters in-  
to Covenant  
with all those  
that are faith-  
full.

Twofold Co-  
venant, 1. of  
Workes, 2. of  
Grace.

The condition  
of both Cove-  
nants.

thou shalt take my Son for thy *Lord*, and thy Saviour, and thou shalt likewise receive the gift of righteousness, which was wrought by him, for an absolution for thy sinnes, for a reconciliation with me, and thereupon thou shalt grow up in love and obedience towards mee, then I will be thy *God* and thou shalt bee my people. This is the Covenant of Grace, *Thou shalt believe, and take my Sonne, and accept of the gift of righteousness, and I will be thy God.* The difference between them you shal find, *2 Cor. 3.* where you shall see 3. differences, to reduce them to those heads, I will not trouble you with particular places, lest I stay to long upon them.

A threefold difference betwene them.

1. Difference. The first Covenant the ministratio n of the letter.

The first *Covenant* was a *Ministration of the Letter*; that is, in the first Covenant, there was no more heard nor seene, but the naked Commandement, it was written in Tables of stone, and presented to them; there went with it no aptnesse, no disposition to keepe it; they heard what the Law was, they saw what *God* required, but there was no more, and those that were declarers of it, were but the *Ministers of the Letter, and not of the Spirit.*

2. Difference. It breeds enmity.

Secondly, this Covenant, it brings onely a servile feare, and an enmity; for when a man lookes upon the Author of this Covenant, and he heares no more but the Law, and what it requires; he lookes upon *God* as a hard Master, as an enemy: againe, he lookes upon his Law as a hard and cruell Law, as a heavy yoke, as an unsupportable bondage, and therefore he hates it,



it, and wishes there were no such Law; he runs from it, as a Bondslave runnes from his Master, as far as it is in his power. This is that which is said, *Gal. 4. Hagar gendreth to bondage: that is, the Covenant of Workes begets bond-men, and slaves, and not sonnes and freemen: and likewise that, Heb. 12. 18. saith the Apostle. You are not come to Mount Sinai, to the burning of fire, to clouds, to darkenesse, to tempest, to the sound of a Trumpet, so that Moses himselfe did quake and tremble.* That is, when a man looks upon this Covenant of workes, it causeth in him a feare and an enmity: that is the 2. difference.

The third is, That *it is a ministration of death* as it is called, *2 Cor. 3.* a ministration of death, that is, it propounds a curse to all those that do not keepe it, and it shewes no meanes to avoid it; and therefore a man is affected to it; and to *God* the Author of it, as one is to an enemy that seeks his destruction; & therefore the ministration of it is said to be the ministration of death. The reason of this is, not because there is any ill in the Law, it is a ministration of the letter, it begets feare & enmity, it is a ministration of death; I say, this ariseth not from hence, that the Law of *God* is a cruell deadly Law: (for the Law is good) but it ariseth from the weakenesse and the infirmity of the flesh: As for example, if you would take a Potters Vessell; and dash it against a firme Wall; the reason why the Wall is the destruction of the vessell, is not any infirmity or weakenesse in the Wal, for it is the excellency

Gal. 4. 29.

Heb. 12. 18.

3. Difference.  
The ministration of death.  
2 Cor. 3.

Simile

cellency and vertue of the Wall to bee hard, it should be so, but it is the weaknesse and fragility, and brittlenesse of the Vessell, and thence comes it to be broken a sunder: and so in this case, the reason why this Law, or Covenant of workes (is a ministration of death, and of enmity, it is not because there is any imperfection in the Law, it ariseth rather from the perfection of it, but it) is from the weakenesse of the flesh, that is not able to keepe the Law; it is the excellency of the Law, that it is so perfect, that a man is not able to keepe it; it ariseth, I say, from the weakenesse and infirmity of the flesh, that is not able to observe this Law.

Now, on the other side, as the *Covenant of Workes* is thus, so you shall find that the *Covenant of Grace*,

The Covenant  
of Grace, the  
ministration

1.  
Of the Spirit.

2.  
Of Love.

First, is a *ministration of the Spirit*, and not of the letter.

Secondly, a *ministration of love*, not of enmity; of *freedom*, not of bondage; it is a ministration of righteousness, as it is there called the ministration of righteousness; for if the *ministration of condemnation* were glorious, much more shall the *ministration of righteousness* exceed in glory.

3.  
Of Life.

Thirdly, a *ministration of life* and justification, and not a ministration of death and condemnation. The ground of this, and how it is thus, we shall shew you, by expressing to you the order how these depend, and follow one upon the other: when a man hath looked upon  
the



the *Covenant* of Workes, and sees death in it, sees a strict Law that hee is not able to keepe; then comes the *Covenant* of Grace, and shewes to him a righteousnes to satisfie that Law, that himselfe never wrought, shewes him a way of obtaining pardon and remission for the sinnes that hee hath committed against this Law, by the death and satisfaction of another; when hee sees this, he sees withall the goodnesse and mercy of *God*, giving this to him for his salvation, out of his free grace and mercy; and when he sees it, the opinion of a sinner is changed: marke; I say, his opinion, his disposition and affection is altered, hee lookes not on *God* now as upon a hard and cruell Master, but he lookes upon him now as a *God* exceeding full of mercy and compassion; whence this followes, that his heart melts toward the *Lord*, it relents, it comes to be a soft heart, that is easie and tractable, it is not haled now to the Commandement, but out of an ingenuity and willingnesse, hee comes and serves the *Lord* with alacrity and cheerefulnesse: the disposition is wrought in him, because now hee sees another way, his apprehension is altered, even as a servant when it is revealed to him that he is a son, and that those hard taskes that are laid on him, are the best way to lead him to happinesse, they are but rules of direction, for his owne wealth, and for his owne advantage, he doth them now with all willingnesse, the case is altered, hee lookes not now upon the Law of *God* as an enemy,

*Simile.*

enemy, or as a hard bondage, but he looks upon all the Law of God, as a wholesome and profitable rule of direction, that hee is willing to keepe for his owne comfort : now, when the heart is thus softned, then the Spirit of God is sent into his heart, and writes the Law of God in his inward parts, as you shall see, if you compare these two places together, *Heb. 8. 8, 9, 10.* Behold, saith the Lord, I will make a New Covenant, and this is the Testament that I will make with the House of Israel : After those daies, saith the Lord, I will put my Lawes into their mindes, and in their hearts will I write them, and I will be there God and they shall be my people : If you compare it with that *2 Cor. 3. 2, 3.* You are our Epistle written in our hearts, which is understood and read of all men, in that you are manifest to be the Epistle of Christ, manifest by vs, and written, not with Inke, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in Tables of stone, but in the fleshy Tables of the heart. The meaning of it is this; when the heart is once softned, God sends his Spirit to write his Lawes in the heart : which Metaphor will be expressed to you in these three things.

First, the meaning of it is this, looke what there is in the outward Law, as it is written, and laid before you, there shall be a disposition put into their heart, that shal answer it in all things there shall be a writing within, answerable to the writing without, that, even as you see in a seale, when you have put the seale upon the wax,

Note.

Heb. 8. 8, 9, 10

2 Cor. 3. 2, 3.

The Metaphor  
of writing the  
Law in mans  
heart explain-  
ed 3. waies.

I.

There is an  
expression of  
every com-  
mand in the  
heart.



wax, and take it away againe, you finde in the wax the same impressiō that was upon the seale; you shall see in it, stampe answering to stampe, character to character, print to print; so it is in the hearts of the faithfull, after they are once thus softned, the Spirit of *God writes the Lawes in their hearts*, so that there is a Law within, answerable to the Law without, that is an inward aptnesse, answering every particular of the Law; an inward disposition whereby a man is inclined to keep the Law in all points; which Law within is called *the law of the mind*: therefore, if you adde to this, that *Rom. 7. I see a law in my members, rebelling against the law of my mind*, so there is a Law in the mind within, answerable to the Law of *God* without; it answers it, as lead answers the mould, after it is cast into it; it answers it, as Tallye answers to Tallye, as Indenture answers to Indenture, so it agrees with it in all things; that is, there is an aptnesse put into the minde, that is able, and willing, and disposed in some measure to keepe every Commandement, that answereth to all the particular Commandements of the Law of *God*; this is to have the Law of *God* written in the minde: and this is that which is first meant by it, there is a Law within answerable to the Law without in all things.

Rom. 7.

The 2. thing meant by it is, that it is not only put into the mind, as acquirit habits are, but it is so ingrafted as any naturall disposition is, it is so rooted in the heart, it is so rivetted in,

2.  
It is a firme  
impressiō.

as

as when letters are ingraved in Marble, you know, they continue there, they are not easily worne out, and that is meant by it, I will plant my Law in thy heart, it shall never out againe, there will I write it, there shall it continue: this is the second thing that is meant by it, it shall be naturall to you; for that is meant by this, when it is said, it shall bee printed, it shall bee graven and written in the heart, and likewise it shall be perpetuall, it shall never weare out againe, as things that are written in the dust, but it shall be written so as it shall never againe be obliterated.

3.  
The manner  
of writing the  
Law in the  
heart.

The third thing to be expressed, is the manner of the writing of it; the Apostle here compares himselfe and all other Ministers to the Pen, but it is *Christ* that writes the Epistle, the Epistle is his, for these works he doth in it, it is he that takes the Pen, it is he that handles it, & useth it, it is he that puts Inke into the Pen, it is he that applies it; so that though the Minister be the immediate writer of these Lawes in the heart, yet the Inke is the Holy Ghost, and it comes originally from *Christ*; and besides, they are not left to themselves, but the **L O R D** must concurre with them immediately; we are but *co-workers with him*, he holds our hands, as it were, when we write the Epistle in any mans heart, it is he that guides the Penne, as it is he that puts Inke into it, it comes originally from him, and therefore the Epistle is his. Besides, this is a further to be considered in this Metaphor,



phor, that **G O D** will write his Law in our hearts, that we may see these Lawes, we may reade them, and understand them, as when a thing is written, *God* may see it, and man may see it : a man himselfe may see it, and others also may reade it : *God* sees it himselfe, for he hath written it : man sees it, for hee is able to see the Law in his minde, hee is able to see that habituall disposition that is infused into him : and others are able to see it: for, saith *Paul*, you are our Epistle, evident to all men; that is, as you may see letters graven in stone, so they see the fruites and effects of this Law written in your hearts. So you see now what this Covenant of Grace is, and how it differs from the Covenant of Workes : it is the ministration, not of the Letter, but of the Spirit, because it doth not onely present the outward letter of the Commandement, but there is a Law written within, that is done by vertue of the Spirit. So that the order is this; first it reveales righteousness; secondly, it softens the heart; it is the ministration of the Spirit; and thirdly, it is a ministration of love, it is a ministration of freedome, and not of bondage and enmity: for when the Law is thus written, a man is not haled to it : he comes not to it, as a Bondslave to doe his worke, but hee comes willingly, he finds he hath some ability to doe it, he finds a delight in it, as *Paul* saith, *I delight in the Law of God according to the inward man.* So you see the difference betweene the Covenant

The writing  
of the Law  
visible.

The order of  
writing the  
Law in the  
heart.

nant

Covenant of  
Grace twofold

Six differences  
between the  
Old and New  
Testament.

1.

The New is  
larger.

2.

It is clearer.

Gal. 4.

nant of Grace, and the Covenant of Workes. Now the Covenant of Grace is twofold, it is eyther the Old Testament or the New: they both agree in substance, they differ only in the manner of the ministratiō; that, which is called the new Testament, *Heb. 7.8, 9.* which is opposed to the Old Testament for substance, is the same *Covenant*, they are both the *Covenant* of Grace, only they differ in the manner; and you shall find these 6 differences between them.

First, the New Testament or the New Covenant, is larger than the Old, it extends to the Gentiles, where as the first was confined onely to the Jewes, it was onely kept within the wals of that people, and extended no further.

Secondly, the Old was expressed in types, and shaddowes, and figures, as for example, they had the bloud of Bulls and Goats, they had the washings of the body in cleane water, they had offerings of Incense, &c. by which things, other things are meant; as namely, the death of *Christ*, and the satisfaction hee gave to his Father by his death, and likewise the inward sanctificatiō of the spirit, signified by the washing of water, and also the workes and the prayers of the Saints, that are sweet as Incense: now (saith the Text, *Gal. 4.*) these were elements and rudiments that *God* used to them as children, that is, as children have their A, B, C, their first elements, so *God* did shew to the Jewes these principall mysteries, not in themselves



selves, but in these types and shaddowes, as they were able to see them from day to day: for therein was their weaknesse, they were not so able as to conceive spirituall things without a mediate view; they saw the blood shed, and againe, they saw the washings and the rites, these were in their eye; whereas now in the time of the Gospell, these things are taught to us, these we comprehend in our mindes, we serve the *Lord* in spirit & in truth, but there is not that visible sight which was a helpe to their weakenesse; so that these differ as the image and the substance it selfe, even as you see things in prospective shewes, and in painting, that are different from the things themselves, when you come to see Countries, and Citties, and Mountaines, and Woods themselves, it is another thing. And this is the second difference between the Testaments, the one was expressed but in types and shaddowes, the other hath the substance it selfe.

Thirdly, they differ in this, the Old Testament in it selfe is but weake and unprofitable, (as you shall see likewise in the same place, *Heb.* 8.18.) for the Commandement that went before was disannulled, because of the weakenesse and unprofitableness thereof: *for the Lawe made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better hope makes perfect,* by which wee draw neere to God; that is, this was able of it selfe to doe nothing, further than as it did lead to that which was effectuell, therefore it waxed old, and vanished away; so he puts them together,

3.  
 It is stronger.  
*Heb.* 8.18.

ther; it was weake and unprofitable, and therefore it continued not, it had an end, as you know the second proved effectual to take away sinne, and to sanctifie us, and therefore it is an everlasting Covenant, the Testament that continues for ever.

4.  
It is more  
firme.

Exod. 24.

Fourthly, they differ in the confirmation; this second Testament, the New Testament, was confirmed by an Oath, and confirmed by the blood of the Testator, by the blood of *C H R I S T*, whereas the other was confirmed by the blood of Goats, as we see, *Exod. 24.* it is called *the blood of the Covenant*, wherewith the Booke of the Covenant was sprinkled, that is, the shedding of the blood of beasts, confirmed the Covenant: but this is confirmed by the death of *Christ* himselfe, and accordingly, it hath new seales put to it, *Baptisme and the Lords Supper*, when the Old Testament had other seales, *Circumcision and the Passeover*.

5.  
It gives more  
knowledge.

Heb. 8. 10.

Fifthly, they differ in this; in the New Testament there is a more cleere perspicuous knowledge of things, there are better promises, a larger infusion of the spirit, there is more cleerenesse as we see, *Heb. 8. 10.* *After those daies, saith the Lord, I will put my Lawes into their mindes, &c. And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every one his brother, saying, know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest of them.* That is, they shall know much more, and that which they doe know they shall know in another manner: they



they shall know it more distinctly, more particularly. Moreover, as the knowledge is greater, so the promises are better promises, *Heb. 8. 6.* But now our *high Priest* hath obtained a more excellent office, in as much as he is the Mediator of a better Testament, established upon better promises. The meaning of it is this, the promises which were made in the Old Testament, (though the promise of salvation was not excluded, yet) the maine of them, the most appearing and insisted on, were, they should have the land of *Canaan*, & they should have an outward prosperity, you see the old testamēt much insists upon that; the New meddles little with them, but with promises of salvation, remission of sins, sanctification by the spirit: therefore, saith the Apostle here, it is established upon better promises. And againe, there is a larger effusion of the Spirit, the spirit is now powred on us in a greater measure, then it was distilled by drops, now the *Lord* hath dispensed it in a greater abundance to the sons of men, in the time of the Gospel, there is a greater measure of grace, and it followes upon the other, *Grace and truth comes by Iesus Christ*; that is, because there was more truth & more knowledge there went likewise more gr̄ce with it; there is a greater revelation, so likewise, there goes more grace; that is a sure rule, that all knowledge, when it is increased, when it is saving knowledge taught by *God*, it carries grace proportionably with it. This is the first difference.

Heb. 8. 6.

Better promises in the New Testament.

The Spirit given more abundantly in the New Testament.

6.

It hath a better Mediator.

The last difference is in the Mediator; *Moses* was the Mediator of the Old Testament, that is, it was he that declared it, it was hee againe that was the executioner of it; but wee have a *High Priest* that hath obtained a more excellent office, in as much as he is the Mediator of a better Testament; that is, now *Christ* is the Mediator of the Covenant, it is he that declares the Covenant and, secondly, it is he that by the intervention of a certaine Compact, of certaine Articles of agreement, hath reconciled the disagreeing parties, he hath gone between them, as it were, and hath undertaken for both sides; hee hath undertaken on *Gods* part, these and these things shall be done, *all his promises are Yea, and Amen, in him*: and againe, hee hath undertaken on our part to give satisfaction by his death, and likewise to make us obedient to his Father: This he doth, this is to be a Mediator of the Covenant. I will stand no longer on this: I come briefly to make some use of it, and leave the other 4 things (that is, With whō this Covenant is made; How a man shall know whether he be within the Covenant; When this Covenant is broken; and The reason why *God* will make this Covenant with men) to another occasion.

Now this use we will make of it: First, wee may consider hence the great goodnes of *God*, that hee is willing to enter into Covenant with mortall men. *My beloved*, it is a thing that is not sufficiently considered of us, how great a mercy it is, that the glorious *God* of Heaven  
and

Vse. 1.

The goodnes  
of *God*, to  
make a Cove-  
nant with  
man.



and earth should be willing to enter into *Covenant*, that hee should be willing to indent with us, as it were, that he should be willing to make himselfe a debtor to us. If we consider it, it is an exceeding great mercy, when wee thinke thus with our selves, hee is in heaven, and we are on earth; hee the glorious *God*, wee dust and ashes; he the Creator, and wee but creatures; and yet hee is willing to enter into *Covenant*, which implies in a kinde of equality betweene us; as when *Jonathan* and *David* made a *Covenant*, though there was a difference, the one was a Kings Sonne; yet notwithstanding, when the *Covenant* of friendship was made, there did rise a kind of equality between them; so it is betweene the *Lord* and us; when hee is once willing to enter into *Covenant* with us. This should teach us to magnifie the mercy of *G O D*, and to be ready to say, as *David* did, What am I, or what is my Fathers house, that I should be raised hitherto, that I should enter into *Covenant* with the great *God*, that he should come to a Compact and agreement with me, that he should tye himselfe, and bind himselfe to become a debtor to mee? You know, it is called an abasing, *hee abaseth himselfe, to see and to view the things below*, but how much greater abasing is it, for him to enter into *Covenant* with man? It is not a small thing, as *David* said to another case; *Seemes it to you a small thing to be the Sonne or Daughter to a King?* So, I say, it is not a Small thing

Note.

Gods mercy  
in entring in-  
to *Covenant*  
with us.

Psal. 13.

to enter into *Covenant* with G O D, to bee in *Covenant* with the King of Kings : we commonly reckon it a great advantage to have allyance, to bee in confederation with strong Princes. You see what a *Covenant* there was betweene *Iehoshaphat* and *Ahab*, see how *Iehoshaphat* expresseth himselfe ; Truly, saith hee, *there is a League betweene us, (What then ? ) therefore my Horses are thy Horses, and my people are thy people ;* and so it is betweene G O D and us, when there is a *Covenant* betweene us, then his strength is our strength, and his Armies are our Armies, we have interest in all, there is an offensive and defensive League ; and when we seek to him, and put him in mind of it, he cannot deny us. The People of *Rome* had other parts and Nations, that were allyes with them, and if they were to fight, at any time, the *Romans* wee bound to honour, to defend them, and to assist them, and they did it, with as much diligence as they defended their owne City of *Rome*. If we doe implore *Gods* aide, doe you thinke that *God* will breake his *Covenant* ? Will hee not stirre up himselfe to scatter his and our enemies ? Certainly hee will. This great benefit you have ; therefore you have cause to magnifie your selves in this Condition and to blesse the *Lord*, to magnifie him for his great goodnesse, that he would enter into *Covenant* with you, this was the greatest favour that ever hee shewed to *Abraham*, and it is the very scope of this place ; *Abraham*,  
I am

By the *Covenant* we have interest in all *Gods* attibutes.



I am willing to enter into *Covenant*, to tye my selfe, to enter into bond; and therefore, since the *Lord* is not ashamed to make us his people, let us not bee ashamed to call him our *God*, to professe it, and make it good upon all occasions. This is the first Vse.

Secondly, from this difference of the *Covenants*, you have these two things to observe: First, in that the *Covenant* of Grace onely, is *the ministration of the spirit*, when the other is but *the ministration of the letter*, it should teach us thus much, to labour to grow to assurance of the forgivenessse of our sinnes. If a man would desire to change his course, to have his heart renewed, to bee made a new creature, to bee translated from death to life; the way is not to consider presently the *Commandement* for a man to thinke with himselfe, this I ought to doe, and I will set about it, I have made a *Covenant*, I have resolved with my selfe to doe it; but the way is, to labour to get assurance of forgivenessse, to labour to apprehend the *Covenant* of Grace: for by that meanes thy heart shall be softned, there shall be an infusion of the *Spirit*, that shall *write the Law of God in his inward parts*: all those places of *Scripture* make it good, wherein it is said, *faith purifieth the heart*: and, *by the promises we are made partakers of the godly nature*, as, *2 Pet. 1. 4.* and likewise *Heb. 9. 14.* *How much more shall the blood of Christ, which, through the eternall Spirit, offered himselfe without fault to God, purge your conscience*

Vse. 2.

To get assurance of forgivenessse.

How to get the hearts renewed.

2 Pet. 1. 4.  
Heb. 9. 14.

from dead workes, to serve the living G O D. The meaning is this, if a man would have his conscience purged from dead workes, let him labour for faith, whereby hee may bee justified, let him labour to be sprinckled wick the blood of *Christ*, to have assurance of the forgiveness & pardon of his sinnes through his blood, then he shal have that Spirit put into his heart, that eternall Spirit, that shall purge and cleanse his conscience from dead workes. So likewise,

Gal. 3. Did you receive the Spirit by the workes of the Law? Did you not rather receive it by the hearing of faith preached? And so, Gal. 5. Faith that workes by love; that is, it is faith that brings forth love, and love sets us on worke. All these shew thus much unto us, that the best way to heale any strong lust, the best way to change our hearts, to get victory over any sin, that it may not have dominion over us, to have our conscience cleansed from dead workes, to bee made partakers of the divine nature, is to grow up in the assurance of the love of G O D to us in C H R I S T, to get assurance of pardon and forgiveness: for, know this, if the heart doe no more but looke to the Commandement, if you heare only that there are such duties to be done, and consider them, and you compare your owne heart and the Commandement together, there growes a quarrell betweene the heart and the Commandement, an exacerbation betweene them, and an enmity they looke one upon another as enemies; but when

Gal. 3.

Gal. 5.



when the heart is softened, and reconciled to God, it closeth with the Commandement, as the soft clay doth with the mould, and is ready to receive any impression; but, till then, it rebels against the Commandement, and stands out as a hard stone, that receives no impression; and therefore the way is not to go about to reforme our lives as morall men to think with thy selfe, there are these duties, I must take a course to performe them, and enter into vows in particular courses with my selfe to doe them: no, my beloved, the way is to get assurance of forgiveness, to labour to be partaker of the *Covenant of Grace*: your hearts will then be softened, when you have received the spirit, that hath wrought in your hearts a disposition answerable to the Law without, when the Law is put into your minds. And that is the first difference.

The second is, in regard of the difference of the two Testaments, the second Testament being stablished upon *better promises*. What is the reason that the New Testament is said to be stablished upon better promises? Beloved, this is the condition of the New Testament, you shall finde it very little expression of the promises of this life; looke in all the Epistles of *Paul*, and the other Epistles, looke to all the Doctrine of the Gospel, and you shall see the things that are iterated, still they are these; You shall be saved, you shall have your sinnes forgiven, you shall be justified; you shall be sanctified, you shall receive the

*Note.*

*Vse. 3.*

From the 2. difference of the Covenants

*Quest.*

*Ans.*

Why the New Testament is stablished on better promises.

the adoption of sonnes, you shall receive the high price of your calling, &c. These are the things that *Paul* every where magnifies, as the condition that exceeds, and goes beyond the conditions of our forefathers times: Now this great Mystery is revealed, now these great riches are opened, that before were hid. Whence you may gather thus much, that grace & spirituall things, spirituall priviledges, things belonging to the Kingdome of *God*, and of *I E S U S C H R I S T*, exceed much all outward & temporall happinesse: Why are they otherwise called better promises? There are many other places I know, to shew the vanity of outward things, and to preferre spirituall things before them; but let this bee added to the rest; this *Covenant* is established on better promises; labour then to worke your hearts fully to that perswasion, namely, to thinke with your selves, it is better to be rich in Grace, better to have the priviledges of *Iesus Christ*, then to bee rich in this world, *Rev. 2. I know thy poverty, but thou art rich.* You must thinke with your selves, this is the great riches; and therefore the Apostle exhorts rich men, that they change these other riches they enjoy, to spirituall riches. Now a man will never bee exhorted to change, except it bee for the better. *Charge those that are rich in the world, that they bee rich in good workes:* let them so use their riches, so dispence them, so manage them, that they may turne to other riches. When a man is rich in know-  
ledge,

Spirituall  
things better  
than tempo-  
rall:

Rev. 2.



ledge, as it is said of the *Corinthians*, that they were rich in all knowledge, and in every grace. These are the better promises, this is the better and more glorious condition. So that, if there should be a *Census* of men, as one may so say, if there should be an estimation of men, as there was wont to be amongst the *Romans*, they were put in severall conditions, and one was worth thus much, and another so much; Indeed if *God* should make such a *Census*; as every man is richer in grace, as hee excels in these better priviledges, as he hath had these better promises fulfilled more or lesse to him, so hee should be reckoned a more excellent man, and so should every man esteeme both of himself and others: and there is very great reason for it, because when a man is rich in grace, rich in spirituall blessings, when hee hath the spirituall promises, he hath *Gods* image renewed in him, he hath *God* to be his friend, who is the Governor of the World, and he is rich (as I said) whom *God* favours; he hath grace that heales his soule, which is that that makes his happinesse: It is that, which is the inward fashioning of every mans apprehension, that makes him happy, that brings comfort to him. Now they are these better promises, they are the graces, the consolations of the Spirit; the worke of the Holy Ghost, the vertue of regeneration; I say, it is that that fashions the heart, and the inward apprehension; it is that that heales the soule, and adornes it, it is that that puts into it another, a fitter

Men should  
be esteemed  
according to  
their graces.

Gods favour  
maketh rich.

fitter condition, and it farre goes beyond all other temporall felicity; that reacheth not to the inward man, it makes not him that is the Governour of the world to be his friend; other frinds he may have, that may make him potent upon the Earth, but G O D, *in whose hand is his life, and all his wayes*; it makes not him his friend. Learne thus to judge of the condition of the Church. You thinke the Church is in a miserable estate, when you see it a little under hatches, when you see it downe, when you see it harrowed and plowed by the enemies; the condition of the Church in the new Testament is to be so; they have a poore outside, yet *making many rich*; they have a sorrowfull outside, though *halway rejoycing*, as C H R I S T himselve, and all the Apostles were herein exemplary for after-Ages of the Church, yet we must not thinke, because the Church is downe a little, because it wants that outward prosperity that before it enjoyed, that therefore it is the worse: It is a true observation of one; When there were but wooden Chalice, then there were golden Priests; and in after time, when there were golden Chalice, they had wooden Priests: so it is, when the Church is in a lower condition, commonly it prospers best; and indeede properly the prosperity of the Church consists in these better promises, the outward peace is not so proper and peculiar to it.

And as of the Church, so I may say of every particular man: Thinke not with your selves

Not to take  
scandall at  
low estate of  
the Church.



selves when your outward condition is base  
 and low, that it is more miserable; your happi-  
 nesse stands in better promises: when a man  
 hath *Gains* prosperity: that is, when his soule;  
 prospers, that is his best condition; and com-  
 monly his soule prospers best, when his outward  
 estate fares the worst; the winter of his outward  
 condition is usuall y the spring time of his soule  
 we should learne to judge thus. You know, it  
 is an observable thing, that the promises of out-  
 ward prosperity were made to the Church of  
*God*, whiles it was yet in its infancy, while it  
 was weake; so that this you may observe from  
 it, that it is a signe of childishnesse and weake-  
 nesse, and infirmity, that a man is not growne  
 perfect, that hee is not growne to maturity, to  
 thinke outward prosperity to be the better con-  
 dition. The Iewes had these promises, but in  
 regard of their infancy, and when the Church  
 grew up to a greater height, when it grew to  
 manhood, as it were, we have little mention of  
 any such promises as these; the promises are  
 quite of another nature; and therefore when  
 you are able to outgrow those opinions, when  
 you are able to looke upon things with another  
 eye, when you thinke this outward prosperity  
 to bee but a trifle in comparison of the better  
 promises, it is a signe you are growne up to  
 more strength. You see *Salomon*, when hee  
 came himselfe, when his wisdome returned  
 to him (as I may so say) you see how he looked  
 on all outward things, how he goes thorow all  
 the

The soule  
 fares best som-  
 times in a low  
 condition.

A signe of  
 weaknesse loo-  
 king much to  
 outward  
 things.

Twofold wisdom  
in Salomon.

the particulars, they are *vanity and vexation of spirit*. Salomon, when he was old, when he had the wisdom of experience joyned together with that infused wisdom that hee had from the Holy Ghost, made this the summe of all, that outward prosperity is meere vanity, & extreme vanity, a vanity that hee could not enough expresse, and only he magnifies these better promises; this hee magnifies as the better condition, to feare God  
and keepe his Commandements, &c.

---

FINIS.

---

THE





THE  
ELEVENTH  
SERMON.

GENESIS 17. 2.

*And I will make my Covenant betweene mee and thee.*



He third Vse ( which we did but touch upon the last day, and meane at this time somewhat to enlarge ) is, that if the Covenant of the Law, and likewise the Old Testament, as it consists in types and shaddowes, be but a ministration of the letter, a ministration of bondage, and a ministrati- on of enmity ; But this New Covenant, this Covenant of grace, is the ministration of the Spirit, the ministration of love, the ministrati- on of freedome, the ministration of righteous- nesse,

nesse, and the ministration of life: then, beloved, we may gather this from it, that if a man will obtaine the Spirit, and thereby mortifie the deeds of the body, if hee would bee delivered from the bondage of sinne and death; then let him make use of, and apply to himselfe the Covenant of Grace, the free promises of the pardon and remission of sinnes, let him apply them, that is the way to get the Spirit, that is the way to mortifie the deeds of the flesh, that is the way to get his heart changed, that is the way to be made a new creature. For the better understanding of which, this is to be observed, that that which keeps every man off, that which keeps men in a condition of strangenesse from the life of *God*, is, because they see such difficulties in the Commandments of *God*, as they are not able to keepe, when they looke upon the Commandement, and on the stubbornnesse of their owne hearts, and the indisposition that is in them to yeeld obedience, they thinke there is no hope, and therefore they never goe about it: for they see the Commandement, and they finde in their owne heart no disposition to keep it, but an aptnesse to rise in rebellion against it; I say this keeps men off from the life of *God*. But, on the other side, when a man lookes upon the promises, he begins to see the *Covenant* that his sinnes shall be put away, hee begins to see the goodnesse, and the mercy, and the tender compassion of *God* towards him; hee begins to see a possibility of fulfilling the Law; in such a manner

Difficulties in  
Gods com-  
mands keepe  
men from  
holinesse.



manner as GOD now requires; Then his heart melteth, hee becomes not onely applyable to the Commandement, but is ready to delight in it; this a Man gets by applying his heart to the Covenant of Grace, or by applying the Covenant of Grace to himselfe; That very applying of the promises of forgiveness, I say, it begets a disposition in the heart, which the Scriptures call a new life; that even as you see the Sunne, when it applies its beames to a fitly disposed matter, and staves upon it, when it pitcheth its beames upon it with any continuance, it begins to beget life and motion in it, and makes it a living creature: so doth the Covenant of Grace, when it is applyed to the heart of a Man, it begins to beget life in him, and to make him a new creature, it makes him another Man: there is that power in the Covenant of Grace, in the promises of the pardon and forgiveness of sins, that it begets another life in a man, it makes him a new creature, it makes him a living creature to God, which before he was not.

The ground of which you shall see, 2 Cor. 3. 6. *Hee hath made us able Ministers of the New Testament, not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter kills, but the spirit gives life.* Marke it, the meaning of it is this, when the Covenant of works is delivered to you, that is, when you heare the Law, the Commands, the duty you cannot performe, there is no more delivered to you but the bare Letter, that is, you know the duty, and no more. And what doth this duty doe? What

*Simile*

2 Cor. 3. 6.

doe these Commandements and precepts doe, when they are applyed to the heart of a Man? Saith hee, they kill. Now that which kills, fights before it kills, and that which fights must needes be an enemy: So then the Commandement is an enemy, that is, every Man esteemes it as an enemy to himselfe, and therefore hath an enemy-like affection to it againe; That is, he hates it, he would be rid of it, he wisheth there were no such Law or Commandement, hee desires it should bee dealt with as hee would have an enemy dealt with, hee would have it utterly taken away; When they grow in enmity one with another, as indeede they doe, the naked Commandement and the heart are at enmitie: For the Commandement would have one thing, and the heart would have another, there are contrarie wils, and there is a striving betweene them, the one striving this way, the other that way, the one resisting the other, and in the end, the Law and the Commandement gets the victory; Because the sting of the Law is sinne: Now the Law is the cause of sinne, as a straight Rule is the cause of crookednesse; For without the Law there should bee no sin: Now it causeth sinne: For if there were no Law, you know, there could bee no offence, no transgression; Because there could bee nothing against which the transgression could come; This sinne is the death of a Man: So now the letter kills: But come now to the Covenant of Grace, with the Text, *it is a ministracion of the Spirit,* and

An enmity betweene the heart and the command.

How the Law is the cause of sinne.



and the Spirit gives life; That is, when a Man lookes on the *Covenant* of Grace, he lookes not on it now as an enemy, as hee did before upon the Commandement, but hee sees in it much love, and much friendship towards him; he sees *God* intends not any hurt, any evill to him, as hee apprehended before; he sees *God* exceeding kinde and mercifull, and willing to put away all his sinnes, and willing to accept the sincerity of his obedience, though there be not a perfection of obedience, now hee begins to change his opinion, both of *God* and of all his Lawes, and precepts; When he sees *Gods* kindnesse towards him, and his compassion and readinesse to forgive him, then his heart begins to relent towards the *Lord* againe, he begins to magnifie *Gods* goodnesse, and to condemne himselfe, hee beleeves those promises, and thence hee growes up in love towards *GOD*; I say, hee growes up in Faith and Love, and in this act of Faith is the Spirit infused into his heart; This Spirit being thus infused, writes the Law in his inward parts, that is it that breedes in him a holy disposition, that enables him in some measure to keepe the Law, it prints in him all those graces that give him strength to observe the Commandements that *GOD* hath given him: so that, if a Man will goe about this great worke, to change his heart, and to change his life, let him not goe about it as a morall Man; That is, let him not onely consider what Commandements there are, what the reſtitution is

*Note.*

Faith purgeth

Heb. 9. 14.

that the LORD requires, and how to bring his heart to it; but let him goe about it as a Christian, that is, let him beleve the promises of pardon in the blood of *Christ*, and the very beleaving of those promises will be able to *cleanse* and purge *the heart from dead workes*: (In that place wee then named, and wee could doe no more but name it) you shall finde it, *Heb. 9. 14.*

*How much more shall the blood of Christ, which by the eternall Spirit offered himselfe without fault to God, purge your conscience from dead workes, to serve the living GOD.* The meaning of it is this, when a Man hath once applyed the blood of *Christ* for his justification, this effect will follow upon it, there will accompany it a certaine vigour, a certaine vertue, a certaine power and strength, which will also purge his conscience from dead workes; That is, there shall goe a power of the Holy Ghost together with this blood, that shall not onely forbid him, and shew him that hee ought not to doe such and such evill things, but it shall cleanse his conscience from those rootes of dead workes, those corrupt lusts, and sinfull affections, that are in him, that dispose him to that evill; he shall find this power growing upon him, if hee doe but apply the blood, that is, if he apply the promise of pardon and forgiveness through the blood of *Iesu Christ*. The like you shall see, *Gal. 3. 5.*

Galat. 3. 5.

*Hee that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles amongst you, doth hee doe it through the workes of the Law, or through the hearing of Faith preached?*



preached? That is, saith the Apostle, if I should onely deliver to you the Commandements, and the Precepts, and the Rules, by which you ought to walke, I might preach long enough to you, but you should never have ability to keepe any of these; saith hee, you may observe those that preach the Law to you, did you receive the Spirit then? No, but when I preached to you the promises of pardon and forgiveness, then you received the Spirit, it was conveyed into your hearts.

Now, I take it, there is a double meaning of this infusion of the Spirit here: In the time of the Apostles, there was a miraculous infusion and giving of the Holy Ghost, that when they preached to them, as *Peter* to *Cornelius*, and *Paul* to others, and layd their hands on them, the *Holy Ghost* fell on them; That is, they were filled presently with an immediate infusion of knowledge, they had, some the gift of tongues, some extraordinary manifestation of the Spirit; saith the Apostle, when this was done, was it done by the preaching of the Law? Was it not done by the preaching of *Christ*, and by offering to you the pardon and forgiveness of sinnes through him? Therefore you see how he expresseth it; He therefore that ministrETH the Spirit to you, and workes miracles among you, how doth hee worke these miracles? Hee doth them not by the workes of the Law, but by the hearing of Faith preached; that is, by our preaching of it, and your hearing it:

A double infusion of the spirit.



A man by his  
owne strength  
cannot pre-  
vaile against a  
lust.

Now looke how the spirit was thence conveyed  
to men, after the same manner it must now bee  
conveyed to us: So that beleeving the promi-  
ses is the way to get the heart healed; When a  
Man hath any strong lust to conflict withall, he  
must not thinke, that setting himselfe with  
strong vowes and resolutions to resist it, is  
the way to kill it: No, the way is to get  
assurance of pardon, to get assurance of Gods  
love to himselfe in *Christ*, to labour to get com-  
munion betweene **CHRIST** and himselfe, to  
labour to delight in *God*, as hee will when there  
once are termes of 'reconciliation betweene  
them, and when this is done, his heart wil grow  
to an application of the Commandement, it  
will close with the Commandement: Where-  
as before it resisted it, and rebelled against it,  
it will cleave to it, and love it, and delight in it,  
and will receive an impression from it: This I  
take likewise to be the meaning of that *2 Pet. 1.*  
*4. Hereby (saith he) we have most gracious promi-*  
*ses, and are thereby made partakers of the Divine*  
*nature: that by them we shall bee partakers of*  
*the godly nature; That is, by beleeving the*  
*promises of pardon, wee are thereby made par-*  
*takers of the godly nature, there is a renewing*  
*there is a change of the nature, a Man is made*  
*another creature, even while hee is looking on*  
*the promise of pardon and remission, the pro-*  
*mises of the New Covenant, that offer Iesus Christ,*  
*and the gift of righteousness through him, e-*  
*ven by beleeving those promises it is wrought.*

2 Peter 1.4.

You

You may compare this with that *Romanes 6.* where this objection is made, If there bee a promise of pardon, and of Grace, through *Christ*, then belike we may live as we list? No, saith the Apostle, doe you but beleve those promises of grace, and the care is easie for the rest; In the 1, 2, 3 Verses, *What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sinne that grace may abound? God forbid: Shall wee that are dead to sinne, live yet therein? Know you not, that as many as are baptized into Iesus Christ, are baptized into his death? The meaning is this, if once you receive Iesus Christ, and the pardon and remission of sinnes through him, you cannot be so baptized into him, but you must be baptized into his death; That is, of necessitie sinne must bee crucified in you, you must bee dead to sinne, as hee was dead; you cannot be baptized into him for justification, but you must be baptized likewise for mortification of the flesh, and for resurrection to newnesse of life; Know you not, that all that are baptized into Iesus CHRIST, that is, that are baptized into him for reconciliation with God, of necessitie they must bee also baptized into his death? Therefore, saith hee, you are dead to sinne, by being thus baptized with CHRIST, it is impossible you should live in it. So, I say, hee that hath the strongest Faith, hee that beleeves in the greatest degree the promises of pardon and remission, I dare boldly say, hee hath the holiest heart, and the holiest life: For that is the roote of it, it ariseth from*

Rom. 6, 1, 2, 3.

He that hath the strongest Faith, hath the holiest life.



that roote, sanctification ariseth from justification, the blood of *Christ* hath in it a power, now onely to wash us from the guilt of sinne, but to cleanse, and to purge us likewise from the power and staine of sinne: And therefore, I say, the best way to get a great degree of sanctification, and of mortification of sinfull lusts, the best way to get a greater measure of the graces of the Spirit, to grow up to greater holinesse of conversation, is to labour to grow in Faith, in the beliefe of those promises of the Gospell: For there is no other reason in the world, why in the New Testament there is an infusion of the Spirit that gives life, but because now there are more evident promises of pardon, and forgiveness, and reconciliation with God, which by the Covenant of workes could not bee. And so much shall serve for this.

The fourth and maine Vse, that wee are to make of this, from this description of the Covenant, is to learne to know the ground upon which we expect salvation, and the fulfilling of all the promises; The ground of all is this Covenant. My beloved, it is the greatest point that ever wee had yet opportunitie to deliver to you; Yea, it is the maine point that the Ministers of the Gospell can deliver at any time, neyther can they deliver a point of greater moment, nor can you heare any, than the description of the Covenant of Grace: This is that you must lay up for the foundation of all your comforts, it hath beene the corner stone upon which

A double power in Christs blood.

Vse. 4.  
To know on what ground we looke for salvation.

which the Saints have beene built, from the beginning of the world, unto this day: There is no ground you have to beleve you shall be saved, there is no ground to beleve, that any promise of *God* shall be made good to you, to beleve that you shall have the price of the high calling of *GOD* in *Iesus Christ*, and those glorious riches of the inheritance prepared for us in him; I say, there is no other ground at all, but upon this Covenant; all that wee teach you, from day to day, are but conclusions drawne from this Covenant they are all built upon this: Therefore, if ever you had cause to attend any thing, you have reason to attend to this; I say, this Covenant betweene *GOD* and us. And therefore wee will labour to open to you now more cleerely and distinctly this Covenant; though a difficult thing it is, to deliver to you cleerely what it is, and those that belong to it: Yet you must know it, for it is the ground of all you hope for, it is that that every Man is built upon, you have no other ground but this, *GOD* hath made a Covenant with you, and you are in Covenant with him: therefore, that I may shew it to you, we will proceed from the very first preaching of the Covenant to *Adam*. When the Serpent had overcome the Woman and supplanted her and the Man, and had throwne them from their happinesse, *God* himselfe first preached the Gospell to them, and that in these termes; after he had charged them with their sinne, and had humbled them, (for that

A hard thing  
to unfold the  
Covenant of  
Grace.

God first hum-  
bleth, & then  
comforteth.

that method hee useth ) hee shewes *Eve* what shee had done, and saith to *Adam*, *Hast thou eaten of the Tree of which I said thou shalt not eate?* hee shewes them their sinne, and after that the curse; then hee begins to tell them hee will not leave them without hope; It is true, saith hee, the Serpent is your enemy, and hath overcome you: But, saith hee, you shall not bee slaves to him, and captivated to him for ever; But you shall resist him, and bee enemies to him, *I will put enmitie* betweene the Serpent and the Woman, and you shall fight together, there shall be a warre betweene you, and this shall bee the issue of the warre, the Serpent shall afflict you, and hurt you something, but thou shalt overcome him, and bruise his head, thou shalt bee the death of him, thou shalt have the victorie over him. The Woman might aske, But how can this bee? Alas, I am weake, I finde my selfe too weake already in the Battle, hee is too strong for mee? Saith hee, I will give thee a certaine seede, one that shall bee borne of thee, and hee shall be an enemy to the Serpent and his seede; that is, to all evill men, that are called his seede, because they are like him: there shall be enmity betweene them two, & he shall fight the Battle for thee: And in that Battle between him and the Serpent, this shall be the issue, the Serpent shall *bruise his heele*, that is, he shall prevayle so farre as to cause men to crucifie him, which is but as the bruising of the heele; But, saith hee, hee shall *breake his head*, he shall

The Serpents  
seede, who.



shall utterly destroy him, and overcome him for thee: So shalt thou prevaile againe, and be set in the place, and enjoy all the promises. The Church continued in the vertue of this promise, this preaching of the Gospell, untill *Abrahams* time, and then *God* begins to manifest his Covenant againe; hee calts forth *Abraham*, and tels him, hee meanes to make a Covenant with him, hee tels him that hee will blesse him, and that all the Nations of the World should bee blessed in him: one while it is said thus; another while, *all the Nations of the earth shall be blessed in thy seede.*

There are many difficulties in this, how the promise should bee made to the seede; how againe it should bee made to *Abraham* himselfe? (for it is said to be made to both) how all Nations are blessed in *Abraham*, and yet it is said, they shall be blessed in thy seede.

Again, the Condition of the Covenant, which hee requires of *Abraham*, is the same thing that *God* makes a part likewise of his own Covenant.

Besides, *G O D S* Covenant seemes not to bee the giving of the *Messiah*, but the giving of the promised Land, giving him a Sonne, and making him a great Nation; many difficulties there are in this: Therefore, that you may understand them distinctly, I will deliver it thus to you; not in the method wherein it is set downe, but so as I shall make it much clearer and perspicuous to you, and best

Difficulties in  
the Covenant  
to *Abraham*.

to bee understood by you : Therefore you shall observe in *G O D S* preaching the Gospell to *Abraham*.

First, the *Covenant*.

Secondly, the condition of it.

Thirdly, the confirmation of it.

Fourthly, the parts of the *Covenant*.

Fifthly, the objections the Jewes might bee ready to make against it. And shewing those five, wee will open it fully unto you.

1. The *Cove-*  
*nant* made  
with *Abraham*.

First, The *Covenant* that *G O D* made with *Abraham*, was after this manner : *Abraham*, saith the *L O R D*, I will give thee a seede, and in that seede, both thou thy selfe, and all the Nations of the Earth shall bee blessed; And the question is, how this shall bee done ? Saith the *Lord*, hee shall blesse thee, hee shall have power in his hands to blesse thee; for I will make him a Prophet, a Priest, and a King. All the blessings that the people ever had, they were conveyed to them by these three, by their Priests, by their Prophets, and by their Kings : Saith he, this promise I have made to that seede, that he shall be a Prophet, a Priest, and a King; Yea, saith hee, that seede of mine that I shall send, that shall be borne of thee, hee shall bee my Sonne, and my heyre, and in him likewise thou shalt bee made an heire and a sonne; An heyre of all the World, as hee is a Sonne, as he is endowed with all spiritual priviledges belonging to him; yea, thou shalt not onely have this, but, saith he, thou shalt even have the Spirit of  
the

All blessings  
in Christ the  
promised seede.

the Sonne, and be made like to him, thou shalt be made a Prophet, as he is a Prophet, he shall teach thee so, by infusing of the same spirit that dwells in himselfe, hee shall teach thee such knowledge, that thou shalt be a Prophet, as hee is; yea, he shall make thee a Priest, as himselfe is, thine owne person shall be accepted as well as what thou doest: Yea, hee shall make thee a King, as hee is a King; That is, thou shalt have the spirit of a King, to rule over all thy sinfull lusts, and dispositions, thou shalt have the peace of a King, the joy, the comfort, the riches of a King, and the victory of a King, I will deliver thee from all thine enemies: And for a Type of this, (for the Covenant was made after *Melchisedech* came to him, as wee may see, Chapt. 14.) thou shalt see a resemblance of it, in that *Melchisedech* hath done to thee, hee came to thee, and blessed thee, and hee was a King, a Priest, and a Prophet; Hee was the King of peace, and the Priest of the most high GOD; and what was the blessing that *Melchisedech* brought to *Abraham*? Saith hee, the LORD blesse thee; He blessed him; That is, hee bade him goe on, and prosper, hee wished that all blessings might come upon him, that he might overcome his enemies, &c. That hee might have blessings of all sorts, they are not set down particularly; And (in a word) hee made him *heire of all things*: For (saith he) I am the Priest of the most high GOD, *possessor of Heaven and Earth*: And heere I have brought thee Bread  
and

Christ's offices  
communicated to every  
Christian.

Genes. 14. 7.

*Melchisedech*  
his blessing of  
*Abraham.*



and Wine, that is, an earnest, a little for the whole, to shew this to thee, that GOD hath made thee heyre of all things: And thereupon, when the King of *Sodome* presently offered him the riches that he had taken, when he came backe from the victory, No, saith *Abraham*, I will not take them; For it is the LORD that blesseth me, it is he that shall make me rich, it is he that is my exceeding great reward, it is he that hath entred into *Covenant* with mee; And therefore, saith he, it shal never be said, that the *King of Sodome* hath made *Abraham* rich, I have received all from him, and I will restore all to him: Therefore, you see, hee payd Tythes to *Melchisedech*, he gave him the tenth of all that hee had: So, (saith GOD) that *Messiah*, that promised seede, is a Priest after the order of *Melchisedech*: Hee is a King, Hee shall come and blesse thee, after that manner hee shall make thee heyre of all things, onely thou shalt doe him homage, saith hee, as thou didst to *Melchisedech*. What was that homage? That thou shalt give him the tenth of all thou hast, that is, by that thou shalt shew thine homage, thou shalt shew that thou art bound to shew him obedience, thou shalt shew upon what tenure thou holdest all that thou hast: Thou givest him that as a Rent, acknowledging him to bee the LORD, of whom thou hast received all things, and to whom thou owest all things: Therefore *Abraham* would take nothing of any else, hee would take nothing of the

Holy men  
carefull to  
give God the  
glory of his  
blessings.

Tythe a signe  
of homage.

the King of *Sodome*, nor hee would doe nothing for the King of *Sodome*; that is, not for him, nor any Man, but as from *God*, as a meanes under him; This is the great *Covenant* that the *Lord* made with *Abraham*: So you see how the promise is made to the seede: For the promise was made thus to the seede, *God* hath promised that he should bee a King, a Priest, and a Prophet, *I have sworne*, saith hee, *thou art a Priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedech*: Againe, *I will glve unto him the Kingdome of David*. Thus the promises come after in the Old Testament: So the promise is made to the seede, and againe, it is the seede that blesteth him. This is the promise.

Now for the Condition that *GOD* required of *Abraham*, it was this, Thou shalt beleeve this, thou shalt beleeve that such a *Messiah* shall bee sent into the World: Art thou able to beleeve this, *Abraham*? Hee answers, Yes. Well, saith the *Lord*, I will put thee to the tryall, I will see whether thou canst beleeve this or no; and withall, I will give thee a signe or evidence that I am able to performe it: Saith he, I will give thee a Sonne: It is true, thou art as a dead Man, thou art almost a hundred yeers old, and the Wombe of *Sarah* is dead: I will promise thee a Sonne, Art thou able to beleeve it? Againe, thou seest the Land of *Canaan*, thou hast not one foot in it, I will give this Land in the length and breadth of it, for thy possession: Art thou able to beleeve this? Saith the Text,  
*Abraham*

2. The condition of the covenant which is Faith,

*Abraham* did beleeve, and *God* accounted that *Faith* of his for righteousnesse, that is he accepted him for it; For that *Faith* he reckoned him a Man fit to make a *Covenant* withall, hee accounted him a righteous person; that is, he was willing to enter into *Covenant* with him, because hee beleaved him. Beloved, this was not directly the beleaving of the *Messiah* ( hee did intend the *Messiah*) but it was the beleaving that hee should have a sonne. You see, the Text is plaine, *Gen. 15.* when *God* had said to *Abraham*, that hee would bee his exceeding great reward, saith *Abraham*, *I goe childlesse, and the Steward of my house will bee mine heyre.* Saith the *LORD* to him, *Verse 4. This Man shall not bee thine heyre, but one that shall come out of thine owne bowels shall be thine heyre.* Goe looke upon the *Starres*, if thou bee able to number them, then thou shalt number the seede that thou shalt have. Saith the Text, *Verse 6. Abraham beleaved, and hee accounted that to him for righteousnesse.* So likewise hee said in the *Verses* following, againe hee said, *I am the Lord that brought thee out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give thee this Land to inherit it.* So, beloved, this was the promise. Now, when *Abraham* had beleaved this, saith the *LORD* to him; This *Faith* of thine, that is to say, not this particular act, by which thou beleevest that thou shalt have a sonne, that shall be thine immediate heyre, but that habit, that Grace of faith, that beleaving disposition in thee, whereby thou are able to beleve this promise, saith he,

*Genes. 15. 4.*

*Verse 6.*



hee, with the same Faith thou also beleevest the promise of the *Messiah*, that a certaine seed shall be given thee, in whom all the Nations of the Earth shall bee blessed. Saith he, this Faith of thine I take for the condition of the *Covenant* on thy part, I will for this reckon thee righteous, I will account thee as a Man fit to be entered into *Covenant* withall. Againe, the *Lord* tryed him afterward, when *Isaac* was growne, ver. 22. Goe, saith he, and kill thy sonne: we see *Abraham* was able to keepe it, hee went, and meant to have done it in good earnest; so there was the same ground for beleeving now; that there was before: For, saith hee, *G O D* could have raised him from the dead, when I had killed him, as well as make mee, when I was dead, and *Sarabs* wombe, when that was dead, to bring forth a sonne: *G O D* can as well rayse him from the dead, as hee could give him mee from a dead wombe at first. Wee see that *God* upon this renews the *Covenant* againe, and renews it with an Oath, Sure, saith he, I will performe my *Covenant*, since I see that thou beleevest, and fearest mee, and preferrest me before thine onely sonne: These are but the *Concomitants* of his Faith. So that it was this act of *Abraham*, by which hee did beleeve the promise of *God*, that made him partaker of the *Covenant*. And if you aske now what is the condition that makes everie Man partaker of this *Covenant* of *Grace*? It is nothing but onely Faith, abilitie to beleeve it, that *G O D* would

D d

send

The ground of  
*Abrahams* faith

All other promises are accomplished in Christ.

send such a *Messiah*, before the Law, and that hee hath exhibited, and sent him since: For you must know this, that all the promises, the very giving of *Isaac*, the giving of the promised Land, all these were but shaddowes, as it were, of the great promise, of the maine *Covenant* in *CHRIST*. So likewise, that act of *Abrahams* faith, whereby hee beleevved that hee should have a Sonne, and beleevved that *GOD* would give his Children possession of that land where hee had not a foote, but was likewise a branch, and a shaddow, and a pledge, as it were, of the maine act of Faith, whereby he beleevved the promised seed should be given him, in whom himselfe, and all the Nations of the Earth should bee blessed. So when wee have found out this, what the condition is, that *God* requires of every man to bee made partaker of his *Covenant*; It is nothing but to beleevve in *GOD*; that is, *God* saith, I will give my Sonne to you; *To us a sonne is given, &c.* that shall bee the promised seed, and I will make him a King, a Priest, and a Prophet, to blesse you; Hee shall give you remission of sinnes, &c. He shall teach you and instruct you to mortifie your lusts, and shall make you partakers of his Kingdome; Hee shall make you heyres, and sonnes; This is a very great promise, Can you beleevve this? If a Man will but beleevve *GOD* now, it makes him partaker of the *Covenant*, this puts him within the *Covenant*: You will say, this is very strange; How can it be,

Note.

bee, that so small a condition as this, that to beleeve, should make a Man partaker of the Covenant? That upon which all the promises hang initially, is nothing but beleeving. You see *Abraham* did no more but beleeve *GOD*, when hee told him hee should have a Sonne, you see how much *GOD* made of that: So it is with us, if wee doe but beleeve this, *GOD* will make as much of it, hee will make good all the promises of the *Covenant* to us: But, I say, this hath neede of a reason, why it is suspended onely upon Faith, and believe; The reason is this, marke it well, it is a point of exceeding great moment.

First, though there were nothing but Faith, yet that beleeving, brings with it, and workes sanctification, and holinesse of life: For whereas you might object, May a Man beleeve this promise, and yet walke according to the lusts of his owne ignorance, and so to bee made partaker of the *Covenant*? Let him, if hee can beleeve truly, and doe this; but it is impossible, let him beleeve, and the other will follow. Behold *Abraham* himselfe, (to give you an instance of it) hee beleeved *GOD*, and it was accounted to him for righteousness; I say, it was enough for him to beleeve *GOD*: For that drawes after it inherent righteousness of sanctification, and holinesse of life: For, saith the Text, *Rom. 4.* *Abraham* is said to beleeve *GOD*, when hee said hee should have a sonne, hee gave him glory, that is the ground, which

Why Faith is the condition of the Covenant.

1. Reason. Faith draweth holines with it



How faith  
drawes other  
graces.

drawes with it all other graces after this manner; Hee that beleeves **GOD**, hath a good opinion of him, hee loves him; Hee that loves him, must needs bee full of good workes. Besides, hee that beleeves him, when **GOD** shall say to him, *I am thy exceeding great reward*, see that thou keepe close to mee, thou shalt have an eye upon mee, and walke with mee from day to day. Let a Man beleeve that *God is Al-sufficient*, that hee will bee a *Sunne and a Shield* to him, and his *exceeding great reward*, he will be ready to doe it. *Abraham* did so, when **GOD** called him from his Fathers House, and from his kindred, hee was ready to doe so; when *God* would have him to offer up his onely sonne, he was ready to doe it: For he beleeved *God*, he beleeved his promise, and his ability and willingness to helpe him; hee beleeved his Almighty power, and therefore whatsoever *God* bid him doe, hee would doe it; he preferred *God* before his owne ease, before his owne profit, before his onely sonne whom hee loved: Let any Man beleeve as *Abraham* did, and of necessity it will produce good workes; Let a Man beleeve truly, and truth of beliefe will bring forth truth of holinesse: And therefore wee heare what *Saint James* saith, *Jam. 2.* *Abraham was justified by Faith*: It is true: But, saith hee, *Abraham's Faith had workes joyned with it*: For it was not a dead, a counterfeit Faith, but a true Faith, and being a true Faith, you see, *Abraham* had workes aswell as Faith: For when **GOD** bade

*Jam. 2.*

him

him offer his sonne, hee did it : Was not that an exceeding great worke ? Saith the Apostle there : So say I, no wonder that it is by Faith, that the LORD requires no more but to beleeve : For when a Man beleeves, workes will follow, it will breede holinesse of life ; let him beleeve GOD to bee an exceeding great reward, that hee is a Sunne and a Shield, hee will follow GOD wheresoever hee leades him ; Let him beleeve the promise of GOD, when hee describes himselfe, hee must needs have a good opinion of him, and love him, and bee exceeding fruitfull in good workes, and obedience to him ; therefore that is one reason for it.

A second reason of it is, because it could not bee done by obedience to the Law ; it was impossible to have made the sonnes of men partakers of the Covenant that way : For if it could have beene done by the Law, and by the Commandement, it should have beene ; but the LORD tryed that in *Adam*, hee gave *Adam* a Commandement, and abilitie to keepe it (for hee made him perfectly righteous and innocent) yet *Adam* did not keepe it. Put the case that GOD should have tryed him the second time, and have given him a Commandement againe, and not have required the Condition of Faith, but of obedience, hee would have broken it, as hee did before ; and therefore it could not bee by the Law : Therefore it must needs bee by Faith, and the pro-

2. Reason.  
Nothing but  
Faith could be  
the condition  
of the Cove-  
nant.

Faith makes  
the promises  
sure to us.

Galat. 3. 21.

mises, otherwise it could never have beene sure. *Adam* brake it, surely, if hee brake it, wee should have broken it, if it had beene any other way but by Faith: And therefore wee see what the Apostle saith, *Galat. 3. 21. Is the Law then against the promise of GOD? GOD forbid: For if there had beene a Law given that could have given life, surely righteousnesse had beene by the Law: If Adam had stood, and had kept the Law, and if men could have entred into Covenant, and have kept it, Christ had beene spared, the Covenant of Grace had beene spared; if righteousnesse had beene by the Law, there had needed no Messiah, there had needed no Covenant of Grace; and therefore, through the infirmitie of the flesh, (Adams flesh, that would not keepe the Law, and ours, that is not able to keepe it) there was noother way to make mankinde partaker of the Covenant of Grace, but onely by Faith, by beleeving God, and by taking the promise, and the gift of Righteousnesse, through Iesus Christ: for it could never else in likelihood have beene sure to the seede.* This is the way to make it sure, when there is no more but an acceptation required, and not exact obedience to the Commandement.

3. Reason.  
Faith best an-  
swers Gods  
Covenant.

Thirdly, it is by Faith: Because nothing else can answer the Covenant, but Faith: You see, the Covenant is not a Commandement, *Doe this and live*, but the Covenant is a promise, *I will give thee*, it runnes all upon promises,



mises, *I will give thee a seede, and in that seede thou shalt bee blessed. I will give thee this good Land, &c.* So that the Covenant of Grace stand on GODS part all in promises: Now, you know that it is Faith that answers the promise: For the promise is to be beleaved, if the *Covenant* had stood in precepts, and Commandments, and rules of the Law, then it must have beene answered by workes, and obedience, and therefore it could not bee by obedience: For that holds not proportion, there is not agreement betweene them; But since the *Covenant* consists of promises, that must needes bee by beleaving, and not by workes.

Fourthly and lastly, it is by Faith, because the *Lord* would have it by free Grace, and not of debt: For, if the LORD should give a Law and rules to men, and promise them life upon it, when they had performed the worke, they would challenge it of debt: No, saith the LORD, it is an inheritance, I doe not use to deal with my Children, as men doe with their servants, that I should give them worke to doe, and when they have done it, I should give them wages, then they would come and challenge it at my hands by way of debt: No, saith the LORD, this is an inheritance, and you are my sonnes, and you shall have it given you freely, and given you as it becomes a Father to give it, so you shall take it; Therefore that it might bee of free grace, and not of debt, it

The Covenant on Gods part is promises.

4. Reason. Faith receives it as a free gift

Faith excludes  
boasting.

is by Faith, and not by workes. And that is added, likewise, if it had beene by workes, men would have beene ready to boast, and have said, I have done this, I am able to keepe the Law, therefore the promise of eternall life shall bee made good unto mee, I shall receive it as wages, men would boast in themselves: No, saith the LORD, no creature shall boast in it selfe: For that puts every Man further from the LORD, the more a Man rejoyceth in himselfe, the more hee stands upon his owne bottome, the more hee is divorced from GOD, and separated from him: But, saith hee, *Hee that rejoyceth, let him rejoyce in the LORD*: For that fits a Man for the LORD, and therefore I will have it by Faith, it shall not bee by workes. So you see now what is the Condition. Surely, looke how *Abraham* was made partaker of the Covenant, so every one of us must bee; *Abraham* was made partaker of it by Faith, so shall every Man bee made partaker of it by Faith, and no otherwise. *Abraham* beleev'd *God* when hee had a promise, and because hee beleev'd him, (not that particular act of Faith, but) that grace of faith, whereby he beleev'd this, and the other promises of the *Messiah*, was counted to him for righteousness: And so for this cause, because wee beleev'e the promises, and the Covenant of Grace, therefore the LORD accepts us, and accounts us righteous, And because this seemes strange to the sonnes of men, therefore we see with how much

actoe

adoe *Paul* labours to make it good, what strong objections were against it in all times. I have shewed the reason: Now when you reade *Rom.* 3. and 4. and *Gal.* 3. and 4. you may know the better the meaning of those places. Well, you see the *Covenant*, you heare that there is such a *Covenant*; secondly, you see the Condition of this *Covenant*.

The third thing is the confirmation of the *Covenant*; when a Man heares that **G O D** will vouchsafe so much favour unto mankinde, a Man is ready to say as *Gedeon* did, *alas, my family is poore in Manasses*, I am the least in all my Fathers House. And who am I, that should bee rayfed up hitherto? That such a promise as this shou'd bee made to mee, that I should goe and save *Israel*? &c. I say, after the same manner a Man might bee ready to object. Alas, what are wee the sonnes of men, that the great **G O D** of Heaven and Earth should enter into such a *Covenant* with us, that hee should make us such promises as these, that he should make us heyres of the World, that hee should blesse us in that manner, to make us sonnes, to make us Kings and Priests: Saith the **L O R D**, I confesse it is a *Covenant* that needes confirmation: therefore the **L O R D** hath confirmed it all these wayes; The **L O R D** hath confirmed it, first, by his promise; saith hee, you have my sure Word for it; If that bee not enough, I will confirme it by an Oath, and because he had no greater to sweare by, hee saith, by my selfe have I sworne, that

3.  
The Confirmation of the *Covenant*.

The *Covenant* confirmed.

I.  
By Gods promise.

2.  
By his Oath.



that I will make it good : This is not enough, but he confirms it by the blood of *Christ* himselfe; the Mediator shall come, and confirme this Testament, and when the Testament is confirmed by the death of the Testator, there is no more altering of that; saith hee, *Galat. 3.* *A mans Testament no man changeth, after once it is confirmed:* and when the Testator is dead, *Heb. 5.* then the Testament is confirmed: So it is confirmed by the blood, by the death of the Testator. This is not enough, but hee hath added seales unto it, hee hath confirmed it likewise by them: Saith hee, *I will adde the seale of Circumcision, and of the Passeover.* Concerning Circumcision, saith the *Lord, Goe,* and circumcise your selves, and when I see the Circumcision, I will remember my Covenant, and make it good to you; that, as hee said of the Bow, hee set the Bow in the Cloud, saith hee, I will make my Covenant, that I will never destroy the Earth againe with Raine, this Bow shall be the witnesse of the Covenant, and when I looke upon it, I will remember my Covenant; after this manner are the signes and seales of the Covenant; Saith hee, Circumcise your selves, and when I see that, I will remember my Covenant, and will spare you, and I will make good to you all the promises of it: So likewise the Passeover, saith hee, See that you keepe it, take the Lambe, and sprinkle the blood, &c. Saith hee, when I see it, I will remember my Covenant. Where, *Beloved,* this

3.  
By the blood  
of *Christ.*  
*Galat. 3. 15.*

*Hebr. 9.*

4.  
By seales.

Circumcision.

Passeover.

is

is to be observed, that these signes or seales of the Covenant, not onely confirme the promises on GODS part, but they signifie that Faith, that condition which is required on our part: For when the LORD comes and lookes into his Church, and sees a great company in it, sees his House full, and he comes, and asks, What doe you in my House? What doe a number of those that professe themselves to bee within the compasse of the Covenant there? Their answer is, *Lord*, wee beleeve, wee are among those that keepe the Condition. If you beleeve, where is your Circumcision? I may bee you have the outward Circumcision of the flesh; but where is the Circumcision of the heart? For, if they did beleeve indeede, it would worke a change in the heart, as Faith, I told you, that is indeede a lively Faith, workes a change, it cuts off sinfull lusts, it makes a Man denie himselfe, and cleave to GOD, and serve him with a perfect heart. So againe, after that manner doth the second signe of the Covenant, which is the *Passeover*, when the LORD shall aske, Doe you beleeve? Yes, here is the sprinkling of the bloud of the Lambe, But where is the true sprinkling upon the heart & conscience? Heere is the outward *Passeover*, the outward profession, you come and take the signe and the seale, but where is the inward sprinkling? Therefore you see what was required in the *Passeover*; Saith hee, when you eate the Lambe, &c. Have you tasted of the sweet

The seales of the Covenant are signes of our faith.

Circumcision inward.

What is meant  
I.  
By sprinkling in the *Passeover*.

2.  
By eating the  
Lambe.

3.  
By going out  
of Egypt.

4.  
By sowre  
hearbs.

Rom. 2.

5.  
By cleansing  
out leaven.

sweet of the Lambe, have you ever tasted of the sweetnesse that is in *Iesus Christ*, so that you can love him, and delight in him? Are you clad like those that went out of *Egypt*, with their staves in their hands, and their feet shod; that is, are you ready to goe out of *Egypt*, that is, from sinne and wickednesse, from the state of unregeneracie; wherein you were before? Againe, have your Soules tasted of the sowre hearbes of that bondage, that now you are weary of all the bondage of sinne and Sathan, that you desire exceedingly to goe from it, that you reckon the contrarie *condition* a condition of freedome, wherein you are willing and desirous to continue? Saith the LORD, when I looke upon these signes, I will remember my *Covenant*; onely see that your *Circumcision* be not in the Letter, as wee see, *Rom. 2.* but see that you bee circumcised in your hearts; that there not onely be a *Passover*, but see that you *keepe the Passover with sinceritie*, see that all Leaven bee cleansed out of your hearts, that is, that your hearts be emptie of the dominion of every sinne; see that you have tasted of the sowrenesse of that bondage, that you bee willing to bee rid of it, see that you bee willing to travell out of *Egypt*, to another, to a further Countrey, see that this be reall, not in profession and shew but in dede; And, saith the LORD, I will remember my *Covenant*, and these are the confirmations of the *Covenant*, saith the LORD, you shall not neede to doubt it, I have sworne, it is  
repeated



repeated *Hebr. 6.* Besides, it is confirmed with bloud, with the death of the Testator, and there is none that alters the will of the dead, when hee is dead they adde nothing to it, nor take nothing from it: Besides, I have confirmed it with seales, and therefore it stands unalterable. These three things wee have observed now in this *Covenant.*

---

*FINIS.*

---





THE  
 TWELFTH  
 SERMON.

GENESIS 17. 2.

*And I will make my Covenant betweene mee and thee.*



Ye have heard what the *Covenant* is in the generall.

The fourth thing is, What the particular branches, and parts, or gifts, and priviledges of this *Covenant* are, and those wee will reduce to these three heads.

Now the three parts of the *Covenant* are answerable to the three Offices of CHRIST. For, wee told you, it is CHRIST himselfe, to whom the promises are immediately made; hee is a Priest, a King, and a Prophet, it is he that makes good

4.  
 The parts of  
 the *Covenant*  
 three.



1<sup>st</sup> Parr, Remission  
of finnes.

The excellencie  
of Christs  
Priesthood.

Hebr. 10. 22.

Note.

good all the parts of the *Covenant*, and he doth it according to all his three Offices; Remission of finnes, he gives as a Priest: the other Priests were but a shadow of this Priesthood of *Christ*, hee is the great High Priest, that is *holy, and harmlesse, and undefiled, that is higher than the Heavens*; the great High Priest, that is *entred* (saith the Text) *into the very Heavens themselves*; hee that *sits at the right hand of God*, and is now present with him; hee that is *not entred in by the blood of Bulls, and of Goats, but by his owne blood*. This is such a high Priest as is able indeede to give remission of finnes, and therefore saith the Apostle, *Hebr. 10. 22. Seeing wee have such a high Priest, doubt not, but now come with full assurance of Faith*, when you see such an High Priest as this: If they were able to beleeve, that had but a weake Man to be their Priest, before the comming of *Christ*, that offered for his owne finnes, aswell as for the finnes of others, that often repeated his Sacrifice, that had but the blood of Bulls and Goats, that did but enter into the Tabernacle; saith hee, when you see *Iesus Christ* himselfe come, that hath no sinne of his owne, that offered one perfect Sacrifice that hee needes not to repeate, that entred not into the Tabernacle, but into the Heaven it selfe, that did this with his owne blood, and not with the blood of Beasts, saith hee, *draw neere now, with assurance of Faith: that is, Why should you make question now? you have great ground of assuring your selves, that*

that your finnes shall bee forgiven; Now you may *trust perfectly to the grace* revealed through him. This is the first.

The second is, I will teach you knowledge, and that hee doth as a Prophet; you *shall no more teach every Man his Brother, but all shall bee taught of mee.* Beloved, it is another kinde of teaching, when the LORD teacheth us knowledge, than that is that wee can have from the hands of men; *Christ* is another kinde of Prophet, you come not to heare him speake, to heare him teaching, as a man heares other Lectures, where his understanding is informed, but hee is such a Prophet, as enlightens everie Man within, that comes into the world; that is, every Man that is enlightned, is enlightned by him, hee is such a Prophet, as *baptizeth you with the Holy Ghost*, hee is such a Prophet that inakes mens hearts to burne within them when hee speakes to them; such a Prophet as saith to *Matthew*, *Follow mee*, and hee doth it: Such a Prophet as saith to his Ministers, *Goe teach all Nations, and I will bee with you, and I will make you able Ministers, not of the Letter, but of the Spirit*, there is no Man in the world can say this, but this great Prophet, and this is the Prophet that the *Lord* hath rayled up, the Prophet that he promised hee would *rayse another like Moses*, that great Prophet, that should teach men after another fashion than all the Prophets before were ever able to doe. And that is the second part of the *Covenant*.

2. Part.  
Knowledge:

The excellen-  
cy of Christs  
Prophetical  
Office.

Wee may know many things, but it is a hard thing to know as wee ought to know. It is said of an unregenerate Man, *2 Corinth. 8. Hee knowes nothing as hee ought to know.* For example, thou mayst know sinne, and know it most exactly, but if this doe not worke upon thy heart, if the sin lye not exceeding heavy upon thee, if it breed not in thee godly sorrow for it, if it doth not amaze thee, as it were, with the filthinesse and vilenesse of it, it is, because thou dost not yet know it as thou oughtest to know it: And how shall a Man doe then? Goe to **CHRIST**, hee is the Prophet, that is, hee teacheth a Man to see things so, that his heart, his will and affection shall likewise be moved with it: You are to consider the *Covenant* when you goe to the **LORD**; and therefore that Man that saith, I can looke upon my sinne with dry eyes, I can looke upon it, and never bee affected with it, this is, because he is taught but with the teaching of men; hee must remember that this is a part of the *Covenant*, and *God* hath bound himselfe by an Oath to performe it. **I E S U S Christ**, as he is a Prophet of *God* hath sent him to teach thee all things belonging to salvation, and so to teach thee, that thou shalt be in a right manner affected with it.

And so likewise put the case thou know *God*, thou seest him in his attributes, thou hearst him often described, and art able to describe him to others, but for all this, thou findest not thy heart affectioned toward him, thou seest not that excellency

2 Cor. 8.

Christ a 2  
Prophet tea-  
cheth us.

I.  
To know sin  
aright.

2.  
To know God  
aright.



cellency and beautie that is in him, so that thy heart is not enamoured with him, thou canst not say thou lovest him *with all thy heart, with all thy soule, & with all thy strength.* What wilt thou doe in this case? Goe to *Christ*, the Prophet, and beseech him that he would teach thee to know the *Lord*, this is his promise, if thou pray to him, and he doe not doe it, urge him with this, it is a part of his *Covenant*, that he hath confirmed by Oath, and must doe it, and be assured of this, if we seeke, and be earnest with him, he will teach us to know the *L O R D*, and to know him so, that wee shall love him with all our Soule, and with all our strength. The like may I say of any thing else.

Put the case afflictions come upon thee, and thou bee not able to bee patient under such afflictions, suppose it be a matter of disgrace and discredit, that so wounds thee, that thy heart cannot bee at rest, what is the reason of this? Thou callest to minde, it may be, all the rules of patience, that should teach thee to beare afflictions, well, and yet thou art not able to doe it: the cause is, because thou doest not yet know these outward temptations, these outward evils, as thou oughtest to know them, if thou diddest, they would seeme small to thine eyes sinne would bee an exceeding great griefe, but these would bee but trifles and flea-bitings, in comparison of the other: Goe to *CHRIST* now, and beseech him to shew thee what is the nature of these outward crosses and losses, that

3.  
To know affi-  
ctions aright.

thou mayst bee taught of him once: Hee is the great Prophet that teacheth a Man so, hee so presents things in their owne colours, to the understanding, that the will and affections follow and apprehend them aright; goe to him, and beseech him that thou maist know them as thou oughtest, and thou shalt finde that thou shalt be able to beare the greatest crosse with patience, it shall bee nothing then to thee, it will appeare to bee a small matter, when hee hath taught thee to judge aright, thou shalt not be deceived in it.

4.  
To know pleasures aright.

So likewise, for pleasure, when a man findes his heart so wedded to any sinfull lust, to any evill haunt, wherein his heart is held inordinately, that it cannot divorce it selfe from it, goe to *Christ*, hee is the great Prophet. Thus we may doe with the rest. This is the second part of the *Covenant*.

3. Part of the Covenant.  
Christ's Kingly Office, in three things.

The third part of the *Covenant* is, that which hee will performe to us, as hee is a King, and it consists in these three things.

I.  
To subdue sinfull lusts.

You know the Office of a King is to guide and rule; Now, if thou finde thy heart unruly, if thou finde thy selfe subject to unruly affections, to sinfull inordinate lusts, which thou canst not master, it is a part of his Kingdome now to set up his owne government in thy heart, to put *his Law in thy minde*, and to write it in thy inward parts, that so thou mayst bee indeede subject to the Kingdome of *Christ* in a willing manner. When a Man sees nothing (as wee said

said before) but the outward letter of the Law, hee will never bee subject, hee will never yeeld obedience, but CHRIST comes as a king now, and puts an inward disposition into the minde, that shall answer the letter without, and so hee makes a man subject to his government. Beloved, that Phrase is to be marked, *Heb. 8. 10.* saith the Lord, *I will put my Law into their mindes*; there are Lawes out of mens mindes, Lawes without that every man may see; but it is another thing to have the Law put into a mans minde: For example, this is the Law without, *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God, with all thy heart, with all thy soule, and with all thy strength*: To answer which, you shall see, *Deut. 30. 6.* *I will circumcise thy heart, and then thou shalt be able to love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy strength*: That is, I will put this affection, or this Grace of Love within thy heart, it shall not bee without onely, but I will put it within, that there shall bee a grace within, a habit of Love within, answerable to the Commandement without: This is to put the Law into the minde: You know this is the Commandement of the LORD, *You shall feare the LORD, and keepe his Ordinances, and his Statutes, and his Commandements to doe them.* Well, saith the LORD *Ier. 32. 40.* *I will make a Covenant with you: And what will I doe? I will put my feare into your hearts.* I will not onely give you this precept, that thou shalt looke on without, *Thou shalt*

Hebr. 8. 10.

The Law without and within the minde.

Deut. 30. 6.

Ierem. 32. 40.



feare mee, and keepe my Commandements: But I will put the affections of feare into thy heart, there it shall bee, and then thou shalt easily feare mee, and keepe my Commandements; thou shalt feare to disobey mee, thou shalt feare and tremble at my Word, and take heede how thou doest any thing contrary to my minde: And beloved, when this is done indeede, hee makes us Kings, as hee makes us Priests and Prophets: For when a Man is thus taught, hee is a Prophet, other men neede not to teach him, for hee is a spirituall man then, and is able to judge of all things; I say, when this government is set up, and the Law is put into his minde, when it is put into his inward parts, then hee makes us Kings: For when men have so much strength within themselves, that they can guide and rule themselves, and walke in the way of righteousness, now they are made Kings, and such Kings the Lord makes all those that come to him. This is the first part of his Kingdome.

8.  
To give an un-  
danced of peace

Spirituall  
peace a part of  
Gods Cove-

an. 16.

The second part is, to give us abundance of all things, to give us peace: For the Office of a King, (you know) is to keepe his people in peace, as it is said of *Saul*, hee clothed them with *Scarlet*: That is, hee made his people to abound with wealth, and peace, and quietnesse: this the Lord doth likewise, and it is a part of his spirituall Kingdome. Now his Kingdome is spirituall; therefore the maine worke of it is to give us inward peace and joy; You may have

have troubles in the World, but *my Kingdome is not of this world*, and therefore wee are not so much to expect an outward worldly peace, though we have likewise a promise of that, but in mee you shall have inward peace, saith hee, *the Kingdome of GOD is in righteousnesse*, that is the first part, when *God workes righteousnesse*, as I have named before. The second is *Peace and joy*, so that that is a part of the Covenant, *God promised inward peace and joy*, when you want it, know, that it is a part of his Covenant, you may goe to *G O D*, and beseech him to fill your hearts with this *peace that passeth understanding*, and with this *joy which is unsearchable and glorious*; Goe and beseech him to enrich your hearts with those spirituall riches that belong to salvation. This is a part of his Kingdome, and that which hee hath promised to us: now this is not all, but he hath promised likewise an outward peace, hee hath promised wee shall be heyres of all things; *all things are yours*: hee hath promised outward riches, wee are heyres of all the world: So that it is likewise a part of his *Covenant*, when a Man wants any outward comfort, any outward helpe, any blessings, or deliverance, he may goe to *Christ*, that is the King of all Kings, as hee is Lord of all things, as hee himselfe is heyre of all things, and beseech him to grant it unto him: For it is part of his *Covenant*.

And the third and last is, that we shall overcome our enemies, that is the third branch of

E e 4

this

Outward  
peace a part of  
Gods Cove-  
nant,

3<sup>d</sup>  
To give victo-  
ry over all our  
enemies.



Luke 1.74.

Christ as King  
overcommeth.I.  
Spirituall ene-  
mies.

2.

Outward ene-  
mies.

this Kingdome ; And that which was promi-  
sed to *Abraham*, thou shalt possesse the Gates of  
*thine enemies*, when hee renewed his *Covenant*,  
upon the offering of his sonne, and you shall  
finde it, *Luke 1.74.* repeated againe, this is the  
great promise that *G O D* hath made, *that being  
delivered from the hands of all our enemies, wee  
might serue him in righteousnesse and holinesse all  
the dayes of our life.* Now as this Kingdome is  
spirituall, so the chiefe part of this kingdome  
stands in overcoming our spirituall enemies;  
and therefore you may challenge this *Covenant*  
at his hands, when you are to wrestle with *Sa-  
than*, or any temptation or lust, *L O R D*, hast  
thou not said that thou wilt deliver mee out of  
the hands of all mine enemies ? Is it not a part  
of thy *Covenant* ? But, beloved, that is not  
all neyther, there is a promise, and that is a part  
of the *Covenant* likewise, that wee shall over-  
come our outward enemies, thou shalt possesse  
the gates of thine enemies, so farre as it is good  
for us, as farre as *God* sees it meet, hee disposeth  
these in a different manner; but yet it is a part of  
the *Covenant*, and therefore a man may goe  
and challenge it at *G O D S* hands; *L O R D*, if it  
be good, if it be fit, and meet for me to have it,  
thou hast promised it, I shall have victory over  
them also. So now you see what the *Covenant*  
is : But now there is one maine generall, that  
likewise is a branch of this *Covenant*, that is ge-  
nerall to all the three, that is the giving of the  
Spirit, it is a branch of the *Covenant*, as wee see

*Ioel*



Joel 2. which is repeated Acts 2. *I will powre out my spirit upon all flesh in these dayes, and your young men shall see visions, &c.* Beloved, know, that this was a part of the Covenant that was made with Abraham. It was expressed to Abraham in generall, *I will blesse thee*: afterwards there were severall branches of it, now one thing was expressed as a part of the Covenant, and then another; Among the branches, this was one, *I will powre out my spirit upon all flesh*, which is that which you have likewise *Esay 44.*  
 3. *I will powre out my Spirit as water upon the drie ground, and you shall grow as the grasse, and as the Willow by the Rivers of water.* Whereof that this is the meaning, Peter makes it good, Acts 2. And so likewise the great promise that our Saviour Christ made to them was, *I will baptize you with the Holy Ghost*, this promise was made before hee departed in the flesh, but it was fulfilled after, when hee powred forth his Spirit. Beloved, this is that great part of the Covenant, that which comprehends the life of all the other three, that which makes us to doe all the rest, that which makes us Kings, and Priests, and Prophets, this powring out of the Spirit upon us, even as Christ himselfe was anoynted with the spirit without measure, that he might be able to teach us, that hee might be a Prophet, a King, and a Priest, that which enabled him to performe all these Offices, was the effusion of the Spirit upon him without measure: That which makes us able to bee partakers

Joel 2.  
Act. 2.

Esay 44:3.

Act. 2.

The giving of  
the Spirit a  
part of Gods  
Covenant,

partakers of those three parts of the *Covenant*; is likewise the same Spirit, wherewith wee are anoynted according to our measure. So much shall serve for this, namely what the particular branches, and parts and priviledges of the *Covenant* are.

5. Objections  
against it.

The fifth and last is, the Objections that are made against this *Covenant*. There were two great Objections that *Paul* every where met with (for our scope is, that when we put all this together, that wee have delivered about this *Covenant*, you may reade at leasure, *Rom.* 3. & 4. and *Gal.* 3. and 4. and all the promises made to *Abraham*, and when you have this, before you, you will bee able then to understand it) I say, there are two great Objections that *Paul* every where met with.

1. Object.

The one is from the *Law*; Is it not said every where, those that obey the *Commandement* shall live, and everie promise is made still to them that feare the *LORD*, and keepe his *Commandements*? And therefore it is by the *Law*.

Answe.

The promises are not to the obedience of the *Law*.

1.

The *Law* was after the promise.

2.

Because wee cannot keepe the *Law*.

Nay, saith the *Apostle*, *Galat.* 3. it is impossible that it should be by the *Law*: for the *Law* was given 450. yeares after; the promise and *Covenant* was established with *Abraham* long before it; It cannot bee now, that that which comes after, can disanull that which went before: But besides there is another great reason, and that is this; saith the *Apostle*, you were never able to keepe the *Law*, you could never  
bee

bee saved, if you would have it by the Law, to what end is the Law given then? *By reason of transgression*, that you might learne to know how impossible it is for you to come to *God*, to bee partaker of the Covenant any other way than by Faith; Saith hee, you might remember that *Adam*, when hee was in innocency and perfection, was much stronger than you, yet did not keepe the Law, but, because that was easie for people to forget, the Law was given againe by *Moses* upon Mount *Sinai*, that the **L O R D** by that meanes might re-minde you of the Commandement, and of your sinnes, and of the curse belonging to you, and therefore, saith hee, when the Law was delivered, it was so terrible, that *Moses* himselfe did tremble; and therefore said the People, **L O R D**, *doe not thou speake to us any more*, deliver not the Law to us any more, but let *Moses* come, and bee as a *Mediator* betweene us, let him speake: For we are not able to see these fires, these burnings wee are not able to see this and live. The meaning of it is this, the Law, if any man looke on it, it is so terrible, when *God* comes to speake to a Man in his Law, and in his Commandements, that there is nothing to be expected but death: That same fearefulnesse at Mount *Sinai*, was but onely an expression of that feare which the Law of *God* puts upon every Mans conscience; And therefore when the People then desired a *Mediator*, that might speake, and that **G O D** might speake no more, another thing

was

The end of giving the Law.

What the terrours at the giving of the Law, did signifie.



was signified by it, that no man is able to come to *God* by yeelding obedience to the Law, but hee must needes have a Mediator to goe betweene *God* and him.

*Object.*

The other objection is from the Ceremonies of the Law; they were ready to say, We have a Priest, wee have Sacrifices, wee have divers washings and Rites, &c. Wee were wont to bee saved by them, Why may wee not so still?

*Ans.*

The Covenant of grace cloathed with the Ceremoniall Law.

The answer to it is, That these were but the oldnesse of the letter; for indeede all these did but cloath the *Covenant* of Grace; the *Covenant* of Grace was delivered to the Jewes, the Ceremonies did indeede but set it out, they were but Types and shaddowes, by which it was expressed to the Jewes: the Jewes, by reason of their ignorance, were not able to see the bodie for the clothes, they were not able to see the signification of the spirit for the letter, they were not able to see the Sword for the sheath, the kernell for the shell; that is, they could not see *CHRIST* himselfe, the inward promises, but stucke in the outward barke and rinde of Ceremonies, in the shell of them, and so they became unprofitable; but indeede those Rites did nothing but cloathe the *Covenant* of Grace, and set it forth to them. So much shall serve for the dispatching of these five things.

*Simile.*

Now hence you see how those difficulties may bee answered, that I mentioned before. For example, it is said, *the promise is made to the*  
*seede,*

seede, yet the promise is made to us, and yet againe the Covenant is made with *Abraham*: How can all these stand together? The promises that are made to the seed, that is to *Christ* himselfe, those are these promises: *Thou shalt bee a Priest for ever, and I will give thee the Kingdome of David, thou shalt sit in that Throne, thou shalt bee a Prince of Peace, and the government shalbe upon thy shoulder*; likewise thou shalt be a Prophet to my People, thou shalt open the prison to the Captive, thou shalt be anoynted, &c. and then shalt goe and preach to them: These are the promises that are made unto the seede.

The promises that are made to us, though they bee of the same Covenant, yet they differ in this, the active part is committed to the *Messiah*, to the seed it selfe; but the passive part, those are the promises that are made to us; *You shall be taught*, you shall bee made Prophets, likewise you shall have your sinnes forgiven, you shall have the effect of his priesthood made good unto you, you shall bee subject to his government, by an inherent righteousnesse that he shall worke in you, for you shalbe made Kings: So the promise is made to us.

How is the promise made to *Abraham*? For it is said, *In thee all the Nations of the Earth shall be blessed*.

The meaning of it is, they are derivative promises, the primitive & Originall was made to **I E S U S C H R I S T**: But why it is said then, that

Quest.

Ans.

What promises are made to Christ:

The promises made to us passive.

Note.

that in *Abraham* all the Nations of the Earth shall bee blessed? The meaning of it is this, there was none that ever was partaker of the promises, but the children of *Abraham*, and therefore they were derived from *Abraham* to all the men in the world besides, that ever have beene since. Now what it is to be a Childe of *Abraham*? Not to be borne of *Abraham* according to the flesh, but to be like *Abraham*: *You are the children of the Devill*: Why? You are like him. So that all that have Faith, are the Children of *Abraham*: but more is meant than that; I say, all that doe partake of this promised *Messiah*, are derived from *Abraham*, eyther derived from him, or ingrafted into him, one of these two; all that were saved before the comming of *Christ*, were eyther such as descended from him, or were ingrafted into the same Nation. But what doe you say of the Gentiles, that are now come in? How doe they receive from *Abraham*? How can it be said, in *Abraham* shall all the Nations of the Earth be blessed?

Child of *Abraham*, what.

All that partake of *Christ*, derived from, or grafted into *Abraham*.

Rom. 11. 17. How the Gentiles receive the promise in *Abraham*.

You know, it is said, *Rom. 11.* that the natural branches were broken off, and the wilde Olive is ingrafted in: That is the reason likewise why the Law comes from *Sion*, the Lord will have the Gentiles to be ingrafted into the stocke, as it were, hee will have the Law proceede from *Ierusalem*, he will have them put into that family as the Profelytes, and so were all Nations: for they received it from *Ierusalem*: For they had the Oracles of *G O D* committed to them,  
all



all the Nations in the World received them from them, they drew the sap of knowledge from them, so that they were grafted in: Thus all the Nations of the World we are blessed in *Abraham*, and *Abraham* was blessed in the seede it selfe.

But yet one objection is yet behinde, that is, how comes it to passe, that to bee renewed in the spirit of our mindes, and to walke in the wayes of the *Lord*, in the way of regeneration, should be a part of the Covenant on our part, you shall repent and beleeve, and bee renewed and then you shall bee forgiven, &c. You shall have the kingdome, and yet, for all this, you see, it is a part of the Covenant on *Gods* part, saith the *L O R D*, *Ezek. 36. 26. I will give you a new heart, and a new spirit*, there is an expresseion of the Covenant, and yet it is a condition that is required on our part.

To this I answer briefly; The Condition that is required of us, as part of the Covenant is the doing of this, the action, the performance of these things, it is to repent, to serve the *Lord* in newnesse of life, but the abilitie by which we are able to performe these, is a part of the Covenant on the *L O R D S* part, to have new hearts, and new spirits, whereby wee are able to repent, and to *bring forth fruite worthy of amendment of life*; I say, the inward abilitie, the change of the heart, the renewing of us in the spirit of our mindes, the writing of the Law in the inward parts, that is a branch  
of

*Object.*

Repentance a part of the Covenant on Gods part and ours too, how,

*Ezek. 36. 26.*

*Ans.*

The actions of Faith and Repentance ours, the power of doing them Gods.

of *Gods* Covenant, but the doing of this, the bringing forth the fruite of these inward abilities, of these inward habits and graces that are planted in us by the power of *Christ*, that thing is required in us. As for example, the very habit of Faith, the very grace and power of beleeving, that *God* hath promised to give, it belongs to him, but to beleeve, to take the promises, to accept of *Iesvs Christ*, and to receive him, and the gift of righteousness by him, this is required as a condition on our part. And so much shall serve for the opening of this, and for this point.

*Quest.*

*Answ.*

How to know whether we be in the Covenant, or no.

I°

By Faith.

Galat. 5. 5.

The next question wee had to propound to you, was this: How a Man should know whether hee bee within the Covenant, or no? You shall know it by this, How did *Abraham* know whether hee was in the Covenant, or how will you know whether *Abraham*, or any other were? Saith the Text, *Abraham* beleeved *God*, and therefore *God* reckoned him as a Man that was righteous, and accepted him to bee a partaker of the Covenant: And so, if thou beleeve, it is certaine then, thou art within the Covenant: But how shall a Man know that? *Gal. 5. 5. Neyther circumcision awayleth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but Faith which worketh love.* If thou canst finde this now, that thou art able to take *I E S V S C H R I S T*, to take him as a *Lord* and *Saviour*, thou art able to beleeve all the Covenant of Grace, thou art by that put into the Covenant.

But

But how shall a man know whether his faith be right or no? For, you know, there is a false, dead, and counterfeit Faith: if it be right, thou shalt finde it to bee of a working and lively nature, but many times wee may bee deceived in that. A woman many times thinkes she is with childe, but if shee finde no motion or stirring, it is an argument shee was deceived: So when a man thinkes that hee hath Faith in his heart, but yet hee finds no life, no motion, no stirring, there is no worke proceeding from his Faith, it is an argument hee was mistaken, he was deceived in it: For, if it be a right Faith, it will worke, there will bee life and motion in it. As *Abrahams* Faith, you see, it enabled him to doe whatsoever *God* appointed him, to offer his son, to excommunicate *Ismael*, when *God* bid him cast him out, though hee loved *Ismael* exceedingly dearely, yet hee did it, and did it readily; So, whatsoever else *God* bade him doe, here was a worke of Faith.

But yet a little further, a man may bee yet deceived in this, a mans Faith may worke, and an Hypocrite may doe many workes, if it bee but bare working, a Man may bee deceived, and therefore this is added further, it workes by love. A Man may doe exceeding many duties, hee may suffer Martyrdome, hee may give all to the poore, hee may bee a very diligent Minister of the Gospell: For *Paul* saith, I may speake with the tongue of *Men and Angels*, I may give my goods to the poore,

How to know if our faith be true.

*Simile.*

True faith is operative.

An hypocrite may doe much without faith.



I may give my body to bee burned, and yet if these great workes bee done, *without love they are nothing*. But, on the other side, if you finde this, that you doe but the least worke, if it be but to give a cup of cold water, and doe it out of love, if you abstaine from one sinne, if you overcome any one lust whatsoever, that is neere and deare to you, because you love *Iesu Christ*, if you set your selves upon any worke, upon any imployment and endeavour, and thy heart witnesseth this to thee, It is because I love the *Lord*, and desire exceedingly to please him, he is one that I would faine have communion with, my delight is in him, therefore I doe these workes; for it is my meate and drinke to doe his will; now thou art on a sure ground, now thou mayst know thou art within the *Covenant*: For thou beleevest as *Abraham* did, and therefore thou art within the *Covenant*, as hee was; thou mayst know it, because thy Faith workes, and then thou mayst know that it workes right, because it is done by love.

Well, yet there is another way to know this, that is, *in thy seede* (saith the Text) *shall all the Nations of the world bee blessed*: If a Man be then ingrafted into this seede, into the *Messiah* once, then hee shall bee blessed, if once hee belong to him. Well, how shall a Man know that?

If thou have received the Spirit of the Son; for whosoever is in *Christ*, hath received the Spirit of *Christ*, if he have not received the spirit of *Christ*, hee is not in him. Consider whether

Doing duties  
with love, a  
signe of Faith.

2.  
By being graft  
into Christ.

How to know  
we are ingraft  
into Christ.

ther you have received the Spirit of the Sonne, the spirit of the promised seed, that is, whether thou art made like *Christ* by the Spirit: for the spirit will assimilate thee, & renew this Image in thee, he makes thee such another in some degree as hee is, yea, hee will not onely doe this, but he will witnessse to thee, that hee is thy *God*, and that thou art of those that are partakers of the *Covenant*; and therefore that is the way to finde it out, that is the thing I intend to insist upon, to finde out whether you have this spirit, you shall finde it, this is the great marke that the Apostle *Paul* insists upon, still in all his Epistles, by which a Man may know whether he be within the *Covenant* or no, still it is this, we have received the spirit, and, the Spirit seales us to the day of redemption, we are established and sealed by the spirit of promise, and we have received the spirit, which is an earnest, &c.

An evidence  
of being in  
the Covenant

Now to know whether you have the Spirit, I will commend these two places of Scripture to you to consider: one is, *Rom. 8. 15.* You have not received the Spirit of bondage to feare againe, but the Spirit of Adoption, whereby you crie *Abba Father*: The same Spirit beareth witnessse with our spirits, that wee are the sonnes of God. The other you shall finde, *1 Iohn 5. 8.* And there are three that beare record in Earth, the Spirit, the water, and the Bloud, and these three agree in one. If you would finde out whether you have the Spirit of the Sonne, or no, you shall know it by these three:

Rom. 8. 15.

1 Iohn 5. 8.



Triall whether  
wee have the  
spirit:

I.

By that which  
goes before,  
Namely the  
spirit of bon-  
dage.

The Law wor-  
keth not with-  
out the spirit  
of bondage.  
Act. 2.

Afflictions. &  
judgements  
the execution  
of the Law.

1 Sam. 12. 18.  
Ezra 10. 9.

In the Antecedents, the Concomitants, and the Consequents.

The Antecedent is the *Spirit of bondage*, for that of necessitie must goe before, so that if thou never hadst the Spirit of bondage, certainly, thou hast not yet received the spirit of the Sonne: For the Apostle speakes of it here, as the common condition to all Christians, they doe not receive the Spirit of bondage againe; you had it once, but now you have the Spirit of Adoption: I say, every man must have this spirit of bondage, and the ground of it is this, because no man can come to *Christ*, except the Law be a Schoolemaster to bring him to *Christ*; Now the Law is not a Schoolemaster, it teacheth no man, except the spirit of bondage worke feare, except the spirit of bondage put an edge upon the Law, put a Sword into the hand of the Law, to pricke the heart, to wound the heart, as it is said, *Acts 2.* this is the *Spirit of bondage*: You may heare the Law, and the threatnings and curses applyed to you, tenne thousand times over, and yet no feare bee bred in you, except the spirit of bondage joyne with it, that makes it effectuall. Now in the Law are included judgements and afflictions, which are but the execution of the Law, sometimes it goes with the Law it selfe; sometimes with the judgement and afflictions, it is the Spirit of bondage that must goe with both; As for example, when it thundred and rained in Wheat-harvest, 1 *Sam.* 12. the people feared exceedingly; & *Ezr.* 10. 9. when



when there was an exceeding great Raine, the people did exceedingly tremble, and, you know, in that Earthquake, though all were safe, *Act. 16.* and there was no cause why hee should bee so unquiet, yet we see how the goaler was amazed, his heart was wounded, this was not for these particular Judgements, there might bee a great Raine, there might bee a great Earthquake and thunder in Wheat-harvest, and yet mens hearts little moved, but there went a spirit of bondage, that bred a feare in them, this is that, I say, no man can come to *Christ*, without the Law, either in it selfe, or in afflictions, which are but the executioners of it, and these are not effectual all without the spirit of bondage.

And there is a very great reason for it; because otherwise we should never know the love of *Christ*, hee that hath not knowne what the meaning of this spirit of bondage is, what these feares are, what these terrors of conscience are in some measure, knowes not what *Christ* hath suffered for him, or what deliverance hee hath had by him; besides, the will not be appliable to *Christ*: But I will not stand more upon this. Hast thou not had the spirit of bondage? I say, surely, if thou hast not tasted of this, *Christ* hath not sowne the seede of grace in thy heart: doth any man sow before he hath plowed? Doth any man make a new impression before there bee an obliteration of the old? Before the heart bee melted with the spirit of bondage, there is no sense of a new spirit, to make a new impression

*Acts 16.*

Afflictions not effectual without the spirit of bondage.

The spirit of bondage teacheth us to know *Christ*'s love.

The spirit of  
bondage in a  
different mea-  
sure on men.

upon it; I confesse it is different, it is sometimes more, sometimes lesse, but all have it, more or lesse; sometimes the Medicine goes so close with the revealing of sin, and of Judgement, that it is not so much discerned: sometimes againe, *God* meanes to bestow upon some men a greater measure of grace, and therefore hee gives them a greater measure of the spirit of bondage, because *GOD* meanes to teach them more to prize *CHRIST*, hee meanes more to baptize them with the Baptisme of the *holy Ghost*, and therefore hee baptizeth them with a greater measure of the spirit of bondage, they shall drinke deeper of that spirit, because his intention is, that they shall drinke deeper of the spirit of Adoption: and therefore *CHRIST* takes it for an Argument, concerning the Woman, when he saw she loved exceeding much, surely she had a great measure of the spirit of bondage, she was much wounded for her sins, there had beene exceeding much forgiven her, in her apprehension; and so was *Paul* exceedingly wounded. This must goe before.

3. Things goe  
together with  
the spirit.

I.

The testimo-  
ny of the  
bloud of *Christ*

The things which goe together with it, are these three, the testimony of the *Bloud*, of the *Water*, and of our *owne Spirits*.

First, beloved, there is in the testimony of the *Bloud*, *There are three that beare record in the Earth, the spirit, the water, and the bloud*, though spirit bee put first, as it is usuall amongst the *Hebrewes*, and in the *Scriptures*, to put the last first; Now if a Man would know whether hee

be

be in *Christ*, whether he have received the promised seed, or no, let him consider first, whether hee hath beleev'd in the Blood, that is, there is a word of promise, that saith thus to us: There is a Sacrifice that is offered, there is the blood of the Lambe shed from the beginning of the World, and this Blood shall wash thee from all thy sinnes, when a Man stands to consider this promise, this promise hath two things in it, there is the truth of it, & the goodnesse of it; a Man doth, with *Abraham*, beleve the truth of it, hee beleev's *God*, and saith, it is true, I beleve it; but withall, there is a goodnesse in it, and therefore, as the understanding saith, it is true, so the will saith, it is good, and he takes it, and embraceth it, and is exceeding greedy of it: For when the Spirit of bondage makes a Man feare, it empties a man of all righteousness, as a Man empties a caske, that there is nothing left in it, it puls away all other props and stayes from him, it leaves a Man in this case, that hee sees nothing in the world to save him, but the Blood of *CHRIST*; when a Man sees this, he takes fast hold of that, he will not let it goe for any thing; and though it bee told him, you shall have many troubles and crosses, you must part with all you have, you shall have somewhat hereafter, but you shall have little for the present; he cares not though it cost him his life, if he may have this blood to wash away his sinnes, it is enough, this he layes fast hold upon.

Two things in the promises of God.

Note.



When a man  
is said to enter  
into the Co-  
venant.

1. The testimo-  
ny of water.

Ephes. 5.

When a man doth this, at that very houre he is entred into *Covenant*, he is translated from death to life, hee hath now received the promised seede, and he shall be blessed: For *God* hath said it, and sworne it, and it cannot bee otherwise; and this is the testimony of the Blood, when a Man can say, I know I have taken and applyed the blood of *Christ*, I rest upon it, I beleeve that my sinnes are forgiven, I graspe it, I receive it, this is the testimony of the blood.

Now when a Man hath rooke the Blood, What? Shall he continue in filthinesse still, and walke after the lusts of his former ignorance? No, the *Lord* comes not by blood onely, but by Water also, that is, by sanctification, he sends the Spirit of sanctification that cleanseth and washeth his servants, that washeth away not onely the outward filthinesse, but the evill nature, the swinish nature, that they desire no more to wallow in the myre, as before: For the *Lord* will not have a sluttish Church, and therefore, *Ephes. 5. Hee washeth the Church, and cleanseth it*, he washeth every man in the Church from top to toe: There is not one place in the Soule, not one place in the conversation, but it is rinsed in this Water; And then, when a Man comes to finde this, that he hath not onely found the blood of *Christ* applyed to him by Faith, but hath found that hee hath beene able to purifie himselfe, and by the worke of *Christ's* Spirit joyning with him, when hee goes about to purge himselfe, that helpes to cleanse his

conscience from dead workes. This is the second testimony.

Now followes the testimony of our owne Spirits, which gathers conclusions from both these and saith thus: Seeing I have received the blood, and seeing I am able to purifie my selfe, I conclude, I am in a good estate, I am partaker of the *Covenant*: if a man could argue thus truly, it is said, *whosoever beleeveth shall be saved*, but I beleeveth, that is the testimony of the blood onely; but when a Man can say, I doe labour to purifie my selfe, I desire nothing in the world so much, I doe in good earnest, this is the testimony of the water to this signe, and testimony of the blood, which shewes that it is true, that it is a lively hope: for hee *that hath a lively hope, hee purifies himselfe*, 1 *Ioh. 3.*

But some Man may say, This testimony of a mans owne spirit may deceive him.

I answer, it cannot, because though it be called the testimony of our owne spirit, yet it is a Spirit enlightened, a spirit sanctified with the spirit of *Christ*, and then that rule is true, 1 *Ioh. 3.* *If our owne hearts condemne us not*; that is, if the heart of a man enlightened, if the heart of a man, with which the *Holy Ghost* joynes, if the heart of a Man sanctified doe not condemne him, if he have the testimony of this spirit, that he shall be saved, he needes not doubt it, he hath boldnesse towards *God*, then againe hee must consider, this worke is the testimony of the spirit, the water, and the blood; and *these three agree*

3. The testimony of our owne spirits.

1 Iohn 3.3.

Object.

Answer.

The testimony of our spirits enlightened, cannot deceive  
1 Iohn 3.

agree in one; it is not the testimony of the Spirit alone, but it is the testimony of the Water joyned with it; if it were but the testimony of one, indeede the ground were not good; but they all agree in one: and therefore if thou have one sure to thee, it is enough. These are the things which goe before and accompany it.

The testimo-  
ny of Gods  
spirit.  
Ephes. i. 13.

Now followes the testimony of Gods Spirit; which we shall see described, besides the places I named to you, *Ephes. i.* Wherein after you beleev-  
ed, you were sealed with the Spirit of promise. When a Man hath beleevd, and tooke *IESVS Christ*; secondly, when hee hath washed and purified himselfe, that is, hee hath gone about his worke, & so his own spirit gathers a testimony hence, that he is in a good estate; after hee hath thus beleevd, then, saith hee, comes the *Holy Ghost*, and seales the same things unto you, that is, the *L O R D* leaves a Man alone a while, as it were, to champe upon the bridle, as I may say, he lets a Man alone to some doubts and feares, that so he may purge himself the more carefully; but after a time, when a man hath put to his seale that *God is true*, then the *Lord* seales him againe with the spirit of promise, that is, the *Lord* sends the spirit into his heart, & that spirit gives witnessse to him, and when he hath put to his seale that *God is true*, then the *Lord* puts to his seale, and assures him that hee hath received him to mercie. You will say, What is the seale or witnessse of the Spirit? My beloved, it is a thing that wee cannot expresse, it is a certaine  
divine

Quest.  
Answ.

The testimo-  
ny of the spi-  
rit what.



divine expression of light, a certaine unexpressible assurance that wee are the sonnes of *God*, a certaine secret manifestation, that *God* hath received us, and put away our sinnes: I say, it is such a thing, that no man knowes, but they that have it; you shall finde it expressed by all these places of Scripture, *Revel. 3. If any man will open to mee, I will come in and sup with him*: that is, when the *Lord* enters into a kinde of familiarity with a Man, when hee vouchsafes him so much favour as to come and sup and dine with him, as it were, and to dwell with him: And so, *Revel. 2. 17. To him that overcommeth, will I give of the hidden Mannah, I will give him a white stone with a new name written in it, that no man knowes but he that hath it*; that is, there shall bee a secret privy token ( as it were ) of love given him, a secret marke of it, that there is no Man in the world knowes besides. So, *Iohn 14. 21. If any man love me, and keepe my Commandements, I will shew my selfe to him*; that is, hee shall have an extraordinary manifestation of my selfe, hee shall have such an expression of love & peace, that shall fill his heart with peace and joy, such a thing that no man knowes but himselfe. Beloved, this is the testimony of the Spirit. I confesse, it is a wondrous thing, and if there were not some Christians that did feele it, and know it, you might beleeve there were no such thing, that it were but a fancie or enthusiasme; but it is certaine, there are a generation of men that know what this seale of the *Lord* is, indeed you must

*Revel. 3. 20.*

*Revel. 2. 17.*

*Iohn 14. 21.*

The testimony of Gods spirit is better felt than expressed.

The witnessse  
of Gods spirit  
is after the tes-  
timony of  
blood and wa-  
ter:

must remember this, to distinguish it from all fancies and delusions, this Spirit comes after you have the Water and the Blood, after you are beleivers, after you have purged your selves, and therefore if any man have flashes of light and joy, that witnessse that hee hath received the promise, and that he is in the *Covenant*, and for all this he have not the things that goe before it, hee may well take it for a delusion, saith CHRIST, *I will come and sup with him*: But with whom? With him that first openeth to mee. If thou open thy heart to the *Lord*, whensoever he knockes, and comes to thee. And so, *To him that overcomes, I will give of the hidden Mannah*. If thou be one that art able to overcome temptations, and unruly affections, and sinfull lusts, thou mayst conclude, it is a true testimony that thou art not deceived, but if thou bee one that art overcome with every base lust, with every temptation, thou art deceived, if thou art perswaded thou art in good estate; This is not the witnessse of the Spirit; For, *it is to him that overcomes*. So againe, *To him that loves mee, and keepes my Commandements, &c.* Now if thou be one that breakst the Commandements of *God*, that findest not that holy fire in thy brest, that findest not thy heart affectioned to him, and yet thou hast these great flashes of assurance, and thinkest thy state good, thou deceivest thy selfe, the *Lord* hath not shewed himselfe to thee, but it is a delusion; and therefore I say, consider it, and this is the consequent of it,  
that

that hee that hath it is able to pray. So I will conclude all, hee is able to cry *Abba Father*. If thou have such an assurance of a good estate, and yet art not able to pray, thou art deceived likewise: for that is the property of the Spirit, it makes a man cry to *God*, and call him Father.

You will say, Is it such a matter? Every man can pray.

Beloved, it is another thing than the world imagines it to bee; hee that hath this Spirit, is mighty in prayer, he is able to wrestle with *God*, (as *Jacob* did) by the spirit of Adoption, he had power with *God*, as it is said there, hee is able to prevaile with the *Lord*, and why? Because he can speake to him, as to a Father, hee can continue in prayer, and watch thereunto with all perseverance; hee can speake to him as one that hee is well acquainted with; he can not only speake remissely, but hee can crie *Abba Father*, that shewes fervencie in his prayer; there is no man in the world that is able to doe it besides. Wee see a description of other men, *Esa. 33. 14.* when they are troubled, they are not able to pray indeed, they may have formes of praier, that they may use in times of peace, but let any great trouble come upon them, let them be put to it, and you shall finde they are not able to doe it; but they runne a way from *GOD* as fast as they can at that time, they are not able to come and say; *Thou art my Father*, I beseech thee heare mee, I beseech thee pittie me and forgive mee: No, but they tremble at *Gods* presence,

How to know whether wee have the witness of the Spirit.

Quest.

Ans.

A spirit of prayer a greater thing than men thinke.

*Esa. 33. 14.*

None bold with *God*, but his children.



Wicked men  
run from God  
in trouble.

Ioh. 37.8.9.10.

Note.

as the Thiefe doth at the presence of the Iudge; the sinners in Sion are afraid in that day when God comes, at the day of visitation, the sinners in Sion are afraid, &c. for who shall deale with devouring fire? that is, they tremble at such a day, when the day of death comes, when God begins to shew himselfe to them, in the fiercenesse of his wrath, when he begins to come neere them in the day of visitation, then they fly from him as one would fly from devouring fire, they fly not to him, as one would fly to a mercifull Father, that is ready to heare them, and helpe them, but they fly from him as fast as they can, as one would fly from everlasting burning. The like place you have, *Iob 27.8,9,10.* For what hope hath the Hypocrite when hee hath heaped up riches, when God shall come and pull away his soule? Will God heare his prayer when he cries, &c.? Will hee call upon God at all times? A wicked Man may make some shew of prayer to God in time of health, and in time of peace, but at that time, saith hee, when hee hath spent his time in gathering riches, in heaping them up, and GOD comes upon him suddenly, and shall pull away his soule, hee teares and rends it from him, (for so the word signifies in the Originall) that is, he is not willing to resigne it into Gods hands, as the righteous Man doth, but hee is busie about his wealth, and God surprizeth him, and rends his Soule from him: What will hee doe in this case? Will hee pray? saith *Iob*: No, hee gives two reasons, *Hee hath no delight in the Lord,* hee never

never loved the *Lord*, there is no such love betweene the *Lord* and him, as there is betweene the Father and the Childe, betweene the Husband and the wife, he never had the spirit of a son, he cannot pray, for hee delights not in *God*.

But he doth pray sometimes ?

Yea, for some fit, it may be, in some extremity, he may cry as a Thiefe at the Barre may cry to the Iudge, (as he doth sometimes exceeding hard) not because he loves the Iudge, but it is a cry that comes from extremity, and it is but in extremity, and by that the falseness and hypocrisie of them is knowne : So an hypocrite may cry in the time of extremity, but it is a cry, it is not a prayer, and it is but in the time of extremity, it is not at all times that hee doth it, he is not able to doe it ; For the *Lord* is a stranger to him, he lookes upon the *Lord*, as upon a terrible Iudge ; And therefore if thou wouldest know whether thou hast the spirit of the sonne, first thou shalt know it by that which went before ; secondly, thou shalt know it by that which goes together with it, the testimony of the Bloud, the testimony of the Water, and of thine owne Spirit.

Thirdly, thou mayst know it by this, by the Consequent, it makes thee able to pray, and in the time of extremity it makes thee able to goe to *God*, as to a Father, when another flies away from him, as from everlasting burnings.

So much shall serve for this time.

FINIS.

*Object.*

*Answer.*

Wicked men come not to God out of love to him, but are forced by their owne extremity.







# THE THIRTEENTH SERMON.

GENESIS 17. 2.

*And I will make my Covenant betweene mee and thee.*



He point which wee were in handling, was this, How a man may know whether hee be in the *Covenant*, or no? I told you, there are 3. wayes to know it. Let a man consider how *Abraham* came into the *Covenant*; *Abraham* beleevved *God*, and it was imputed to him for righteousnesse. If thou beleevve, then thou art within the *Covenant*; but it must be faith that wroket by love; if it bee a faith which workes not, it is but a dead faith,

G g

and

How to know whether we are in the *Covenant* or no.

and if it doe worke, yet if it worke not by love the *Lord* regardeth it not : it is true, it is faith that layes hold upon the *Covenant*, but it works by love; faith is the point of the *Compass*, that fastens upon the *Covenant*, but love is the other part, that goes about, that doth all the businesse, it is that which keeps the *Commandements*, it is that which quickens us to every good worke.

2.  
If we have taken the promised seed.

The second way to know whether wee are in the *Covenant*, or no, is, to consider whether we have taken the promised seed; for in him shall all the *Nations* in the world bee blessed. How shall we know that? If wee have the spirit of the *Sonne*, that is knowne by the Spirit it selfe the spirit beares witness; the witness of the Spirit, as I told you, it is knowne by that which goes before it, by that which accompanies it, and by that which followes after. This is the point that we were in handling, and we were broken off in the midst of it; wee will recall it a little, and deliver it somewhat more distinctly unto you, than wee could doe than for haste.

Rom. 8. 15.

First, I say, whosoever hath the Spirit of the *Sonne*, he must have, before it, the spirit of bondage: Rom. 8. 15. You have not received the spirit of bondage againe to feare; but you have received the spirit of adoption. As if hee should say, there are none, but first they receive the spirit of bondage: for there is no man can come to *Christ*, except the Law bee his Schoolemaster

ster, and the Law is not effectuall without the spirit of bondage, neither the Law in the threatnings, nor in the judgements, which are the executioners of those threatnings: you may heare the Law opened to you a hundred and a hundred times; that is, the particular finnes of which a man is guilty, described; yea, the particular judgements; yea, the *Lord* may follow you with afflictions and crosses, yet except there be a spirit of bondage to worke together with these, it will never mollifie an obdurate heart.

And therefore, my beloved, you must make this accout, if you have never beene affrighted with the terrours of God, if you have never beene put into any feare by the spirit of bondage, be assured that you have not yet the *spirit of Adoption*. If men would have looked to the *brazen Serpent*, without being stung of the fiery Serpents, God would have spared the spirit of bondage; but who doth it? or who is able to doe it? Wee bee all in a dead sleep, and except we be wakened with the *terrours of the Almighty*, there is no man would seeke after *Iesus Christ*; wee may preach the Gospell long enough; and men; for the most part turne the deafe eare to us, till the *Lord open their eares by afflictions*, and especially, by the *spirit of bondage*; it cannot be, but there must be some precedent worke, wee will not come home to the *Lord* without it. Wee doe all as the Woman that had the bloody issue, as long

He that never had the spirit of bondage, hath not the spirit of Adoption.



*Simile.*

None come to  
Christ, till all  
other meanes  
faile.

as she had mony in her purse, or that there were Physicians to goe to, that shee had ability to have them, she would not come to **CHRIST**; but when she had spent all, when she saw there was no more hope, then she comes to *Christ*, and was healed of her bloody issue: so doe wee, so long as we can live in sinne, wee consider not the greatnesse nor the darkenesse of the disease, but if wee can but subsist with it, wee goe on we come not to *Christ*; but when wee are spoiled of all by the spirit of bondage, when wee are put into feare of death, that is it that brings us home to *Iesus Christ*, and therefore wee must make account of it as a generall rule, there must be such a spirit of bondage to bring us home: wee doe in this case as *Ioab* did with *Absolon*, when hee lived in the Court in ease and pleasure, hee would not come at *Absolon*, hee might send againe and againe, but hee would not come at him, till his Corne was set on fire, and that brought him: So, unlesse there bee some such crosse as may make an impression upon us, such a crosse as hath the spirit of bondage joyned with it, to cause it to wound our spirits, (as it is said *they were pricked in their hearts when they heard Peter*) I say, wee would not come home unto the **L O R D**, wee must have such an *aven-ger of blood*, to pursue us, before wee seeke to the *Citie of refuge*, And therefore consider, whether thou hast tasted of this spirit; and withall, you may observe this by the way,

*Simile.*

way, that when *God* doth write bitter things against a man, it is not a just cause of dejection: for this is a signe that *God* is beginning a good worke in thee. Seeke not to put it off, and to thinke it is a miserable thing to be under such a bondage as this: no, but make this use of it, let it bring thee home to *Iesus Christ*. And heere, by the way, that men may not be deceived in this and say, Alas, I have not had this spirit of bondage and feare, and therefore I feare I am not right.

Beloved, you must know for what end the *Lord* sends it: hee sends it for these two ends, and by that you shall know whether you have it or no; for if thou hast the end once, if the effect bee wrought no doubt but thou hast had the cause that produceth that effect.

One end is to bring us home to *Christ*; if thou finde thou hast tooke *Iesus Christ*, it is certaine there hath bene a worke of the spirit of bondage upon thy heart, if thou finde thou art willing to take him upon any conditions, that thou art willing to deny thy selfe, thou art willing to serve him, to love him, and to obey him.

And a second end is, *GOD* sends his Spirit of bondage, that thou mightest know the bitternesse of sinne, and learne to abstaine from it: that thou mayest learne to tremble at his Word, for the time to come, *I looke to him that is of a contrite spirit, and that trembleth at my word: that even*

*Note.*

*Object.*

*Answ.*

How to know we have had the spirit of bondage.

1.

By our taking of *Christ*.

2.

By our apprehension of the bitternesse of sinne.

The spirit of  
bondage i.  
not to satisfie  
for sinns past  
but to prevent  
sinns to come.

as parents doe with their children, they would never afflict and correct their children for that which is past, but their end is for the time to come, that they may not commit the same fault againe; otherwise, I say, the parent would not lay any affliction upon the childe; so the Lord hath this very end in sending the spirit of bondage, thou must not thinke it is for thy sinnes past, that there may bee a kinde of satisfaction made for them, that is not the end, but the end is, that thou mightest know the bitternesse of sinne for the time to come, that thou being scorched once with it, thou mightest not easily meddle with it againe, and therefore if thou findest this to bee thy case, thou hast so farre tasted the terrours of the Almighty, that thou darest not adventure upon sinne, thou standest in awe of the LORD, that thou darest not be so bold with sinne as thou hast beene, thou darest not meddle with the occasion of it, that thou darest not come neere it; I say, if thou finde such a tendernesse of conscience in thy selfe, if thou finde that that sinne is made terrible to thee, that thou diddest despise before, (for it is the property of a carnal man to despise his waies) I say, if this be wrought in thee, defer not, make not dainty of applying the promises, because thou hast not received the spirit of bondage: for thou hast, the effect, therefore thou needest not doubt, but that thou hast the thing. This is it that goes before.

That which  
accompanies  
the spirit,

That which goes together with it, I shewed  
you



you, then is the witnesse of the blood, and of the water and of our owne spirit; there bee three that beare witnesse in earth, *1 Ioh. 4. the spirit, and the water, and the blood*: by spirit there, is meant our owne spirit enlightened, by blood is meant justification, by water is meant sanctification; so that these goe together with the witnesse of the Spirit.

*1 Ioh. 4.*

The first is the witnesse of the blood; that is, when a man is humbled, when a man is broken with the spirit of bondage, then hee beginnes to make out for a pardon: when hee sees he is arrested, as it were, when he is shut up, as that phrase is us'd, *Gal. 3.* and sees what a debt is required of him, and he is not able to pay the least farthing, now hee beginnes to looke out for a surety, now hee beginnes to hunger and thirst exceedingly after *Christ*; now hee is not content onely to watch with him, to serve him, and to obey him, but hee is willing to part with his life, and all that he hath, upon that condition. Now when a man is in this case, when the *Lord* beginnes to shew him the blood of his Sonne, he begins to open a little crevis of light, and to shew him the new Testament in his blood, that is, the New Testament confirmed in his *blood-shed for many for the remission of sinnes*. I say, hee begins then to looke upon the promises, to consider such promises as these, *Come to mee, all yee that are weary, &c.* and, *If any man sinne, wee have an Advocate*, and let whosoever will, come and take of the water of life freely: and, *Goe,*

*1. The witnes  
of blood.*

We looke on  
the promises,

1.

As true.

Gal. 3.

2.

As good.

and preach to every creature under heaven, and tell them, if they will beleeve, and take my Sonne, they shall be saved. I say, these are all promises made in the blood of *Iesus Christ*. Now he begins to consider these promises, and he begins first to thinke, What? are these promises true? Yes, surely they are most true, they are confirmed with an oath, they are confirmed with the blood, with the death of the Testator: a mans Covenant, after it is once made, and the Testator is dead, *Gal. 3.* no man addes to it, or takes from it. Now when a man considers this, Are these the promises of the Lord? hath hee confirmed them with an Oath? are they confirmed with the blood of the Testator? Certainly, they are most true, I cannot doubt of them: but when he begins to consider, As they are true, how fit are they for me? what is the goodnesse of them? They are also exceeding good, there is nothing in the World so excellent, so precious, so sweet, and so comfortable, as these promises bee: I say, when he hath done these two, when the understanding saith they are true, and beleeves them, and when the will saith they are good, and embraceth them, at that very instant, *salvation is come to thy house*, and to thy heart; I say, *Christ Iesus* is come to thee, at that very instant he hath made a Covenant with thee, through perhaps thou see him not at that time, (as *Mary* could not see him, but tooke him for the Gardiner) but, I say, at that time thou art translated

lated from the *Covenant* of Workes to the *Covenant* of Grace.

But you will say, How comes this blood to be a witness?

It is a witness in this manner: when a mans spirit shall consider the promises, and ponder them well, and shall say thus with himselfe; Well, I have applyed these promises, but upon what warrant, upon what ground have I done it; every body will bee ready to apply the promises of mercy and forgiveness, but what warrant have I to apply them? to know upon what good ground I lay hold of these promises? Then a man considers with himselfe the promises, they are sure; they are cleere and distinctly set downe in the Word; hee considers, to whom these promises are offered, to those that are unrighteous; *The LORD justifieth the unrighteous, even to Publicans and Harlots, to sinners, such they were that came to CHRIST, to such the promises were offered.* Well, I know, I am an unrighteous man, and therefore the want of sorrow and contrition, and the want of holinesse, and the want of tenderesse of heart in the beginning, shall not exclude mee: for they are promises that are made to the unrighteous, to the uncleane and polluted, to the hard-hearted, such they are at the first, to whom the promises are made. But what doth the *Lord* require of those? That they thirst: *All that, thirst, come*: Now I finde an extreme thirst  
I would

*Quest.*

*Ans.*  
How the blood of Christ is a witness.

To whom the promises are made.

Thirsting after Christ required.



I would dye that I might have *Christ* and his righteoutnesse. Is this all? No, it is required further, that when thou art come in, thou take this resolution, now I will serve him, now I will love him, now I will obey him, I will bee content to take *Jesus Christ*, for better, for worse, I will bee content to deny my selfe, to take up my Crosse, to follow him in all his wayes. When a mans spirit hath pondered this well, when hee hath looked on the blood of I E S U S C H R I S T, and the promises, and sees himselfe qualified upon this, he saith, surely, these promises belong to mee, this is the witnessse of the blood.

2. The witness  
of the water.

Then followes the witnessse of the water; for the blood hath a double vertue in it, it hath not onely the vertue to deliver us from the guilt of sinne, to cause the *Lord* to passe over us; when hee sees the sprinckling of the blood upon our hearts, and upon our persons, but there is more, it hath a cleansing vertue in it, it clenseth the conscience from dead workes; and so hath faith, it hath not onely vertue in it to receive, and to digest and to take the promises, but it hath an ability to worke; as the hand, you know, hath two offices, it hath an office to receive, and to take, and likewise it hath ability to worke: Beloved, these are never disjoyned, the blood never washeth from sin, but likewise it clenseth the conscience from dead workes; faith never receives the promise, but it workes likewise: indeed for the receiving part; wee receive

ceive all *alike precious faith* ; but for the working part, there is much difference : you know a weake hand is able to receive as well as a stronger, but a stronger can doe more worke : therefore as faith growes more, so it workes more. Some men have a more working faith than others, though, as it is a receiving faith, he hath it alike : therefore thou mayest consider this with thy selfe, If I have the testimony of the blood, I have also the testimony of the water, that is sanctification joyned with justification ; CHRIST came not by blood onely, but by water also : if the spirit of a man looke on this now, and can say, I see I am *renewed in the spirit of my minde* ; I see I am washed from my filthinesse, I see my conscience is in some measure cleansed from dead workes, then he may conclude with himselfe, surely I am in the state of grace, I am in the *Covenant*. And this is the witnessse of our owne spirit, and the witnessse of the water, and of the blood. But when this is done, it may be the *Lord* continues, yet, at some fits, to write bitter things against thee, he seemes to cast thee off, hee seemes to wound thee sometimes with the wounds of an enemy ? This the *L O R D* many times doth, that he may put us to it ; hee turnes the deafe eare, that hee may try what wee will doe : when the spirit of a man hath now these testimonies, and yet hath not rest, though it have them on good ground, ( for I meane not the naked spirit of a man, but his spirit enlightened and sanctified  
by

Faith, as it receives, is alike in all.

Why the Lord speaks not peace alwaies to those that are in Covenant with him.

We must trust  
Gods promise  
though wee  
want peace.

The seale of  
Gods spirit.

Eph. 1. 13.

Rev. 3.  
Ioh. 14. 21.

by the *Holy Ghost*) yet when hee hath good ground, and saith thus with himselfe, Yet for all this, I will trust him, I have his sure Word for it, I have his promise, I know that *Heaven and earth shall passe*, rather than any promise of his shall passe. Now when the *Lord* seeth a man beleiving thus, and trusting him upon his bare Word, then the *Lord* goes a step further with him, and seales the same things to him with the *spirit of promise*, ( as I shewed before out of *Ephes. 1. 13. In whom after you beleaved, you were sealed with the spirit of promise*) when you put to your seale that *God is true*, *God* then comes and puts to his seale, hee gives you the *spirit of promise*, and assures you that it is so; that is, he doth by his owne Spirit say to a mans soule, *I am thy salvation*. My beloved, this is a certaine expression of the *Holy Ghost* to the soule of a man, that we know not how to expresse to you: therefore it is called the *hidden Manah*: it is called a *white stone*, with a new name written in it, that no man knowes but hee that hath it, a certaine manifestation of *Christ* to the soule, a certaine divine light, a certaine secret token of his love, whereby *Christ* manifests himselfe to the soule of man, that which the Scriptures call *supping with him*; *I will come and sup with him*; *Rev. 3. & Ioh. 14. 21. I and my Father will come to him, and I will manifest my owne selfe unto him*; this is the witnessse of the Spirit, that when the witnessse of our owne spirit is somewhat obscure, wee may than say,  
Lord



Lord, thou now speakest plainly, now there is no question. My beloved, this is the witness of the Spirit; that thou bee not mistaken in it, still remember this, that it is given to *those that overcome*; if thou bee overcome of every thing, of every small temptation, if thou bee overcome with a blast of praise, with a little pelfe and wealth, dost thou thinke now thou hast got the *white-stone*, that *Christ* gives as the witness of his Spirit? No, it is to those that overcome, and so it is to those that open; if thou be a stubborne servant, that *CHRIST* may come againe and againe, and knocke at the doore, and tell thee of such a sinne, that thou liest in, and of such a duty that thou neglectest, and yet thou carriest thy selfe like a stubborne servant, that will not heare him, or if thou doe, thou wilt not goe about the worke that hee hath appointed thee; dost thou thinke hee will come in and sup with thee, when thou wilt not open to him? No, it is not *CHRIST* that sups with thee, but it is a delusion of Satan. But how shall we know this? These are the things that accompany the Spirit: but now for the Consequents of it, they are these sixe.

First there followes a spirit of prayer, that goes together with it, prayer in the perfection of it is not a lip-labour, no, it is not a putting up of petitions onely, bee they never so excellent, it is not a crying to the *LORD*: for other men may doe so, but it is when a man can come to *God* with confidence, because hee knowes him

Who they be that have the witness of the Spirit.

Six consequents of the Spirit.  
1. A spirit of prayer;

to bee his Father, because hee hath beene acquainted with him, because hee hath received the Spirit of the Sonne, that tels him in plaine termes he is his Father: when a man can come with holy affections to the *Lord*, this is the spirit of prayer; a wicked man, as we shewed out of *Iob 27.* when *God* comes to him, and rends and teares his soule from him; that is, he parts with his soule unwillingly, when *God* puls on the one side, and hee on the other, when *God* puls away his soule, saith he, will the **L O R D** heare him, when hee cries to the Almighty? No: for hee doth not pray, it is indeede a cry, a man in extremity may cry hard, as a theefe at the Barre, he cryes hard, not because he loves the Iudge, or hath any confidence in him if it were not for the extremity, hee would not doe it at all, saith he, he prayeth not, he doth not delight in the Almighty, hee goes not to him as to a father, and it appeares hence that were there not such an extremity, hee would not pray: for hee will not pray at all times.

2. Love to  
God & Christ.

Love comes;

I

From know-  
ledge.

Secondly, it breedes love; wheresoever the witnesse of the Spirit is, alwaies there followes it love towards *God*, and *Iesus Christ*: for it cannot bee otherwise, all love comes from knowledge; now when a man hath seene *Iesus Christ* indeed, that is, when the *Lord* hath shewed his owne selfe unto him, when he hath drawne neere to a man in the witnesse of his Spirit, when he hath manifested himselfe, it

can-

cannot bee but a man must love him. What is the reason that wee shall love him perfectly in heaven, but because we shall know him fully? any man that knows him in part here, loves him in part; and therefore if you have ever knowne the *Lord*, if hee have thus shewed himselfe, it cannot be but thou shalt love him.

Besides, love comes from kindnes and goodnesse of one that hath shewed love to us, love begets love, as fire begets fire. Now when this was thy case, when thou wast a man expecting nothing but death and hel, and the wrath of *God*, and the *Lord* hath come, and spoken kindly unto thee, as it were, the *Lord* hath come and spoken to thee, when thou wast to die, and hath said, *thou shalt live*, when he hath overcome thee with kindnes, as it were, it cannot be now but that thy heart should be affectioned towards him, as *David* saith, *Psal. 18. Lord I love thee dearely*; for, *when I was in distresse, thou didst heare me*; so, when a man hath felt the terrours of the Almighty, when hee hath lyen under the spirit of bondage, for a time, when he expected nothing but death, and condemnation, and the *Lord* hath shewed mercy and loving kindnesse unto him, love will follow.

Thirdly, thou shalt finde this follow upon it, likewise; if thou have the spirit of Adoption, it will set thee on worke, to clense thy selfe as, *2 Cor. 7. 1.* see a notable place for this purpose; saith hee, *if you have such promises, that is,*

2  
From kindnes.

Psal. 18.

3. Clensing a mans heart.

2 Cor. 7. 1.



is, the promise of grace, and of forgiveness, and of the pardon of sinne, if you have applyed them indeed by the Spirit of Adoption, then you will *cleansse your selues from all pollution of flesh and spirit*. So, by this thou maist know whether thou hast the Spirit of adoption, whether thou hast applyed the *Covenant of Grace*, and the promises of it, indeede, and in good earnest, or no: this will certainly follow, thou wilt cleansse thy selfe: but if thou finde now, that thou wallowest in thy lusts, in thy filthynesse, that thou art not yet washed from thy sinnes, and from thy swinish nature, be assured thou hast not yet applyed the promises, thou hast not yet the Spirit of Adoption, be assured if thou hast any hope, it is not a true and lively hope, it is but a false and dead hope: for, if it were a true and lively hope, *1 Ioh. 3.* it would set thee aworke to purge thy selfe, and therefore *Heb. 10. 22.* you see the difference there betweene the assurance of faith, and of presumption, *Draw neere in full assurance of faith: What then? having your hearts sprinkled from an evill conscience, and your bodies washed in pure water.* If it bee assurance of faith, it hath alwayes this following with it, the heart is sprinkled from an evill conscience; but if it be a presumptuous, a false assurance, upon false grounds, there followes no such cleansing, no such watchfulness. This is a such rule, that will not deceive you, those that have but false flashes of comfort, they grow secure after them, these  
breed

A tryall of having the spirit

1 Ioh. 3.

Heb. 10. 22.

False comfort breeds sinfull security.

breede carelesnesse, they are more bold to commit sinne, they walke loosely, and are apt and ready to say, I doubt not but it shall bee well enough with mee; But those that have assurance indeede, it makes them much more diligent, and sollicitous, and carefull to please the Lord in all things; For it is as a feast to him, when *Christ* leades them into his Cellar, as it were, and makes a mans heart glad with *Flaggons of wine*, that is, with the consolations of the Spirit; I say, it quickens him, and makes him zealous, and readie to every good worke; When hee hath once tasted of this Wine, his case is like *Elihues*, hee cannot hold in, but hee must breake forth into good workes, into holinesse of life. A man walkes in the strength of such a testimony of the Spirit for many dayes, for many yeares, so farre it is from making a Man remisse in the wayes of *God*.

Fourthly, that which accompanies it, is *peace* and joy, *Rom. 15. 13.* the Apostle prayes that they may be filled with *peace and joy*, through beleeving; as if he should say, if thou beleeve once indeede, joy will follow; And therefore you know it is called the *joy of the holy Ghost*, that is, when once a Man receives the witnessse of the Spirit, there followes a wondrous quiet, and peaceableness, and calmnesse in the heart. Beloved, it is with every sonne of *Adam*, as it was with *Adam*; When hee had lost the Image of *GOD*, there followed trouble and horroure of his conscience, till that Image was  
 H h recovered,

4. Peace and joy.  
*Rom. 15. 13.*

recovered, his heart was never fully at peace; but as soone as that was recovered, the heart recovers the former joy that *Adam* had, that former quiet, and peace, and comfort, that *Adam* had in that innocencie, hee hath it in a measure: So, when the LORD returnes againe to a mans spirit, (if it be his returning, and no delusion) I say, there ariseth a certaine peace in the Soule, and joy that no worldly man ever tasted of, that they never understood, nor knew the meaning of; a certaine peace and joy that goes beyond all worldly joy whatsoever, that which *David* called the *shining of Gods countenance*, *Psalm. 3.* and, beloved, one good looke from *God* is worth more than all the wealth in the world, yea, than the verie corporall presence of *I E S U S C H R I S T*; and therefore *C H R I S T* tells his Disciples, that they should be great gayners by losing of him: for, saith hee, you shall get this by it, *I will send the Comforter, the Holy Ghost*, and hee shall fill you with peace, and joy, this shall bee much better for you, than if I should bee with you still; It is better that *C H R I S T* should dwell in our hearts, than in our houses; It is better the LORD should bee with us in his Spirituall comforts, than with his corporall presence; And this comfort, I say, every man receives, as soone as hee receives the Spirit, hee receives *Peace that passeth all understanding*. But now, when a Man hath received this joy, and this peace, when hee is lift up into the

third

*Psalm. 3.*

*Note.*



third Heaven, as it were, What followes upon this? Will hee bee lift up, and puffed up with all this? Oh no, it is impossible; and therefore in the first place, this accompanies it, there followes an exceeding great humility, a man is never so humble as after hee hath received the spirit of promise; It is very exceeding certaine that no men in the world are so vile in their owne eyes, as those to whom the *Holy Ghost* hath borne this witnessse: there is a place for it, that puts this out of all doubt, *Ezek. 36. 31.* when the *Lord* saith, hee will powre out his Spirit upon them, and give them a new heart, and a new spirit; then, saith hee, then at that time, when you have received the spirit of adoption, and I have made my Covenant with you, then you shall consider your owne deedes that were not good, and you shall acknowledge your selves worthy to bee destroyed for your iniquities and transgressions; The new Translation, you shall loath your selves; that is, a man shall bee exceeding vile in his owne eyes. Presumption alwayes puffes up a man, it brings him into a better conceit with himselfe; But this puts him quite out of conceit with himselfe; the neerer the *Lord* drawes to any man, the more rottenesse hee findes in his bones; As, wee see, when the *Lord* came neere unto *Iob*, then hee abhorred himselfe in dust and ashes: Because the *Lord* comes alwayes with a bright light, as the Sunne doth, that shewes a man the corruptions that be in him, that he never saw before, that he wonders

5. Humility!

The best men worst in their owne eyes.

*Ezek. 36. 31.*

Note.

What it is that makes good men, vile in their owne eyes.

at himselfe, that he hath lived so long with himselfe, and yet knowes himselfe no better: this is the case of every man, when the LORD comes home to him, it humbleth him exceedingly; and therefore consider, whether thou bee thus vile in thine owne eyes, whether the spirit of humility have gone together with it.

6. Not to receive the spirit of bondage againe.  
Rom. 8. 16.

And last of all, to end this point, this will follow upon it, though it bee a negative, those that have the spirit of Adoption, they never receive the spirit of bondage againe, *Rom. 8. 16.* *You have not received the spirit of bondage againe to feare:* as if hee should say, this is the condition of all the Saints, you have tasted of it, that is the common condition, and that you must looke for; and saith hee, this testimonie you have, (for it is the Apostles scope to give them a testimony of their good estate, that they were within the Covenant, that they were under grace, saith hee) by this you shall know it, you have not received the spirit of bondage againe; as if he should say, should you ever receive the spirit of bondage againe, you were not under grace: for it is impossible. So likewise you see an excellent place for this, *Gal. 3. 25.* *wherefore the Law is a Schoole-master to bring us to Christ, that wee might bee made righteous by Faith: But after Faith comes, we are no longer under a Schoole-master.* There is no man comes to Christ, but the spirit of bondage is first a Schoolemaster to bring him, that is, the Law must set him hard taskes, that he is not able to performe, and then  
hee

Galat. 3. 15.

How the Law  
is a Schoole-  
master.

hee sues to *Christ*, as a weake Scholler doth to a Schoolemaster, and desires him to performe it for him, this brings him to *Christ*; but, saith hee, when you are once come to *Christ*, when Faith comes, we are no more under a Schoolemaster, a Man never comes under the Law againe.

But, you will object, Was it not *Iobs* case? did not the *Lord* write bitter things against him, and he was a just Man, and one that feared *God*? Was it not *Davids* case? Were not his bones broken, as he complaines, after the committing of the sin of Adultery? Doe not many finde by experience, that *God* hath wounded them sometimes with the wounds of an enemy, and hath seemed to cast them off, even after they have received the spirit of Adoption?

Beloved, to this I answer, it is very true, there are some awakings that a man may have, a Man may be put into a great feare after hee hath received the spirit of Adoption, he may tremble exceedingly at the wrath of *GOD*; I say, all this hee may doe, yet hee never receives the spirit of bondage againe, that is, hee never comes to this, to bee to *God* as a servant is to a hard Master, but alwayes this perswasion is in him, that *God* is his Father, and still hee hath the affection of a sonne, and still he hath that opinion, that *God* is his Father, that affection never weares out of him, hee never comes againe to looke on *God*, as the Theefe lookes on the Iudge, hee never comes to bee such a stranger to the *Lord*, so as to flye from him: for the spirit

*Quest.*

*Answ.*  
Though the Saints may have feares & terrours after conversion, yet they receive not the spirit of bondage againe.



The spirit of  
bondage, what

of bondage is nothing but this, when it makes a Man to feare the *Lord*, and to tremble at him exceedingly, as a Man doth at the wrath of a Iudge that hee thinkes will condemne him; though hee may in extremitie say, *Lord*, why hast thou forsaken me? Yet there goes a secret spirit of Adoption, that never leaves him altogether, though there bee some mixture with this, to awaken him, and to quicken him, and to cause him to come home to *Christ*: for that is the end still, even as a Man is brought home by the spirit of bondage at the first; So, when a Man steps out from *CHRIST*, and begins to grow wanton, when hee will runne out from the *L O R D I E S V S*, and will not keepe close, the *Lord* sends the same Spirit againe to bring him in; the Spirit doth its worke againe; but as hee was never wholly out, so hee never hath the full worke of the spirit of bondage. So you see, this is the second meanes to know whether we be in the *Covenant*.

Now followes the third meanes of knowing whether we be in the *Covenant*, and that is this, you see, this is a part of the *Covenant*, *Heb. 8. You shall know me from the greatest to the least, and I will teach you, you shall no more teach one another his neighbour, and it shall bee such a knowledge, that withall, you shall have my Law written in your hearts: and in another place, I will circumcise your hearts.* Beloved, this then is the third way, and the last, by which we may know, that wee are within the *Covenant*, Is there such a know-

Heb. 8.

The third way of knowing whether we be in the *Covenant*, is by our knowlege, which hath 2 properties,

knowledge of GOD wrought in you? Hath CHRIST so taught you? Marke it well, from that knowledge these two things follow; one is, that your heart is circumcised, that the lusts of your former ignorance, that rained in you before, bee dissolved: Secondly, it is such a knowledge, as breeds in you a forwardnesse and willingnesse to serve the *Lord* in all things? Is the Law of *God* thus written in your hearts? Have you had experience of this? Then certainly you are within the *Covenant*. There is a double knowledge, there is a knowledge that men have, that know much, but are not affected according to the things they know, nor doe they practise according to the things they know; this is a knowledge that the Minister may teach them, but it is not the knowledge that *Iesus Christ* teacheth.

But there is a second knowledge, that which *Christ* teacheth as hee is a Prophet, when hee teacheth a Man so to know sinne, and everie thing else, that withall, the lust, the dominion of sinne is dissolved by that knowledge; that this knowledge circumciseth the heart, it cuts off those lusts that did cleave to us before. If thou finde this effect of thy knowledge, now *Iesus Christ* hath taught thee this knowledge. You know, *The old Man is corrupt, Ephes. 4. 22. through lusts*; that come from errour, and the *new Man is renewed through holinesse*, that comes from truth. There are certaine lusts in the old Man, that proceede from errour: Now those

Knowledge double,

1. Property of true knowledge, It circumciseth the heart.

Ephes. 4. 22.

lusts wee see what they are, *1 Iohn 2.* all lusts are referred to those three heads, *the lusts of the Eye, the lusts of the Flesh, and the pride of Life.* Now if thou wouldest know whether **CHRIST** hath taught thee or no, whether thou hast this evidence of being in the *Covenant* with him, consider whether the truth bee so farre taught thee, that these lusts are dissolved by it: For *Iesus Christ came into the world to dissolve lusts;* as the lusts arise from error, so they are dissolved by truth: Beloved, the roote from which everie lust growes, is some error, some mistake; now take away the foundation of it; and the lust dyes. So that, when *Christ* teacheth the right knowledge, when hee reveales his truth to us, as a Prophet, hee takes away the roote, the bottome and foundation of a lust, and when the foundation is taken away, the worke of the Devill is dissolved in us, it fallles to the ground.

As for example, to give you an instance of it in those three lusts, to which all the lusts in the world are referred: *The lust of the Eyes,* that is, when a Man looks upon wealth, and riches, and whatsoever a Man looks upon, it is but the sight of the Eye; *Ecclesiast. 5.* What is the reason that men love riches? That they seeke them, and heape them up above measure? It is because a Man is deceived; hee thinkes there is such a worth in riches, and that they will stand him in such a stead, hee hath an high opinion of them, and thence comes

The roote of  
lust is error.

All lusts refer-  
red to 3. heads:  
1. Lust of the  
Eyes.

Ecclesiast. 5.



comes a Man to desire them so much, from hence ariseth this lust, of the Eyes: Now, when CHRIST teacheth a Man that there is no such thing in riches, that hee is but deceived, when hee teacheth him to looke on them as Paul did, hee thinkes they are but *drosse and dung*, but emptie withering Flowers, *James 1. As the Flowers, so doth the rich Man fade in all his wayes*: Riches are no better; hee teacheth a Man that they are nothing: *Why wilt thou set thy heart upon that which is nothing? Proverb. 23.* All the men in the world are not able to teach this, till *Christ Iesus* hath taught it to a man, but when hee hath taught it him, I say, the lust is dissolved, there is an end of it, hee doth no more seeke wealth in that manner as he did, he sets no more that price upon it as hee did, hee thinkes how hee may doe good with it, how hee may make good use of it, how hee may redeeme time now from worldly things to better things: for now hee needes them not, as *Paul*. What doe you tell mee of money? I heede it not, but to further your reckoning; *I rejoyce that I may further your reckoning* against the Day of Iudgement.

And so for *pride of Life*, that is, honour, and dignitie, and esteeme, and place of preferment, and applause of men, all things of that nature; What is the reason that this lust rules and captivates a Man? It is because hee thinkes that there is an excellencie in these things, but when CHRIST hath taught him, when hee hath

1am. 1.

Proverb. 23.  
None can  
teach to know  
the vanity of  
earthly things;  
but Christ.

2. Pride of life.

hath written the New Covenant within him, when hee hath written his Law in his heart, when hee hath taught him with his owne teaching, hee beginnes to see a vanitie in all these things, as the Apostle saith; the praïsse of men is emptie glorie, the applause of men, that pleased him before, hee now lookes upon it, as a Bubble blowne with the breath of men, an emptie thing; hee esteemes it a thing that quickly lives and dies, and vanisheth, hee seekes no more after it: And so for the *lusts of the flesh*, whereas a Man before thought it the onely life for a Man to satisfie the flesh, and the desires of it, now hee begins to looke on it after another manner, hee begins to see the filthinesse and the bitternesse of those sinnes, hee begins to see, that *fleshly lusts fight against the Soule*, as enemies, hee lookes upon them as things more bitter than death; more sharpe than a two-edged Sword. Now when G O D hath enlightned a Man thus, and hath written his Law in his heart, and hath taught him so, that hee judgeth thus of his sinnes, and lusts, now his sinnes and lusts are dissolved in him, his heart is Circumcised, now they are cut off; now the building of Sathan is pulled downe, and yet, *Beloved*, this is but one part of this *Covenant*.

There is not onely this, but likewise there followes this, further, when *Christ* hath written his Law in the heart, that a Man hath not onely his heart weaned from all the sinfull lusts

3.  
The lusts of  
the flesh.

2. Property, A  
readinesse to  
obey God.

lusts that before hee delighted in, but there follows a wondrous forwardnesse and propensenesse to the Law of *God*, to keepe it; there is a wondrous desire to grow in Grace, to doe the duties of new obedience, that by his good will hee would live in no other Element, but in doing the duties, and using the meanes, by which hee may receive strength to doe them. When that Law is out of the heart, when wee looke upon the letter of the Law, there is no such matter; but when it is put into the heart, when it is written within, there is an inward disposition and pronenesse put into the heart. If you looke upon the Law without, *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God, and shalt feare him, &c.* It is a hard Law, who can keepe it? But when thou hast put it into thy heart, that is the grace of love, (for that is to put the Law into the heart, when there is such a habit planted in the heart, a habit of feare, and of everie good Grace) then there is a great pronenesse and aptnesse in a Man, and willingnesse to keepe the Law; and therefore in that place, *1 Tim. 1. 9. The Law is not given to the righteous, they are a Law to themselves.* If thou findest this to bee thy case, that thou needest not the Law to set thee on with terrours, and the threatnings of it, but thou art now a Law to thy selfe; that is, thou findest in thy selfe such an inward aptnesse and propensenesse to keepe the Law of *God*, that, if thou were put to thy choyse, if there were no necessitie layd

What it is to  
put the law in-  
to the heart.

1 Tim. 1. 9.



*Note.*

layd upon thee, if there were no threatening, no Hell, yet thou delightest in GOD, and desirest exceedingly to have communion with him; There is nothing seemes to bee so beautifull as Grace, as the Image of GOD renewed in thy Soule; I say, this will bee thy disposition, and this is for a Man to bee a Law to himselfe: For you know this common Nature is betweene the Image of the old *Adam*, and the Image of the new, betweene the flesh and the Spirit, betweene those lusts that remaine in thee, when thou art under the *Covenant* of workes, and betweene this *Covenant* of

*Simile.*

Grace, and fervency in well doing; I say, common nature is betweene these two, as a Bowle betweene two Byasses: Now the *Lord*, when he comes to write his Law in the heart, he doth not onely knock off the old Byas of sinfull lusts, that carried it out, but he sets a new Byas upon the soule, that bowes and bends thee to the wayes of *God*, that still there is a strong inclination that carries thee on that way, besides the Commandement; that thou doest not everie

*Note.*

thing as of necessitie: a man before this time, it may bee, prayed, it may bee he was constant in prayer, he would not let a Morning nor an Evening goe without it, it may bee hee would doe every other duty, but hee did it as a taske, as a Man that dares not omit it, there is a naturall conscience in him, that will be upon him if hee doe; Hee feares *God* will become his enemy, hee shall taste of fearefull Judgements, if hee

Duties performed out of feare.

neglect

neglect it, all this while he doth it out of feare: but one that hath the Law written in his heart, that is a law to himselfe, that hath a new Byas put upon his heart, I say, it still bends and inclines him to it, hee cannot doe otherwise, hee longs after it exceedingly, he is exceeding forward to it, the inward inclination of his minde stands to it. This is the third way, whereby you may know whether you be in the *Covenant* or no, if you finde that *Christ* hath thus taught you, and hath written his Law in your hearts, if you bee thus enlightned with knowledge, that both the lusts of the former ignorance are dissolved; and likewise there comes in the roome of them, a wondrous pronenesse and propensenesse to well-doing, when there is a certaine connaturalnesse betweene good duties and thy heart, when thou canst say indeede, as *Paul*, *I delight in the Law of God in the inward man*: and if I might have my desire, if *God* would give me my wish, as hee did to *Salomon*, that which I would wish before all things in the world, is, that I may have a greater measure of the spirit, that my sinfull lusts may be more and more mortified, that I may excell more in grace and holinesse, that his Image may be renewed in me, and that it may shine more bright in all the parts of it: I say, when thou findest this, be assured thou art in the *Covenant*. So much for that point.

I will add a second, which is this, from this difference; whereas this is one of the differences

A propensesse  
to holy duties  
in a Christiane.

rences betweene the old *Covenant* and the new, the Old Testament was made with the Iewes onely, it was shut up within the compasse of that Nation, the New *Covenant* is enlarged to the Gentiles, there is now an open Doore for them to come in, there are now better promises, more knowledge, a larger infusion of the Spirit, both for intention, and for the extent of it, it is to many more; and beloved, were it not for this *Covenant*, all you that now heare this *Covenant* of grace preached unto you, and have heard it often, you had never heard it, but this benefit you have by the New Testament, that now this good newes is come to your eares: Beloved, this *God* brings home to the Gentiles, and they had their severall times, and this is the season that *God* hath brought it home to you, even when you heare these promises of Grace made. And what use should you make of it? Surely this.

Take the present opportunitie.

Take heede of refusing the acceptable time, take heede of not comming in when the Doore of Grace is open; take heede of doing as the foolish Virgins did, they would come, and came, but they carryed till the Doore was shut upon them: Beloved, there is a certaine acceptable time, when *G O D* offers Grace, and after that hee offers it no more, as wee told you, the time of this life is the time that we can propound, wee know no other; but there are certaine secret times, that *God* reserves to himselfe, that none knowes but himselfe; and  
when



when that time is past over, hee offers it no more. You know, those in the Wilderneffe, they lived many yeares after, and therefore it was not the time of this life to them, after GOD had sworne in his wrath: therefore, I say, take heede of deferring; It is an exceeding dangerous thing; Delay in all things is dangerous, but procrastination in taking the offer of Grace, is the most dangerous thing in the world: wee know not what wee doe, when wee doe it. I beseech you consider it seriously, it is that that deceives all the world, they thinke to doe it to morrow, to morrow, though they bee not come in, yet they will doe it, and doe it speedily: Take heede you be not deceived in this, I will doe it now, and now, *Modò & modò*, &c. The Chariot wheelles, when they runne, the second runnes neere the first all the day long, but never overtakes it; As in a Clocke, the second minute followes the first, but it never overtakes it; So it is with us, this doing of it now, and now, and to morrow, and to morrow, these little distances deceive us, and delude us: we thinke to doe it in a short time, and by reason of the neerenesse and vicinitie of the time, we thinke we shall doe it easily, that we can take hold of that time; but it is not so, we are deceived and deluded with it, as Grasse-hoppers and Butterflies deceive Children, when they thinke to lay their hand upon them, they hoppe a little further, and a little further, that in the conclusion, they take them

not

*Simile.*

*Simile.*

not at all, so it is with us, wee coozen our selves in that manner, we lose our life, we lose our oportunitie of taking grace, because we thinke it to bee so neere, wee thinke wee can take it the next weeke, or the next moneth, and out of this wee are confident it is in our power, wee may take it. No, my beloved, for the most part wee are deceived, when wee thinke it is so neere, it may fly away, so that thou shalt never have part in it. You see how *God* dealt with men in the first *Covenant*, I meane in the time of the Old Testament, you see, when they would not take the offer, how *God* sware in his wrath that they should not enter into his rest: & I am fully perswaded, that in this New Testament, in these daies of Grace, the *Lord* is much more quicke and peremptory in rejecting men, and casting them off, the time is shorter, he will not wayt so long as hee was wont to doe in those times, hee will sooner sware in his wrath now, that you shall not enter into his rest: I speake this upon this ground, saith hee, if the *Lord* would doe this for the Law of *Moses*, how much more, if wee neglect so great salvation as was preached by the *Sonne* himselfe? As the mercie is much greater, now in the New *Covenant*, then it was then, so the wrath and danger is greater in refusing: therefore when we consider what a hazard it is, me thinks the frailtie and brittlenesse of this life, the unsearchablenesse, and uncertaintie of *Gods* seasons and times, that hee hath put into his owne power, the libertie of the Spirit, that breatheth

The Lord will not wayte so long now for men as heretofore.

Motives to lay hold on present oportunitie of grace

breatheth where and when it listeth, the exceeding danger that wee precipitate our selves into when wee lose the oportunity once, me thinkes these should move us to come in, and to take heed of refusing the offer at any time; those expressions that you shall finde so often in the Scripture, that *God stands and knockes*; that hee *waytes, and stretcheth forth his hands*, that hee will *gather us, as the Hen gathereth her chickens*; signifie these two things unto us: First, how exceeding readie *God* is to receive us, if we come in while the acceptable time lasteth.

Againe, withall, how dangerous it is to refuse it: for who knows how long the *Lord* will wait? who knowes when hee will cease wayting, and shut up the doore of grace to us? and then, when the day of peace is gone, it is no more to be recovered, when the acceptable time is past it can not bee recalled. I beseech you therefore consider and apply it, take heede of refusing, when you heare yet this *Covenant* of grace is offered, the doore is now open, you may come in, if you will; take heede of staying till the acceptable time is past, lest the *Lords* *swear in his wrath*, (at a time when you thinke not) *that thou shalt never enter into his rest*. So much for this.

That which I intended most was this, the reason why this *Covenant* is made, why *God* makes a *Covenant* with *Man*; which was chiefly, that we might have strong consolation, that wee might know his good will towards us, that hee might not onely doe us good, but that hee

The acceptable time once past, unrecoverable.



might make it manifest to us. Of this also we should have made some use, which is the laying hold of the *Covenant*, the promises of free justification, the promises of Sanctification, and the promises of such blessings as belong to this present life, those are the three parts of the *Covenant*: We should have shewed how we should lay hold of them, that when the *Lord* hath promised once, when Faith hath a promise to close with, when it hath such a ground to set footing upon, then to apply them, and if the *Lord* defer to performe them, then to put him to it, for the fulfilling of them; And so wee should doe for the promise of Iustification, the promise of forgiveness of sinnes, that you have cause to make use of at this time when you receive the Sacrament: For what doe you? You come to renew the *Covenant* with *God*, that wee have now spoken of: For it is the seale of the *Covenant*, there is a *Covenant* that *God* makes with you, and a *Covenant* that you make with him: when you consider this; you should strengthen your Faith, goe to him, and say, *Lord*, thou hast promised to forgive mee my sinnes, and to remember them no more: *Lord*, it is a part of thy *Covenant*: *Lord*, it is thy *Covenant* that thou hast put thy seale to, (for the seale is put to it for that very purpose, that when you see the Bread and Wine, you might thinke of these seales, as signes of the *Covenant*) you have *Gods* owne Word, as you have his Word that the Raine shall no more drowne the Earth, *GOD* hath set his

The covenant renewed in the Sacrament.

his Bow in the Cloud, that when hee lookes, he may remember the Covenant: So, likewise, you shall sprinkle the Doore-posts with the blood of the Lambe, and when the destroying Angell shall come and see the blood, hee may passe you over: After the same manner, for the same end God hath appointed the Sacrament, now when you receive those elements of Bread and Wine, *Take, eate, this is my body, and drinke, this is my blood, which was shed for you, and for many*: you may goe to God upon the same ground, & say to him, *Lord, thou hast made a Covenant with me, to forgive mee, to receive mee to thy mercie; Lord, these are the seales of thy Covenant, that if thou forget them, thou hast said that if we doe but shew thee those signes, (for it is the seale that God himselfe hath put to it) thou wilt remember thy Covenant, & make it good: therefore it is an exceeding great confirming to you, when you looke upon them, when you can say to the Lord, Lord, heere is thy seale that thy selfe hath put, I beseech thee looke upon it, and remember thy Covenant that thou hast made.*

And as wee should doe thus for the promises of Iustification, so for the promises of Sanctification, suppose there bee a strong lust hang upon thee, an hereditary disease, a lust that is naturall to thee, that thou thinkest thou shalt never bee able to overcome, yet God hath promised to breake the dominion of everie sinne, that hee will crucifie *the Flesh, with the affections of it*, that he will sanctifie thee throughout. Be-

God can heale  
the strongest  
lust.

loved, you must beleeve those promises of Sanctification; aswell as of Iustification: For certainly, where the Scripture hath a mouth to speake, Faith hath an eare to heare, and a hand to receive: Therefore when you grapple with a strong lust, goe to the *Lord*, and say to him, I am not able to keepe this Commandement, I feele this temptation is too strong for me, I find such strong naturall inclinations, that I am not able to out-wrestle, *Lord*, it is a part of thy *Covenant*, thou hast said thou wilt circumcise my heart, thou hast said, thou wilt *put thy Law into my inward parts*, thou hast said thou wilt dissolve these lusts, I beseech thee to doe it; *Lord*, thou art able to doe it, as *Christ* was able to heale hereditary diseases, so the Spirit is able to heale the hereditary diseases of the Soule, those that are most naturall to us, those that are bred and borne with us: and therefore trust him.

Bestowing of outward blessings a part of Gods Covenant.

And so likewise for any other blessing, goe to him whatsoever blessing thou needest, it is part of *Gods Covenant*, hee saith to *Abraham*, *I will blesse thee, and I will be thy God*; that is, let a Man looke round about, and see what blessings hee needes, what evill he would be delivered from, and let him goe to the *Lord*, and say, *Lord*, it is a part of thy *Covenant*, to give me such a blessing, to guide mee, to deliver mee from such a crosse and calamitie; urge the *Lord*, and tell him it is his *Covenant*. For example, if a Man be in some great trouble, that hee hath some sore disease, some sore affliction, as imprisonment, or evill report



report, feare of death, or whatsoever; goe to the *Lord*, and say, *Lord*, thou hast said that *the rod of the wicked shall not rest upon the lot of the righteous*, thou wilt afflict but in measure, thou wilt not breake my bones: as a Father, though hee chasten his childe, hee will not breake the bones of his childe, the rod of the wicked to some men, is the breaking of the bones, they know not what to doe, thou hast said thou wilt chasten us according to our strength, and thou wilt chastise us for our good: when it is too much, thou wilt stay thy hand. As for evill report, a Man may goe to the *Lord*, and say, *Lord*, thou hast said thou wilt blesse the name of the righteous, thou wilt honour them that honour thee. And so for every other particular case, be it what it will bee, lay hold on the promise, and comfort thy selfe with it: It is a great matter, *Beloved*, when you consider this, that *God* is entred into Covenant with you, when you have the promises once: therefore if thou finde a promise from *God*, build upon this ground, bee assured that thou art one within the Covenant: Secondly, thou finde a promise in Scripture, never let thy hold goe, but bee assured of this, that the *Lord* will surely doe it, though he deferre long, yet hee will doe it, it cannot be but he will performe it, &c. So much shall  
 serve for this time.

FINIS.





THE  
FOURTEENTH  
SERMON.

GENESIS 17. 2.

*And I will make my Covenant betweene mee and thee.*



OV remember how farre wee are proceeded in this point: for my purpose is not to re- peate any thing of that which hath beene delivered: Onely this wee must call to remem- brance, that the maine difference which is be- tweene the Old Testament and the New, it stands in this, that the Old Testament was hid with shaddowes, and Types; in the New Te- stament, there is a more cleere revelation of all things; *The things that were hid,* (saith Paul)



*Paul*) from the beginning of the world, are now revealed unto us, (that is) the great difference betweene them, it lyes in this, that there is a greater abundance of knowledge discovered to the sonnes of men, now, in the time of the Gospell, then there was in the time of the Old Testament, and from hence it is, that now *God* makes a Covenant with us, and wee doe not breake it; but, saith hee, *Hebr. 8. I made a Covenant with your Fathers, when I tooke them by the hand, and led them out of the Land of Egypt; but they broke my Covenant.* And what was the reason? Because their knowledge was exceeding slender, and therefore their grace and strength was exceeding little, and therefore they were not able to keepe the *Covenant*, there is no other reason and ground, why the *Covenant* is better now, as it is said to be a better *Covenant*, *Heb. 8. 6. stablished upon better promises.* I say, there is no other ground for it, but this, the difference of knowledge betweene the two *Covenants*; for, for substance they are the same, onely in the administration of them, the glorious mysteries of the Gospell are more openly and more cleerely revealed to us in the New Testament, than in the Old.

Hebr. 8.]

Hebr. 8. 6.

Use.

To labour for knowledge.

Whence wee will onely make this use, that, if wee would have the benefit of the New *Covenant*, wee must labour to get the knowledge of it; otherwise it is no advantage to you at all, that you are borne in the time of the New *Covenant*, in the time of the Gospell, except know-  
ledge

ledge abound, except you take the benefit of it, except you labour to understand *the unsearchable riches of CHRIST*, that are unfoulded to us in the Covenant of Grace. What is the reason why the Apostle, *Galat. 4.* calls the Old Testament, those teachings that the people had then, *impotent and beggarly Rudiments*? The reason is, because their knowledge was exceeding little, therefore it brought little profit to them, they were beggarly, they had little riches in them, and they were impotent, they could communicate little power, and strength, and efficacie to the inward Man: On the other side now, the New Covenant is strong, and rich, and lively, and effectuell; and the reason is, because there is more knowledge in it, wee are taught to know G o d better, and to know the whole mysterie of the Gospell better.

Therefore I say, if you would bee strengthened in grace, if you would be enabled to keepe the Covenant more than they were, labour to grow in knowledge, let it not bee unusefull unto you, whatsoever is delivered, but make benefit of it. You see what riches of knowledge are delivered to us in *Pauls* Epistles, let none of this bee lost, it is thy benefit, that this is now discovered to thee, that was hid from all the world aforesaid. It is that benefit that the Apostle *Paul* so exceedingly magnifies, that *to us this mystery is revealed*, that wee have this grace, to make knowne to *Principalities and Powers* the manifold wisdom of God, the unsearchable riches

Galat. 4. 9.  
Note.

Growing in  
knowledge in-  
c easeth grace.

of

Want of grace  
and strength  
is from want  
of knowledge.

2 Pet. 3: 17.

There may be  
knowledge  
without grace,  
but not grace  
without know-  
ledge.

*Simile.*

*Note.*

*of Christ*: make this use of it, grow in knowledge, and thou shalt grow in Grace, by that meanes, the strength thou gettest in Grace, it is from the abundance of knowledge: this is an exceeding usefull point. The complaints ordinarie amongst Men, are, they would faine doe otherwise, they would abstaine from such sinnes, and they would observe such duties, they intend it, and desire it, and purpose it, but they are not able to performe it. What is the reason of that? Because they want grace and strength, that is the immediate cause: But what is the cause they want Grace? Because they take no paines to grow in knowledge. In 2 Pet. 3. 17. see how they are put together; *Take heede you bee not plucked away with the error of the wicked, but grow in Grace.* How shall wee doe that? *Grow in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Iesus Christ.* I denie not but a Man may have much knowledge, and want Grace; but, on the other side, looke how much Grace a Man hath, so much knowledge hee must have of necessity. Though there may bee much wood that is not kindled, yet looke how much fire there is, so much fuell there must needes bee. Knowledge is the Oyle, as it were, wherein the flame of the Spirit lives, and you cannot have more Grace than you have knowledge, though you may have abundance of emptie and unprofitable knowledge, without Grace. Therefore, if you would have the fruite of this Covenant, labour to grow in knowledge.



knowledge. *John* 1. 17. that place is excellent for this purpose: *The Law continued till John Baptist, The Law came by Moses, but Grace and Truth came by Iesus Christ.* Marke it, *Grace and Truth.* What is the reason there was more Grace dispersed by *Iesus Christ*, than by *Moses*? The reason is, because there was more Truth revealed to the sonnes of men by CHRIST, than there was by *Moses*: Truth was hid in *Moses* time under veyles, and shaddowes, but was manifest in the time of *Iesus Christ*. Now, because truth was more revealed by him, hence it was, that there was a greater communication of Grace, a larger effusion of the Spirit. But that place comes as nere to this purpose, that you shall finde, *2 Cor. 3.* There is an expreffion of the difference betweene the two Covenants: *Neverthelesse when their hearts shall bee turned to the Lord, the veyle shall bee taken from before their eyes.* Hee said before, *To this day, when Moses is read, there is a veyle layd over their hearts, but when their hearts shall bee turned to the Lord, the veyle shall bee taken away:* And what then? *They shall behold, as in a Glasse; the glory of God, with open face, and bee transformed and changed into the same Image, from glory to glory, as by the Spirit of the Lord.* The meaning is this; saith he, in the time of the Old Testament, there was a veyle, that covered their hearts, and their eyes, that they were not able to see the Truth cleerely, but now, saith hee, that veyle is taken away, and we see the truth with open face, even

Note.

2 Cor. 3. 16.

The veyle removed.

as you see an Image in a Glasse. But what is the benefit of this knowledge? Now the veyle is taken away, we know much more, saith hee, by seeing with open face, we are transformed into the same Image; that is, by the knowing of it, by looking upon it, by viewing those truths that are delivered in the Gospell, by seeing the wayes of G O D, and the Image of G O D, there described, and set forth unto us; by this knowledge we are transformed and changed into the same Image, from glory to glorie; that is, from one glorious degree of that Image to another; not that the very knowledge shall doe it, but it pleaseth the L O R D to accompany that knowledge by the Spirit; this is done, saith hee, as by the Spirit of the L O R D. So, the way to grow in Grace, and in strength, to receive that immediate benefit of the Covenant, is to grow in knowledge, *Iohn 17.* it is a part of *Christ's* prayer, *vers. 17. Sanctifie them with thy truth, thy word is truth.* The meaning is this; as if he should have said, *Oh Lord,* I know that the way to sanctifie them, the way to increase grace and holinesse in their hearts, is to reveale more truth to them; now, *Lord,* I beseech thee reveale thy Word to them; For thy Word is that truth, teach them to know thy Word, acquaint them with it more and more; For by that meanes they shall get grace and sanctification. So then, if you would receive the benefit of the Covenant, you must labour to grow in knowledge, labour to understand it more and more:

*Iohn 17. 17.*

more: For, this is a verie sure rule, there is not a new notion that a Man gets, there is not a beame of new truth, there not a further enlargement of knowledge and illumination, but it brings some riches of Grace with it, it comes not emptie, but it comes loaded with something, it hath some power and strength, and it gives a new vigour to the inward man: And therefore if thou wouldest abound in Grace study the Scriptures, much attend to them, much meditate in them day and night, labour still to get some new sparke of knowledge, some new light out of them, and thou shalt finde this, that grace will follow, as it is the Apostles exhortation to *Timothy*, saith hee, *Give attendance to reading, and to learning, so shalt thou save thy selfe, and shalt be able also to save others.* The meaning is, the way to get that Grace that will save a man, is to give much attendance to reading and to learning: For, beloved, whatsoever it is that begets a Man, the increase of that likewise edifies and builds him up further. First, *wee are begotten by the word of truth*: It is the revelation of the truth of GOD to a Man at the first, that *renewes him in the spirit of his minde*, it changeth his judgement, it makes him thinke of things in a cleane other fashion then hee was wont to doe: Thus hee is begotten to God, and made a new Man, a new creature: Now the increase of the same truth is it that builds us up further: For whatsoever begets, the increase of that also edifies, and hence

*Note.*

The word begets: & builds up Christians.



hence it is that *Salomon* so exceedingly magnifies wisdom and knowledge: *above all getting*, saith hee, *get that*. There are many things that are precious in the World, Pearle, Gold, and Silver, but this is beyond them all. Why doe you thinke the wiseman would magnifie wisdom so much? Because this wisdom brings grace with it, and therefore when *Christ* is said to be the *light of the world*, he is said likewise to be the *life*: the light hee was, 1 *Iohn* 4. and *Ioh.* 8. *Hee is the true light, that lightens everie man*. And what is that light? Why, it is that light that brings life together with it. Therefore, *Ephes.* 5. 14. *Arise thou that sleepest, &c. and Christ shall give thee light*. Now, you know, life is contrary to death, but the Apostle expresseth it thus: **C H R I S T** shall give the light, because when a man hath much light, hee shall withall have much life and grace: and therefore this I will commend to you, as one of the principall meanes of all other to grow strong in Grace, and in the inward man, to grow much in knowledge. Beloved, it is another thing than wee are aware of: if wee were fully perswaded that it were a thing so excellent, that it would bring so much grace with it, certainly wee would study it more than wee doe: 2 *Peter* 2. 20. saith hee, *You have escaped the filthinesse of the world, through the knowledge of Christ*: That is that, that delivers you from the bondage of sinne, that which enables you to *escape the filthinesse that is in the world*, when other men are yet tangled

Why wisdom  
is so magnified  
by *Salomon*.

1 *Iohn* 4.  
*Iohn* 8.

*Ephes.* 5. 14.

*Note.*

2 *Peter* 2. 20.

tangled with it, it is because you know that that other men are ignorant of, it is through the knowledge of *Christ*, if you have escaped, and, *2 Peter 1.2. Grace be multiplyed through the knowledge of God, and of his sonne Iesus Christ.* Grace be multiplyed through that knowledge, as if he should say, multiply you that knowledge, and this is the meanes whereby Grace shall be multiplyed to you.

That you may see the ground of all this, there is no grace that any man hath, but it passeth in through the Vnderstanding: For example, What is the reason that any man loves *GOD* more than another, but because *God* is presented to his understanding in another manner than hee is to another? Hee knowes *God* better than others, and so for other Graces: Why is one man patient, when another is not, but because his understanding is enlightned to judge otherwise of the evill hee suffers, than another doth? Hee reckons them not so great and intolerable evils, hee sees another hand of providence, hee sees another end in it. And so, What is the reason one is temperate, and sober, and meeke, when another is not, but because hee hath another judgement of pleasures and delights? Hee lookes upon them, as on things that are enemies to his Soule, hee sees vanitie and emptynesse in them, that another doth not: I say, all the Grace that a Man hath, it passeth through the Vnderstanding: And therefore, if a Man would be strong in Grace, let him labour to get much

2 Peter 1,2.

All our grace comes in through the understanding, as, Love.

Patience,

Temperance,

Whence the  
difference in  
the stature of  
Christians is.

much light, to get much truth, much knowledge in his minde: For certainly all the difference betweene Christians, the difference of stature betweene men in Christianitie; the difference of degrees, (as one Man hath a higher degree of Faith, and another a lower degree) it followes from hence, that one is more enlightned, hee hath more knowledge, hee hath more truth revealed to him, which truth carries Grace with it. What is the reason that *Paul* exceeded other men in Grace? Because there was more truth revealed to him than to other men: but still remember that I deny not, but that there may bee much knowledge without Grace; but it is a sure rule, there cannot bee much Grace without knowledge: The reason why any Man is strong in Grace, and able to doe that which another is not able to doe, that hee is able to goe through those troubles, and those crosses that another shrinks at; hee is able to overcome those lusts that another is not able to grapple with, it is still the strength of his knowledge, that hee hath more understanding of things, that hee is better and more enlightned. In *Iohn 16.* when the Apostles were come into the World, and **CHRIST** tels them what entertainment they should have, they begin to bee exceeding fearefull, alas, what shall wee doe in the world, when we have such things to doe? Wee have men to wrestle with, that shall thinke they shall doe

*Iohn 16.*

God



God service when they put us in prison, saith he, feare not, I will send my Spirit along with you, and he shall helpe you to worke, hee shall convince the world of sinne, of righteousness, and of judgement. As if he should have said, it is true when you come into the world, you shall finde mens opinions exceeding false, you shall finde Satan building up *strong holds* in their deceipts, and errours, and their evill imaginations that they have of things; and, saith he, if you should goe alone without my Spirit, truely you might besiege the City; you might use your spirituall Armour, but you should doe no good; but I will send my Spirit, that shall convince; (the word in the Originall signifies the refuting of an opinion that men had before drunke in, and were possessed of) the end of the Spirit is to sanctifie men, now what is that way that the Spirit useth to sanctifie men? It is to weare out those old opinions, to confute them, to let men know they were exceedingly deceived. Alas, they did not know that they were so exceedingly sinfull as they bee, but when the Spirit comes, he shewes them what natures they have and what lives they have lived, they know they are other creatures than they imagined themselves to bee: for the *Holy Ghost* retutes that opinion, and convinceth them of sinne, and of judgement: That is, the Spirit shall shew men the beauty and the glory of sanctification, of spirituall priviledges, and shall make men in love with it: (so judgement is to bee taken) as you

The course  
that the Spi-  
rit takes to  
sanctifie us,

hath it taken in that place, where it is said of *Christ*, *hee shall not breake the brused Reede, nor quench the smoking Flax, till hee bring forth judgement to victory*: for it shall not ceate till hee have brought forth Judgement to victory: where, by *Judgement*, is meant holinesse, and the beginning of grace or sanctification, the first part that doth begin to smoke, hee cals Judgement: saith he, the *L O R D* will not put it out, but shall blow that sparke, hee shall put new fuel to that sparke till it overcome, till hee hath brought forth this beginning of judgement, or integrity, or sanctification, to victory: that is to get the victory over sinfull lusts: now this is done by convincing, by dealing with the understanding, it is the worke of the *Holy Ghost*, with the mindes of men. Now, beloved, the use you may make of it is this; If this bee the way by which the *Holy Ghost* sanctifies, and infuseth, and communicates to the hearts of men the graces of his *New Covenant*, if it bee by the altering of the opinions of mens understanding, the way then that thou must take to grow excellent, to grow strong in grace, is to grow much in knowledge, to study the Scriptures much; and therefore let not this exhortation be in vaine to you, make this use of it, still to *meditate in the Law of God day and night*; still to do somewhat therein, to be rading therein, to be busied in speaking, or in reading, or in thinking on it.

Beloved, if you doe but take any piece of  
this

this Word, and stay upon it as the Bee doth upon the Flower, and will not off till you have got somewhat out of it ; if you bee still digging in this Mine, ( here is enough, it is a large, it is a deepe Mine ) this would make you rich in knowledge, and if you be rich in knowledge, it will make you rich in grace likewise: it is the expression that is used, *1 Cor. 1.* Therefore bee assured of this, we have many businessses to doe in this world, and every man bestowes himselfe on some thing, he spends his time, and placeth his intentions some where : now there is nothing in the world that you can bestow it so profitably on, as to get new light daily ; get new truths : if a man gather knowledge of other things, they are but trifles ; and yet that is a thousand times beyond the gathering of wealth, but yet that is nothing to the other knowledge, it is beggarly, and impotent, and poore, as the Apostle saith : for the things themselves are poore. Is there any thing in the world can helpe a man to happinesse to any purpose ? if the things cannot doe it, the knowledge cannot : for the knowledge cannot bee better than the thing. I say, the best naturall thing you can doe, is to gather wisdom that will serve but for this present life, but to get that wisdom that will build you up in grace, that will make you strong in *Christ*, that is farre more to be chosen ; remember that which *Salomon* saith, that it is above *Pearles*, and that is not enough to expresse it ; but, ( saith he ) goe through all

*Simile.*

*1 Cor. 1. 5.*

Morall know-  
ledge better  
than wealth.



The benefit of  
saving know-  
ledge.

Heb. 8.

Note.

the precious things in the world, it goes beyond them; Why? because it exceedingly increaseth grace: And what is the profit of it? It makes *God* to set an high esteeme of you, it makes the mighty *God*, who is able onely to doe thee good, to delight in thee, it makes him ready to doe thee much good; which I gather out of that *Heb. 8.* saith the *Lord* there, *when I tooke your Fathers by the hand, and led them out of Egypt, saith hee, they brake my Covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord; marke it; but I will make another kinde of Covenant with you.* Now, by the rule of contraries, these men had little knowledge, and by that meanes they had no strength, and therefore they broke the Covenant of the *Lord*, and therefore the *Lord* regarded them not, but cast them away; as you do refuse things: on the other side now, there is much knowledge, that brings men much grace, that makes men keepe the Covenant of *God* in greater measure; if hee regarded not them that brake the Covenant, certainly now he will regard them that keepe the *Covenant*, those that are his peculiar people, the men of his delight, the men whom he loves, upon whom hee meanes to bestow all his favours, that are Favourites to the Court of Heaven; this you shall have, if you excell in grace, there are many other benefits, but still, I say, remember this, if thou wouldest have much grace; reade the Scriptures exceeding much, make it thy chiefest study from day to day,  
enquire

enquire into them, if thou canst live under a good Minister, that is lively, and powerfull, and enlightning, set a higher price upon him, than thou hast done; if thou hast an estate spare nothing for thy soules good: for if wisdom be better than Gold, and Silver, why should not you part with them for it? and so by conference be doing something. Wee see, *Psal. 1.* what they are that are pronounced *bles- sed*, that *meditate in the Law of God day and night*, it is upon this ground, when a man meditates, that is, when he delights in it, ( he will not meditate in it else ) grace will follow: for there is no man blessed, unlesse he hath grace, and the proposition should not be sure, except a man do settle himself to meditate day & night. Now this brings ability to keepe the Law; and therefore, *Ios. 1. 8.* you shall find it so expressed; saith the Lord to *Iosuah*, *Let not the Law depart out of thy mouth, but meditate in it day and night, that thou maiest observe & doe it, that so thou maiest make thy wayes to prosper, then thou shalt have good successe.* Marke, if a man be still taken up in doing something, in the things that belong to the Kingdome of *God*, that he make that the element that hee lives in, as it were, that hee make it his chiefe and principall study, that hee busie himselfe about it from time to time, as much as possibly he can get leasure, that hee preferre it before all things else; doe it both day and night; by this hee shall be more able to keepe the Law, hee shall be more able to

*Psal. 1.*

*Ios. 1. 8.*

Meditation  
of the Law, a  
helpe to keep  
it.

observe it, and when it is observed, it makes way for prosperity, then *God* will blesse thee, and give thee good successe. So much shall serve for this.

The next thing to be considered, which wee propounded, is, When the Covenant is dissolved.

When the Covenant is broken.

You must know, that the Covenant is then dissolved, when that is dissolved that did make the *Covenant*. Looke what it is that puts a man into the *Covenant* of grace at the first, when that is taken away, then the *Covenant* is disannulled betweene *God* and us, but till then the *Covenant* remaines sure. Now, what is it that makes the *Covenant*? Marke it, This is that that makes the *Covenant*, when *Iesus Christ* offers himselfe to vs, and makes knowne his consent, hee is the promised *seed*, in whom all the Nations of the Earth shall be blessed; when we again come and take the promised seede, and give our consent to make him our *Lord*, and wee subject our selves to him to be his; when we say to the promised seede, hee shall bee my *God* and my Governour, and I will bee among his people, and be subject to him, I say, when the heart gives a full consent to this, when the heart hath thus tooke the promised seed, and received him, and lookes for all from him, now the *Covenant* and contract is made betweene them. Now, beloved, as long as this union continues betweene *CHRIST* and us, the *Covenant* is not disannulled, so that, in a word, the *Covenant*

What makes the *Covenant*.

nant



nant is never nullified, untill thou hast chosen to thy selfe another husband, till thou hast taken to thy selfe another *Lord*. In a marriage, there may be many failings of a Wife towards her Husband, many neglects, many disobediences; many fits of passion, many offences shee may give him, but till she commit adultery, the bond continues sure, there is no divorce between them; the Covenant of *God* still remains betweene them, there is no dissolution of the Covenant: Beloved, so it is heere, thou committest many transgressions, thou offendest *God* oft, thou failest much in the service thou owest him, but till thou shalt commit spirituall adultery, till thou leave him, as it were, and shalt select and choose to thy selfe another Master, another *Lord*, another Husband, the Covenant remains sure betweene you, there is no dissolution of the Covenant. Beloved, this is a point exceeding full of comfort: thou must not thinke, that upon every sinne the Covenant is overthrowne betweene *God* and thee: no, the Covenant remains sure, the bond is not untyed as yet, though thou faile exceeding much, though thou fall into many actuall rebellions against him, yet the Covenant is not dissolved.

But you will say to me, If this be to break the Covenant, to chuse another Husband, I hope there is none of us that are breakers of the Covenant then, wee have not chosen another *God*, we are willing enough to serve the *Lord*.

K k 4

Beloved,

*Note.**Simile.*

Beloved, the rule is exceeding true, if thou deceive not thy selfe in applying it: therefore I say this to thee, take heed thou deceive not thy selfe: it is certaine, the Covenant remaines sure not withstanding all infirmities, as long as thy heart cleaves to thine Husband, as long as thou takest not another in his stead: therefore if thou wilt not be deceived (as many do deceive themselves) I will give thee but these two rules to know it by.

The first is an immediate examination of thine owne heart, looke narrowly to this, if there be any creature in the World, any pleasure, any profit, any matter of credit or honour, or whatsoever the thing be, any delight, or sport, or inclination, or lust, wherewith thy heart commits adultery, certainly thou hast chosen another Husband, whatsoever thou pretendest: If there bee any sinne that thou art in league with, wherewith thou art entred into Covenant, as I may so say, thou hast broken the Covenant with thy first Husband, as you shall see an expression thereof, *Iam. 4. Yee adulterers and adulteresses, if you love the world, you love not God.* That is, if there be any thing in the world that you love in that manner, it is enmity to God, the Covenant is broken.

You will say, How shall we know this?

You shall know it by this, if it divert, and put out, and quench the love to your Husband, You shall see a Wife oftentimes, her heart is stolne from her Husband, she comes to  
be

Two rules to know whether we have broken the Covenant.

1 Rule.  
When the heart is adulterously knit to any thing below.

Iam. 4.

Quest.

Ans.

How to know our love of the creature is full.

be in his presence from day to day, to doe all service to him, she performes, it may be, every duty as carefully, and as diligently as the best Wife in the world, and yet for al this her heart is gone, here is but a shadow of performance, she doth them, but not with love and delight, she doth them not with cheerefulnesse and willingnesse, she would be free: if thou finde this thy case that thou art so in love, that thy heart is stolne away with any thing in the World, with matter of estate, pleasures, or whatsoever it is, any outward excellency that thy heart is set upon, any haunt, any delight, any lust that hath dominion in thy soule, that thou hast made a league withit, so that thou comest indeed to performe holy duties from day to day, but they have no tast, no relish, thou dost them not with livelynesse and quickenes, thou dost them as one that doth them out of necessity, and by force; but thou delightest not in thy Husband, thou comest before him, but thou delightest not in his company; thou delightest not in his presence, but the love of other things, worldly mindednesse, quencheeth that delight, it is certaine thou hast committed adultery, thou hast chosen another husband.

You must know this beloved, that a godly man that is once entred into the Covenant, though hee faile exceedingly in many things yet his delight is still in the LORD, hee desires exceedingly to please him, hee had rather be in his company, hee had rather have com-

*Simile.*

*Note.*

A Christians  
delight is in  
God.



communion with him, than with any other in the World besides; hee had rather bee doing service to him than to any other; he had rather be employed in any thing that tends to him, for that if it could be, (I make that supposition) if there were such a proposition as there was in the old Law, every seventh yeere, that those that had served an Apprentiship, that were bond-slaves, they might goe free, yet wee see some so loved their Masters, that they would not goe free, but would be their servants for ever, and they were bored thorow the eare, and were their servants: for, saith the Text, they loved their Masters, and would stay with them. So it is in this case, take a man that commits adultry with any thing in the world, let him have such a Proclamation that he may goe free from *Gods* service, he would, were it not for the losse of heaven, and for going to hell, (but I suppose it were free to him) hee would goe free with all his heart, he would choose another master, and would bee free from that bondage, (for so hee accounts it;) but he that loves the *Lord*, will not goe free if hee might: for hee reckons that service the greatest freedome and delight, hee had rather live in His Family, than in any service in the world; it is not a service, but a friendship; it is a marriage, he lives as a sonne in the Family, and therefore hee is willing to continue: for, this is the ground of it, as soone as man is gotten into the Covenant once, there is such a disposition put into his heart, there is such

*Note.*

A Christian  
 would not be  
 free from  
 Gods service  
 if he might.

such a disposition grafted in him, and rooted in his inward parts, that hee longs after the *Lord*, looke what disposition and inclination there is in the Loadstone, in lingring after the Iron, if you pull it from it a thousand times, still it lookes after it, and it cannot choote, it is the disposition of the Iron : so, such a disposition there is in the servants of the *Lord*, to chuse him for their *Lord* and Husband; and it is not an empty choyce, that consists onely in affection, or in the naked resolution of the minde, but it is such a choice as hath strong affections running to gether with it, a strong inclination carrying the soule to him, so that though he be hindred many times, and often in his life, unruly lusts come, and make a separation betweene the *Lord* and him, yet hee cannot abide to bee long from him, it is the *Lord* that hee loves, he cannot for his heart choose another master, hee cannot choote another Husband, another *Lord*, another friend, but it is hee with whom hee will dwell, live, and dye : if this be thy case, know, that thy continuall failings make not a breach of the Covenant : for thou knowest that thy heart hath not chosen another Husband : for though thou be forced sometimes, through the violence of temptation, to serve another, yet thy heart cleaves to thy right Master, it cleaves to him, it inclines to him, it bends that way : this is one way to finde it, looke to thy heart immediately.

Ifi hou canst not doe it by this, if this bee too  
obscure

*Simile.*

A disposition  
in the Saints  
to long after  
the Lord.

2 Rule:  
By the effect.

Ioh. 8.

Rom. 6.  
2. Pct. 2.

obscure a rule for thee; (I will adde but this for the making of it plaine.) Looke to the effects. Thou pretendest, I have not chosen another Husband, I have chosen the *Lord* for my *God*, and him will I serve, it is well, it is a good profession, but take heed you be on a sure ground. Saith our Saviour, *Iohn 8.* You pretend that you are the children of *Abraham*, that you have him for your Father, and not the *Devill*: but I say unto you, *he that committeth sinne, is the servant of sinne*: and so likewise, *Know you not, that to whomsoever you obey, his servants you are, to whom you obey?* *Rom. 6.* And againe, *2 Pet. 2.* *Of whomsoever a man is overcome, to that hee is in bondage.* Looke to it now, art thou overcome with sinne? dost thou obey sinne, when it comes with a command upon thee? dost thou commit sinne? Certainly thou hast chosen another Husband, thou dost deceive thy selfe.

Quest.

Alas, you will say, is it every committing of sinne that breaketh the *Covenant*.

Ans.

A constant course in sin, a signe of choosing another husband then God.

No, beloved, that is not the meaning of it, but take heede of this, when a sinne is drawne out as a thread in the course of thy life, now in truth thou obeyest it, now thou art overcome of it, now it hath dominion whensoever it commands thee; when there is, I say, a tract of sinne, when a man is still given to such a way, to such an infirmity, (I cannot properly call it an infirmity) that you may say it is such a mans trade, he walkes in it, now a man obeyes sinne, he



he is overcome of it, it hath gotten the victory over him, as we use to say of men, such a one, he is a worldly-minded man, go to him when you will, you shall finde him so disposed, you shall finde him in all his carriage to shew himselfe to be such a man, this sinne it runnes as a thred through his whole life, still he mindes earthly things, hee is taken up about them, hee disrelishesth the Word, he doth not minde it, he doth not delight to reade it, or to heare it, hee doth not love the company of the Saints, and the like; and so for any other sinne.

If this will not serve the turne, thou mayest judge it by one sin, but that is somewhat more difficult: I will give you three Examples, you shall see *Adam*, and *Balaam*, and *Saul*, you shall see every one of them in one sinne breake the Covenant, and if you can finde yours the same case, you shall know whether you have broken it by one miscarriage. Take *Saul* first, hee was commanded to goe and kill the *Amalekites*, and *God* would have him destroy them utterly; *Saul* goes about his Commandement, hee seemes to keepe it exceeding well, and where he failed in it, hee seemed to have a faire excuse; saith he, I did but save the King, the whole body of the people was destroyed: again, he saved but a few of the fattest of the cattle, & for what purpose? not for his owne profit, to make him rich, but to offer Sacrifice to the *Lord*, and he hoped there was no fayling in this. Well, saith *Samuel*, *Thou hast cast away the Lord*, thou hast chosen another  
*God*

Instances of  
 breaking the  
 Covenant by  
 one sinne.

*Saul.*

*God. Samuel* charged him with no lesse ; for, saith he, *thy sinne is as witchcraft*, it is as *Idolatri*, that is, thou hast cast *God* quite away, thou hast chosen to thy selfe another *L O R D*, another Husband to obey. How shall this bee made good? Thus: When a man receives a Commandement from *God*, (marke it) when a man knowes it is the *Lords* wil, that I should walke thus and thus before him, that I should abstaine from such and such sinnes, I cannot deny but this is his Commandement; well, when a man comes to the keeping of it, & his heart finds out excuses, and saith in such and such a case, I hope I may be somewhat excused from astrict performance of it; I say, when the heart at any time deliberates, and yet that word is not sufficient to expresse it, but when the heart workes according to it owne proper inclination, and then disobeyes the *Lord* in any Commandement, certainly then it casts *God* away. Beloved, it is not such disobedience, as when a man is transported with a strong affection, a strong temptation, when he is not himselfe for a time, for then if his sinne be discovered, hee easily returns, and will bee the same man he was, but I say, when a man deliberately commits sin, when a man considers himselfe well, and hee is not transported with the strength of a temptation, but his heart works at liberty, so that hee acts himselfe, in this case hee doth as *Saul* did, hee casts *God* away, and *God* sent him word that he had cast him away.

When a man  
is said to cast  
away *God*.

The like was the case of *Balaam*, hee carried it exceeding fairely, *I will not give you gold, I will give you silver, I will give you gold, I will give you silver, I will give you gold, I will give you silver:* I cannot do that which God hath not said to me; yet *Balaam* desired much to doe it, hee thought hee would make triall, hee would goe as farre as he could; God saw it, and found it out, and you see what judgement was given upon him, and this he presently discovered, hee gave advice to *Balaac*, to put a stumbling blocke before the children of *Israell*: that is, by offering with the *Maabites*, and committing fornication with their women, and so, saith hee, I shall bee able to curse them when they have committed sinne once, then I may curse them to purpose. I say, there was the naturall, the proper inclination of *Balaams* heart it was not a thing that hee was drawne to, but when his heart was left to it selfe, to goe which way it would, that way it went: it is not so of with a man that is in the Covenant: for grace still prevailes, and hath power over him, it is that which hath dominion and possession, it is that which is the *Lord* of the House, and whensoever he is left simply to himself, that his heart workes which way it would, certainly then he pleaseth God, hee cannot sin, he doth not sin against him. I cannot stay to presse it further, but rather come to make some use of it; but this remember, so long as a man doth not choose another Husband, so long the Covenant is not broken, though the failings be exceeding many.

The Use we are to make of it is this, If there

bee

*Balaam.*

*Use.*

To comfort our selves in applying the promises of the Covenant



be this comfort, that though a man doe commit in any finnes, yet, so long as he hath the *Lord* for his husband, as long as he is not willing to chuse another master, still the *Covenant* is sure; Then *comfort your selves with these words*, and make use of the *Covenant*, and apply the promises of the *Covenant*, say this with thy selfe, it is very true, I am sinfull, I provoke *God* from day to day, yet for all this, I am not out of the *Covenant*, and therefore the promises of the *Covenant* belong to me, therefore, notwithstanding my finnes, I will goe boldly to the *Throne of Grace*, and I will lay claime to the promises, and to all the parts of the *Covenant*, for they belong to me. This use you should make of it, when you finde the *Covenant* is not broken.

Promises  
threefold.

I.  
Of iustificati-  
ons

Heb. 10.

Now the promises of the *Covenant* are of 3. sorts, the promises of justification, the promises of sanctification, and the promises of blessings of all sorts, that belong to this life, and to the life to come. This threefold use then thou shouldst make of it, first, put the case there lyes upon thy heart the conscience of any sinne that thou hast committed, that troubles thee, thou art afraid that this sinne should *make a separation betweene God and thee*, thou hast yet no assurance of the forgiveness of it, but the conscience of the sinne lyes upon thee, as that expression you have *Heb. 10.* what wilt thou doe in such a case? Goe to the *Lord*, and say to him, *Lord*, notwithstanding this, I know I am in *Covenant* with thee, and *Lord*, this is one part of thy *Covenant*, that thou

thou wilt remember our sinnes no more, but when they are sought, they shall not be found. My beloved, as you have heard before, they are the verie words of the Covenant. I say, if thou come to the Lord thus, and bring Christ in thine armes, (for that is the nature of Faith, faith first seizeth upon the dead bodie, as the Vultures and as the Eagles doe first seize upon the bodie; So Faith first seizeth upon Christ) I say, if thou canst goe to him, and say, Lord I have thy Sonne, he hath offered himselfe to mee, he is freely offered, and I have taken him, and all thy promises in him are *Yea and Amen*, and this is one of thy promises, that thou wilt forgive mee: If one pleade the Covenant hard with God, and tell him it is a part of his Covenant, and he must be just, he cannot be a *Covenant-breaker*; doest thou thinke that God will breake his Covenant with thee, or any Man? He cannot denie thee, he will put away thy sins: strengthen thy selfe with this: for this Covenant is continual, the Mediator of this Covenant is **I E S U S C H R I S T**, who is such an *high Priest*, that is able perfectly to save those that come unto him, when a Man hath committed the greatest sinne, and sees but the bloud of *Buls and Goates*, hee might thinke thus with himselfe, alas, what can this poore and beggerly Ceremonie doe, to deliver mee from the conscience of my sinne? Well, saith the Apostle, wee have another kinde of sacrifice, and another kinde of Priest, *Hebr. 7.* *wee have such an high Priest, as is able perfectly to save those that come to him: And why? For,* saith hee,

Faith seizeth  
on Christ cru-  
cified.

Hebr. 7:

he, *hee is gone, not into the Tabernacle, as the other Priests, but hee is entred into the very Heavens.* Besides, saith hee, *he goes not once a yeare, as they did, but hee lives for ever to make intercession for us, he is not gone with the bloud of Bulls and Goates, but with his owne bloud, he is a high Priest, holy, harmelesse, undefiled, separated from sinners, higher than the heavens, and therefore doubt not but he is able perfectly to save those that come unto him.*

Beloved, consider this, it is the verie use that the Apostle makes, *Hebr. 10. 22.* saith he, seeing these things are so, *since wee have such an High Priest as wee have described, since it is the very Sacrifice of his bloud it selfe, Let us draw neere in full assurance of Faith;* that is, if the conscience of any sinne lye upon us, let us not goe to GOD with a quarter winde, or with a halfe winde, but with a full assurance of Faith, let us make no question, but *trust perfectly to the grace that is revealed.* You must thinke so of *Iesus Christ*, hee would have you thinke so, and conceive of him that hee is now in heaven, that *hee is able perfectly to save you,* that there is nothing you have committed, that can doe you hurt; hee i- like a friend in the Court; if a Man were sure that hee had one that were never from the King, that hath his care continually, that is alway in his presence, that is such a Favourite, of such power with him, that certainly hee can deny him nothing, a Man would bee secure: put the case there were some whispering fellows that would bee ready to informe against him; yet, saith he,  
I have

Hebr. 10. 22.

Draw neere  
with full assurance.

Simile.



I have one there that will be ready to take care for mee. My beloved, this is thy very case, *Christ Iesus* is gone to Heaven, it is a thousand times better for thee that he should be there, than that hee should be here in this world still, there he is thy Attorney, as it were, he takes care for thee, hee sees all the accusations that are brought against thee, and he is ready to answer for thee, saith the Text, hee makes intercession, if there come any thing that tends to make a breach between *God* and thee, he is the Mediator for thee, he dwels there for that end, if there bee any offence, any breach comes, that hee may make it up betweene *God* and thee; consider this, and when thou hast committed a sin, goe to this high Priest, that is able to save thee perfectly, and remember that it is a part of his Covenant, and so labour to grow up in full assurance of Faith, that no conscience of sin may lye upon thee, to make a separation betweene *God* and thee: For, beloved, you ought to *trust perfectly to the grace that is revealed through him.*

And as I say of the guilt of sinne, so in the second place you are to make use of the *Covenant*, against the power of sinne, as put the case there bee some strong lust, some violent temptation, that thou art not able to outwrestle, it is too strong for thee, thou wouldest faine be rid of it, but thou art not able, why what shalt thou do in this case? Remember that it is a part of the *Lords Covenant*, that he will *deliver thee from all thine enemies, that thou mayst serve him in righteousness* and

It is better for us that *Christ* is in Heaven, than if he were ou Earth

2. Of sanctification,

Sanctification  
a part of Gods  
Covenant,

The way to  
overcome  
lusts.

and holinesse all the daies of thy life. It is a part of his Covenant to remember it, he hath sworne to remember it, he hath said he will *write his Law in thy heart*, & that can never bee, without he obliterate all old writing, hee hath said hee will give thee the *holy Ghost*, hee hath promised to give thee a *new heart*, and a *new spirit*, now consider this, it is a part of his Covenant, goe to the *Lord*, and beseech him to make good his Covenant, this is the way for thee to overcome it; If thou goe about it any other way, thou shalt never bee able to out-wrestle it. For a Man to thinke this with himselfe, I have received grace, I hope I have some strength, therefore I will be bold to adventure on such a temptation; or, at least, I hope by my promises, by my vowes, and prayers; and reading one way or other, to master and overcome it; this is not the way, thou must goe to *God*, and make use of this Covenant, and beseech him to give thee strength: For, marke it, *God* would not take this upon him, to give us new hearts, and new spirits to sanctifie us, to make us new creatures, to crucifie the flesh, to weaken the dominion of sinne, hee would not take this upon him, and make a promise, if wee were able to doe it: But hee knowes it is in his owne power, and hee must doe it for us; and therefore in such a case wee must goe to him, and beseech him to doe it: For know this, when a Man is in *Christ* once, when hee is in the Covenant, hee lives by a principle without himselfe, and not by one within himselfe, as *Paul* saith, *I live by Iesus Christ*.



*Christ*, that is, he is without me, and it is hee still that gives me strength, therefore goe to him.

If you aske the reason, Why will the LORD have it so? Why may not a Man have a sufficient habituall strength in himselfe, by which hee may bee able to out-wrestle lusts, and to overcome temptations? The reason is, because no flesh shall rejoyce in it selfe; and therefore CHRIST is made *sanctification*, that is, you derive it from him, from day to day, from time to time, that you might not rejoyce in your selves, but in him: Therefore let no Man goe about such a businessse in his owne strength: for a Man to thinke, *beloved*, by vertue of that habituall Grace hee hath received, to bee able to overcome sinne, and to worke righteousnesse, it is all one as if a Man should say thus with himselfe, I see my house is full of light, now I will shut up my Doores and Windows, I hope to have light enough; when hee hath done so, you know, the light perisheth presently, because the Sun is shut out, that which gives light: I say, so it is when a man thinks, now I am somebody, I have now gotten some strength, now, I hope, I may walke with some confidence more than before; This is to shut up the windowes, as it were. No, thou must have continuall dependance upon CHRIST, otherwise, if thou goe to overcome any sinne, and thinke to doe it with thy owne strength, it shall bee too strong for thee: for you wrestle with spirituall things, and without a strength from one without thee, they will bee too strong for thee:

Why the Lord will have our strength out of our selves.

*Simile.*



goe to the *Lord*, and say, *Lord*, I confesse I am able to doe nothing of my selfe, but I bring my heart to thee, as an empty Caske, beseeching thee to fill it with grace; *Lord*, I want much grace; *Iesum Christ* is full of grace, and hath filled himselfe for that purpose, that hee might communicate it to us: I say, in such a case now, if thou goe to the *Lord*, and beseech him to make good his *Covenant*, tell him thou restest upon his strength, thou goest against sinne, as *Iosua* went against the *Canaanites*, not because hee was able to overcome them: for they were *Giants* and had *Cities walled up to Heaven*, but hee went in the *Lords* strength; I say, if thou goe in this manner, be assured that the *Lord* will not fayle thee, hee will give thee abilitie to overcome.

The third case is, when any outward trouble lyes upon a Man, let him goe and remember it is a part of *Gods Covenant* to blesse him: To blesse him with what? With all kinde of blessings, and to bee a Buckler to him; there is no evill in the world, but *God* hath promised to bee a Buckler to shield him, and to defend him from it: Put the case thou lye under any pressure, any calamitie, any crosse, any disease, any affliction of minde, or of body, or estate, or of name, why goe to *God* now, and tell him it is a part of his *Covenant* to deliver thee, and labour to finde out if thou canst, beside the generall *Covenant*, some particular. The *L O R D* hath said, if thou bee in trouble, *call upon mee and I will deliver thee*; if thou bee in a strait, in extremitie, the *Lord* hath said,

3. The promises that concerne the things of this life.

said, *hee will worke by workes for thee*, and so you may goe to him in particulars. But when Faith hath once gotten a promise, bee sure that thou keepe thy hold, pleade, hard with the *Lord*, and tell him it is a part of the Covenant, and it is impossible that hee should deny thee; doe as the Woman of *Canaan*, when thou art on a sure ground, take no denyall, though the *Lord* may deferre long, yet hee will doe it, he cannot chuse; for it is a part of his Covenant. Beloved, therefore in this case, doe, as you see two Metaphors used in Scripture, they are excellent for this purpose, *Esay 66. 11.* there is a Commandement of the *Lord* for the Children of *Israal*, that they should *sucke and bee satisfied with the breasts of consolation, &c.* The words are obscure, as they are reade to you, but the Originall makes them exceeding cleare; there are two Metaphors used, one is to milke consolation out of the promises, the meaning is this, that the promises are full of comfort, as a Dugge is full of milke; now, if thou bee ready to faint, goe and milke out consolation out of the promises, that will relieve thee, that will stay thy heart; goe, saith hee, and sucke, draw out consolation from the Dugges, from the promises, (for that is the meaning) which hee calls the breasts of consolation, (for he repeats the promise presently after) thus sayth the *LORD*; *behold, I will extend peace over her like a Flood, &c.* The other Metaphor is to extort, to oppresse the promises, that as a rich Man oppresseth a poore Man, and gets out of him all

*Esay 66. 11.*

*Simile.*

We should oppresse the promises.



that hee is worth, hee leaves him worth nothing, hee plays the extortioner with him; after that manner deale thou with the promises, for they are rich, there is a price in them, bee thou as an extortioner to them, take out whatsoever thou needest, or wring it out of the promises, as it were. Now when a Man is poore and needy, let him goe to the rich promises, and bee as an oppressor to them, that is, consider the promises to the utmost, see the utmost riches that is contained in them, and they will make thee rich. Again, draw out the utmost of that milke that is in them, and it will exceedingly revive and comfort thee: for example, (that I may a little open it to you) *Jacob* when *Esau* met him, and his heart began to faint, (for, saith the Text, *hee feared exceedingly*) his heart began to faile him now, and what did hee? Hee did goe and sucke consolation out of the promises: for thus hee reasons with the *Lord*; *Lord thou hast said thou wilt doe mee good*; now hee stayes himselfe up with this, and hee got so much strength with this milke, that hee was able to wrestle with the *L O R D* all night, and would not let him goe without a blessing, this promise sustained him, from whence hee sucked consolation and strength, *for thou hast said thou wilt doe me good*, therefore I am resolved, I am sure I am upon good ground, *I will not let thee goe without a blessing*. And so *Abraham*, when hee was to offer his onely sonne, what should hee doe now? Here he was desolate, poore, and needy, certainly his heart could not but bee readie

Instances of  
applying the  
promises.



to faile, & what should sustaine him in this case? There was a promise, you see, *Hebr. 11.* hee was sure *God* had made a promise, and had said unto him, this is *Isaac*, and this *Isaac* I will multiply, and with him I will establish my *Covenant*, and *his seede shall bee as the Stars of Heaven*, saith *Abraham*, *G O D* promised it, and though I should kill him, *God* can put a new life into him; hee went, you know how farre from his house where hee dwelt; surely hee sustained himselfe by the promise, hee rested upon this promise, hee drew consolation from it, and hee drew it to the full, there was much milke in that promise, and that sustayned and comforted him. I might give you many instances. So *David*, when hee comforted himselfe at *Ziglag*, what was it that hee comforted himselfe in? Surely *David* remembred this, the *L O R D* hath anoynted mee King over *Israel*, hee hath said that I shall bee King, and shall sit in the Throne of *Saul*; it is true, I have lost all that I have, and the Souldiers that should bee my strength, are now at this instant readie to stone mee; yet hee remembred this promise, and comforted himselfe in the *L O R D*, that is, in the promise that the *Lord* had made to him, whereof this was the maine that hee had to comfort himselfe with.

Hebr. 11.

Beloved, learne to doe this when you are in any strait, if there bee any thing that you neede, remember this, if thou can but get a promise, if Faith can but get this footing, the *L O R D* hath made it a part of his *Covenant*, and there is his

his hand and seale to it, the Sacrament that thou receivest from time to time, is but a seale of that *Covenant*, and if hee seeme to forget it for a time, hee will remember it, hee cannot forget it long, bee assured hee will performe it, it is impossible but hee should, let not your hearts saye, if thou have a promise, hee will doe it in due season, although not in thy season, yet hee will doe it in the best manner, though not in that manner as thou imaginest.

The misery of those that are out of the Covenant.

Ephes. 2.

Beloved one thing more wee should have added, that is; to exhort men to enter into Covenant; this I should have pressed to you, the miserable condition of a Man that is without it, and the happinesse of the Man that is within it, with this wee should have concluded the point. Beloved, consider this, in what a miserable condition men are without the Covenant; it is enough that I said, *Ephes. 2. without GOD in the world, and without the Covenant, they are put together, they are Aliens and strangers from the Covenant, without the Covenant, without GOD in the world.* Is it a small thing to be without God? and without the Covenant? When thou considerest this Booke, and the many precious promises in it, that wee spake of before, and thou hast not right to one of these promises, if thou be without the Covenant, when thou art in a strait; if thou bee a stranger to God, if thou be out of the *Covenant* with him, what wilt thou doe? Whither wilt thou goe? We are subject to a thousand straits; you know what a weake creature Man is, what neede

He hath no right in Gods promises.



neede hee hath of assistance; What wilt thou doe in the time of extremitie? Thou canst not goe to *God*, thou art not in the Covenant with him, but thy case is as that of *Zedekiahs*, *Micai-ab* tells him, *thou shalt goe from chamber to chamber*; So thou shalt goe from place to place, *GOD* will not receive thee, for thou art not in Covenant with him. But is that all, that thou shalt want the comfort of *God*? No, know, if thou bee not in Covenant with *God*, hee is thine enemy: if thou come neere to him for refuge and comfort, hee will bee to thee as a devouring fire, and when thou commest to him, thou shalt bee as soft Waxe to the scorching flame, as stubble to the fire; and not onely so, but thou shalt come to everlasting burnings, such fires as shall never goe out: Such the *Lord* shall bee to thee, if thou bee not in Covenant with him. You will say, to mee, this is to come, if it may bee well for the present, I shall beare it the better. I will goe one step further therefore. If thou be out of *Covenant* with *GOD*, all the creatures are at enmitic with thee, there is not a creature in Heaven or Earth, but it hath libertie to doe thee hurt: For if thou bee out of League with *GOD*, thou art out of the protection of the Law, if any creature doe thee mischief, it shall never bee required at his hands, but there is a libertie given them, *Sathan* may hurt thee, Men may hurt thee, Beasts may hurt thee, all the insensible creatures may hurt thee, for there is no prohibition. Besides, thou hast no shield nor buckler to defend thee from them:

God is his enemy.

*Simile.*

The creatures are his enemies, and have power to hurt him.



them : for thou art not in Covenant with *God*, hee is not Buckler to thee : all this is the case of every man that is out of the *Covenant*; and this is not a small thing, to be out of the pales of *Gods* protection, to have everie creature ready to doe a man a shrewd turne, and he to have no immunity, nothing to deliver him ; it is not so with the Saints, all the creatures are at peace with them.

The creatures  
at peace with  
Saints.

To draw this a little neerer, if there be any thing in the bodie, or out of the bodie that troubles you, if there be imaginations in the minde, that are to the Soule, as the Gout is to the bodie, if thou bee in *Covenant* with *God*, all these are at peace with thee : For all these are at *Gods* command, it is a part of his *Covenant* ; when thou art in *Covenant* and league with him, thou art in league with them, and therefore they shall never doe thee hurt. Bee assured of that, when thou art within the *Covenant*, there is no creature in Heaven or Earth can doe thee hurt : For thou art at peace with it, it is not an enemy, and that which is not an enemy, it never doth hurt ; but if thou bee not in *Covenant* with *God*, now these have a power to hurt thee, there is no prohibition upon them, there is no restraint, but they may doe thee hurt, they are enemies to thee, both those things, and whatsoever else is in Heaven or Earth ; Sathan, and every creature hath power to doe thee hurt : When thou walkest in the way, when thou sittest in thy house, wheresoever thou art, thou walkest in the midst of a thousand dangers, because thou art not in  
Cove.

Covenant with *God*, therefore thou art exposed to the enmitie of all the creatures.

But this objection will be made, Yea, but many of those that are within the Covenant, receive hurt from the creatures, and many of those that are out of the Covenant, live peaceable and quiet lives.

I will answer it in a word; It is very true they may be exercised, though all the host of Heaven and Earth bee at peace with them, and there is not any creature can doe them the least hurt; No, they neyther will nor can goe about it, to lift up their hand against them, yet they may be exercised with many afflictions, but there is a very great difference betweene these two, the same disease, the same grieffe, the same apprehension lyes on the heart, and wounds the spirits of the one Man, but to the other that is in Covenant, it is a rod in the hand of a Father, enabling him to keepe his Covenant the better, it is as a Medicine in the hand of a Phyfitian to heale him, to comfort him, to doe him good; that very disease to another is as a Sword in the hand of an enemy, as poyson in the hand of the destroyer to hurt him. As, for example, the Devill had power to vex *Saul*, and to vex *Iob*, here was the same instrument, the Devill had power over both, but there was a great deale of difference, you know hee had power over *Saul* as an enemy, hee had power over *Iob* as a friend; and so likewise *Iudas* had a messenger of Satan, to fill his heart, and *Paul* had a messenger of Satan.

*Object.*

*Ans<sup>w</sup>.*  
Holy men may be exercised, they cannot be hurt by the creature.

Difference in the same tryall to godly and wicked;



tan too, to sollicite him, and to trouble him, and to joyne with his lusts, to make them as prickes in his sides, but there is much difference; to the one hee had a restraint, the *Lord* said to the *Deuill*, What hast thou to doe with *Iob*? Thou shalt goe thus farre, and no further, thou shalt not hurt *Iob*. To *Paul* there was restraint too, thou shalt goe thus farre, for what purpose? As there was a restraint, so there was another end likewise, so farre it shall goe, as till it hath humbled him; *Iob* and *Paul* were humbled by it, a jot further it cannot goe: For the *Deuill*, in truth, though he bee hostile to them in affection, yet cannot hurt them in action, because *God* useth them onely to doe them good, and to humble them; *Iob* was the better, and *Paul* was an exceeding gayner by it, but *Saul* and *Iudas* were great losers; so there is a great difference betweene these two. The shepheard sets his dog upon the sheepe to bring them in, another Man sets his mastiffe on another creature to worry it, and to destroy it; the *Lord* sets the creature upon his owne servants but as the shepheard sends out his dogge, to bring them in; assoone as they are brought in, hee rates the dog, and will not suffer him to doe them the least hurt. A Man will not have his servants nor Children, nor his friends hurt, but hee will rate the dog when hee fals upon them; So the *Lord* doth with everie creature whatsoever, when it comes to hurt them, he rebukes it, as he did the stormes and windes: on the other side, when a Man is out of **Covenant** with *God*, then

In their restraint.

In their end.

Simile.



then *God* unlooseth the collar of the creature, as it were, and sets him upon such a Man, and saith unto him, Goe and worry such a Man, wound him be an enemy to him, hurt him. This objection is so to bee answered, that those that are within the *Covenant*, they are often molested and troubled, the creatures seeme to hurt them, though they bee in League and at peace with them, and can doe them no hurt.

Secondly it is objected, that others that are out of the *Covenant*, they live at peace.

Beloved, I beseech you consider this, and it is profitable to consider, that he that belongs not to the *Covenant*, he may live in his Fathers house, he may sit at Table with the Children, he may have the same maintenance, the same cloathing, the same usage, the same libertie, the same privileges of the family as the children have, and yet for all this, this is one that belongs not to the *Covenant*, but one whom *God* intends to cast out. *Ismael*, you know, lived in the family, aswell as *Isaac*, and was aswell used as *Isaac*, till the time that *God* would have him cast out, and therefore deceive not thy selfe with outward peace, to say, *God* and the creature are at peace with me: for I have prosperitie in all that I doe. No, it may be, the time of casting out is not yet come, but in due time, when the right season shall come, then *Ismael* shalbe cast out, and every one with whom the *Covenant* indeede is not established.

*Cain* remained for a time, but he was cast out, and made a *vagabond* upon the Earth. *Saul* remained

Note.

Object.

Answe.  
Wicked men  
may have  
peace for  
a time.

Deut. 32.

ned for a time in the house, but in due season *God* cast him off: So, I say, *God* may nourish, and cherish, and defend thee, as if thou wert one of his owne Children, but hee will cast thee off in the end. Wee have a notable example for it, in his dealing with the children of *Israel*, they were such as belonged not to the Covenant, a great part of them, and yet see how he used those very men; *Deut. 32.* it is said, *Hee carried them on Eagles wings*; that is the expression; that is, the *Lord* carried them safely, as the Eagle carries her yong on the top of her wings, that no Fowle can reach them, but she is above all Fowles, and stronger than all Fowles, & flyes higher, so they were safe as on Eagles wings, nothing could reach them; After that manner I carried you out of *Egypt*, I kept you so safe: besides, I did not onely defend you, but fed you with the finest Wheat, with the purest Oyle, with the liquor of the Grape; and yet notwithstanding all this, these men were such as *God* hated, such as were not in league, as belonged not to the Covenant: Deceive not thy selfe, *God* may doe all this, and yet cast thee out; hee may feed thee with riches in abundance, and yet if thou bee not a sonne, if the Covenant bee not established with thee, thou shalt be cast out, the sonne abides for ever, but he with whom the *Covenant* is not made, though hee may continue in the family for a while, hee shall not abide long, but shall be cast forth.

FINIS.



FOVRE  
SERMONS,

WHEREIN,

Certaine Obiections against the  
point of GODS ALL-SUFFICIENCY,  
(handled in the five first sermons of  
the former Treatise) are answered.

ECCLESIASTES 9. 1, 2, 3, 4.

*I have surely set my heart to all this, to declare this, that the just, and the wise, and their workes, are in the hand of God, and no man knoweth either love, or hatred by all that is before him: for all things come alike to all, and the same condition is to the just, as to the wicked, and to the good, and to the pure and to the polluted, and to him that sacrificeth, and to him that sacrificeth not; as is the good, so is the sinner, he that sweareth, as he that feareth an oath, &c.*



WE have purposely chosen this text, that we might answer some objections, which might be made against the *All-sufficiency* of God, which wee spake of lately to you; for this might be objected:

If God be *All-sufficient*, what is the reason of this *Object.*

Aa

dis-



dispensation of things that we see in the world,  
That *there be righteous men, to whom it is according  
to the worke of the wicked,*, and *there be wicked men  
again, to whom it is according to the worke of the righ-  
teous?*

*Answ.*

Ecclef 8. 26.

Here you have this answer made, That for a time all things come alike to all, there is the same condition to the one, as to the other: The reason of which you shall see, when we come to the handling of the words. But in briefto open them to you, you shall finde, that this was the occasion of them. In the 16. verse of the former Chapter, saith the Wiseman, *I have applyed my heart unto wisdom, and to behold the businesse that is done upon the earth, in which I had no rest, either day or night; I was so intent upon them. Well, what is the conclusion? Saith he, I found this, I was not able to finde out the reason of GODS workes: I beheld the workes of God, that man cannot finde out the workes that are wrought under the Sunne, yea though a wise man thinke to know it, hec cannot finde it:* That is, when I see how GOD dispenseth things, I am not able to finde out the reason; and not I onely, but no man is able to finde it: no, saith he, though he be a wise man; no, although he search never so diligently, he cannot find out the reason of GODS wayes, the reason of his providence, of his dispensing of prosperi y to the wicked, and aduersity to the godly: yet these two Conclusions notwithstanding he found, which he expreseth in the first verse.

First, that *the just, and the wise, and their workes,*  
are

are in the hand of the Lord: That is, although I see not the reason why GOD doth it, yet this I finde, it is the Lord that disposeth all things, both to men, and all their workes; All the events that fall out, both good and evill, I finde this, that they are in the hands of GOD.

The second thing to be found is, That *all things come alike to all: There is the same condition to the good, and to the evill, to him that sacrificeth, and to him that sacrificeth not.* These be the two things, that the *Wiseman* professeth he found out, and from hence he gathereth two Confectaries.

One is, That *there is no man able to know love, or hatred, by all that is before him:* That is, by all that he seeth done to himselfe, or by all that he seeth GOD doe to other men; he is not able to judge by that, who it is that GOD loves, or who it is hee hates.

1. Confectary

A second Confectary from it, is expressed in the third verse: saith hee, *This is an evill I have seene under the Sunne, that there is one condition to all:* That is, the sonnes of men, when they have seene this carriage of things, this administration, and dispensation of good and evill thus promiscuously, to men of all sorts: Therefore saith hee, *The hearts of men are full of evill, and madnesse is in their hearts while they live:* That is, therefore they seek not GOD, but the creature; therefore they doe not depend upon him, but seeke to secondary meanes: What is the issue of it? *Therefore they goe downe to the dead:* That is, they perish for ever. So much briefly for the meaning of the words.

2. Confectary.  
Eccles. 9. 3.

Now before he comes to deliuer these two conclusions, he makes this Preamble, *I have given my heart, saith he, to all this,* or I bend my selfe with all my might to this, even to declare these two things, that all things are in the hands of *God, &c.* Whence we will gather this, (in that *Salomon* saith that he bent himselfe, with all his might, to declare both to himselfe, and to others, that all things are in the hands of *God,*) that.

*Doct.*

It is a hard thing to be perswaded of Gods All sufficiency.

*It is a very hard thing to be perswaded of Gods All-sufficiency.*

It is a very hard thing to be perswaded, that all things are in the hands of *God,* it is a hard thing to perswade our selves, it is a hard thing to perswade others, that is, I shall not deliver the point fully to you, except *God* himselfe teach you, except *God* himselfe declare it; it is so hard for a man to see all things in the hands of *God,* to know that he is able to doe all, that, except *God* teach it to a man, he is not able to know it, that is, hee is not able to know it to purpose, he is not able to know it so as to have the use of it, he is not able to know it in a practicall manner, except *God* teach it him.

The holy Ghost must perswade.

The ground of which is, because it belongs to the *holy Ghost* to perswade, it belongs to *God* to perswade, not onely to perswade this truth to the hearts of men, but also to perswade all saving truthes of what nature soever. And therefore we see when *Christ* sends out his Disciples, his Apostles, he bids them, Goe, preach the Word to the Iewes, and Gentiles: and whereas they might object in that case, how shall we be able to perswade men,

*Object.*



men, that bring a strange doctrine, and strange newes to them, a strange thing that was never heard of?

Christ answers them thus, I will send my Spirit with you, and he shall convince the world of sinne, of righteousness, and of judgment: As if hee should say, I confesse you are not able to doe it, that is a worke that only belongs to the *holy Ghost*, and he shall convince men of their miserable estate out of Christ, he shall convince them of that righteousness that they are to have by Christ, he shall also convince them of holinesse; and sanctification, under Christs Governement. Thus, saith he, the *holy Ghost* shall doe; you are not able to performe it. And so when the Lord makes the promise, that the people should serve him, and feare him: The question is, how they should be able to doe it; shall the Prophets be able to perswade them? shall the Apostles in their times be able to perswade them? No, saith hee, *They shall all be taught of God*: As if he should say, without his teaching it will be all in vaine; but if the Lord teach them once, they shall be perswaded effectually, they shall not onely know what their duty is, but they shall bee ready to performe it.

The reason of which is,

First, because God onely is the generall, and universall worker, he onely is universally wise; he onely knowes all things, & therefore he only is able to teach al things: men know but in part, and therefore they are able to teach but in part: (now he that is perswaded of a thing but in part, though

*Answer.*  
Iohn 16.

*Reason . I*  
God only wise  
and therefore  
able to per-  
swade.

he may acknowledge the thing to be good, yet his heart is not wrought to practise it; for there is something yet behind, some objections, that are not yet answered.) It is only *God* that hath an universall light, that is a general worker; and therefore hee is said to be *onely wise*: for a man is not said to be wise, except he know all things that belong to such a businesse; If there be any part or corner of it hid from him, he is not wise; that is, he is not able to proceed aright, he is subject to error: but *God* who hath abundance of light, *God*, that knowes all things, is only wise; and therefore he is onely able to perswade. Hence it is that men are able to perswade, that such graces are good, that such wayes are excellent in themselves, that it is good to take such courses; but yet to answer all the secret objections of the heart, to perswade fully, to turne all the wheelles of the soule, this is that which a man is not able to doe, to enlighten all the corners of the heart, he is not able to convince fully.

*Reason 2.*

God onely  
knowes the  
ver. all turnings  
of the heart,  
Ierm. 17. 9.

Secondly, *God* is onely able to doe it; because he onely knowes all the windings and turnings of the heart of man: It is said in *Ier. 17. 9.* that *the heart of man is exceeding deccitfull, who can know it?* That is, no man in the world can know his owne heart, much lesse can any man else know it, there are so may windings, so many turnings in it, there is such a labyrinth in the heart, such a depth in it, that no man is able to search his owne heart, to finde out the bottome of it: oh but who is able to doe it? Saith he, in the next words, it is *God* that

that *searcheth the heart and tryeth the reynes*: That is, he only knowes the severall inclinations of the will, and therefore he only is able to perswade.

You know if a man make a key to undoe such a locke, he must know all the wards of it, or else he may make a key that will not undoe it, he may endeavour, and not be able to turne the locke: So the *Lord* that onely knowes all the wards, all the secret passages, all the windings and turnings of the heart of man; he onely is able to sute it, and to fit it with such arguments, as shall be effectually to perswade. You see when he would perswade *Moses* to goe downe into *Egypt*, there was a secret objection that *Moses* had in his heart, if he went thither, that he should lose his life; *God* that knew *Moses* heart, knew where that objection lay, where it stucke with him, he was able to bring arguments to perswade him; *Goe thy way* (said the *Lord*) *for they are dead that sought thy life*.

Last of all, *God* is onely able to doe it, because hee is able to amend the heart where it is amisse: A man perhaps may be able to shew an object, and to bring it to light: but what if the eye be amisse: the man is not able to see and to discern for all that: If a mans eye be blind, if there be any west in it, he is not able to remove it: So a man may propound arguments, but to make the heart capable of those arguments, hee may propound reasons and perswasions, but to make the heart apprehensive of them, it is above the power of the Creature. And therefore it is *God* onely that *reneweth us in the spirit of our mindes*: he that hath

*Simile.*

*Reason 3.*  
God onely can  
amend the  
heart.

*Simile.*



made the eye, and so he that made the will, and the understanding, he onely can heale the breaches of them, he onely can elevate them, and put a supernaturall light into them, and make them fit to apperhend those spirituall reasons, of any kinde, that he objects & propounds to the hearts of men: So that *God* onely is able to perswade, as of all other trutthes, so of this, that all things are in his hands, that he is *All-sufficient*.

*Use.*

Why one man trusteth *God*, and not another.

We may make this use of it: we see the reason, why one man is able to see and trust to this *All-sufficiency* of *God*, and another is not. The reason is, because *Christ* hath revealed it to one man and not to another: *God* hath taught it to one man and not to another: We see it in common experience. A wise, learned, wittie, and able man, that can discourse more then many others of the vanity of outward things, of the *All-sufficiency* and fulnes that is in *God*, yet when he comes to the practise of it, he is able to doe nothing: On the other side wee shall finde in experience, that many poore Christians that are able to say little, yet when they come to practise, they are able to part with their libertie with their credit, with their goods, and with their lives, that they may cleave to *God* and keep a cleare Conscience: what is the reason of it: because they be taught of *God*, they are perswaded by him, & therefore they are able to practise it; As for the other they are taught by men, they are taught by themselves, and therefore they are not taught indeede, they are not fully convinced of it; and therefor though they know such things.

things, though they be floating in their mindes, yet they have not the use & the practise of them. Wherein you shall observe this difference, that a man may know a truth, and yet not be led into that truth; as you see *Ioh. 16. 13.* *When he shall come which is the spirit of truth, hee shall lead you into all truth: (marke it) hee shall lead you into all truth.* It is one thing to preach the truth, and another thing to be led into the truth. The *holy Ghost* shall lead you into all truth, as a man is led by the hand into a place: for we are not onely blind, but lame too; wee are not onely unable to see spirituall truthes, but when we see them, we are not able to follow the guidance of the *holy Ghost*: Therefore, saith he, the Spirit shall not onely shew you such & such things, but shall lead you into those truthes, he shall lead you into the practise of them.

Many men they know what temperance, what sobriety and patience are, who are not able to practise them: they are not led into the truth of these points: because that is proper to the *holy Ghost*, it is hee onely that leades us into them, it is he only that enableth us to see them, as to be fully convinced, so, as to resolve upon the practise of them: and therefore you shall finde the Apostle *S. Paul, Ephes. 1.* when he revealeth there those spirituall blessings, that we have in Christ, when he had declared many of those glorious priviledges, in the 18. verse he prayes, that *the eyes of there understandings might bee opened, to see the hope of their calling, and the riches of that glorious inheritance prepared for the Saints, and the exceeding great-*  
*nesse*

*Iohn 16. 13.*

Leading into  
the truth.

Knowledge  
without pra-  
ctise, whence  
it is.

*Ephes. 1. 18.*

nesse of his power towards them that beleewe. The meaning of it is this; when *Paul* had discovered all this, saith hee, this labour of mine will be but in vaine, except the *Lord* open the eyes of your understanding. So it is when we preach to you of the *All-sufficiency* of *God*, when wee discover to you those glorious priviledges, that we haue by *Christ*; except the *Lord* open mens eyes, except he send the spirit of revelation into mens hearts to discern those things, except he preach to the heart, as well as we do to the eare, it is but lost labour; saith the Apostle, if *he would open your eyes to see the hope of your Calling*, to see those great hopes that you have by reason of your calling, to see the riches of that glorious inheritance prepared for the Saints, it is not only rich, but abundant riches.

Againe, (saith he,) to see the exceeding greatnesse of his power: A man is able to see something, that *God* is able to doe this, and to doe that; but to see the exceeding greatnesse of his power, how farre it reacheth, this none is able to doe, unlesse he have the spirit of revelation, to open his eyes to see it; That, even as *Elisha* said to *Gehezi*, *There are more with us than against us*. But how came *Gehezi* to know that? *Elisha* prays the *Lord* to open his eyes, and when his eyes were opened, he saw it visibly. After this manner the *Lord* deales with his children; when such truths as these are propounded to them, that *God* is *All-sufficient*, yet all this is nothing, except *God* wil open their eyes, except he will be with them; as he was with *Iob*, all that his friends said to him would not perswade



perswade him, till *God* himfelfe spake to him out of the whirlewinde. When *God* himfelfe will say to a man as hee did to *Abraham*, *I am all-sufficient*, then he perswades him and not before.

And this, *Beloved*, is the office of the *holy Ghost*, it is he that shewes the *Father*, and the *Sonne*, to the sons of men, it is he that glorifies the *Father*, and the *Sonne*. And in this sense he is said to fill them with joy upon all occasions: for the cause why a man rejoyceth is, because he is informed of some good newes, something he is perswaded of, and when he heareth of it, there followes sudden joy: So when the *Apostles* were in distresse, in prison, when they were in danger, the *holy Ghost* brought good newes to them, he revealed to them such and such things; upon this revelation, upon this good newes that was brought to them, it is oft said they were filled with joy: which is therefore called the *joy of the holy Ghost*, which the *holy Ghost* workes in men by perswasion, by revealing to thē the hope of their *Calling*, and the riches of their *glorious inheritance*, and the exceeding greatnesse of his power, working in those that beleewe. And therefore this you must consider, that though we preach to you, and you heare all these truthes of *Gods All-sufficieny*, yet you are able to practise nothing, till *Christ* reveale it to you. If he come to a man, when he is in a strait, and say to him, as hee did to *Paul* upon severall occasions, *Feare not Paul, I will be with thee*: I say, if he himfelfe would come thus and speake to the heart of a man; that is, if hee would reveale it by his Spirit, we should be able

Joy, the cause  
of it:  
The Authour  
of it.

to

to practise it, we should be able to stay our selves upon him, we should be able to trust him in his *All-sufficiencie*, and would venture vpon any thing; wee should be able to doe our dutie, we should be able to suffer persecution, as the Apostle speakes, *because we trust in the living God*. It is a certaine and true rule, no man is able to guide his life aright, his riches, his credit, his liberty aright, except he be able to neglect them, and no man is able to neglect them, except he have some thing that is better in stead of them, except he see these two things:

An emptinesse in them:

And a fulnesse somewhere else

But now who is able to perswade men of this? Surely he that perswaded *Salomon* that all was vanity; it is he that must perswade us, without him it cannot be done. What was the reason else that *Peter*, *Andrew*, *Iohn*, and the rest of the Apostles, were able to forsake all things, when others were not? Doubtlesse, because they were perswaded they should finde it againe in *Christ*, when others were not so perswaded? Flesh and blood did not teach them, but the *holy Ghost* revealed it to them, that though they had lost al, yet they should find all, yea, they should finde an hundred fold more. What was the reason that *Demas*, and others, when they met with persecution, and temperall preferments in the world, were not able to keepe on their course, but turned aside, when *Paul* who had the same temptations did not? The reason was, because it was not revealed to *Demas*, but it was

Outward things how to neglect them.

Why Christians hold out in all conditions.

was to *Paul*; A window was opened to him in heaven, as it were, to looke into *Gods All-sufficiency*, to see the treasures there, to see *Gods* power, and eternity and blessednes: and when he walked in a continuall fight of this, *All-sufficiency*, *Paul* cared not whither he went, nor what became of him; it was nothing then for him to passe from prison to prison, from affliction to affliction. So, as long as a man walkes in a continuall fight of *Gods All-sufficiency*, as long as he sees him that is invisible, so long he is full of comfort, so long he is able to doe any thing; but when once his fight is taken from him, when once he is left in darke-nesse, that Torches and Candles begin to appeare great lights unto him, (as you know it is in the darke night) that is a signe that a man is in darke-nesse, when the feare of men, and the favour of men, seeme great unto him: So it will be when *God* doth but leave us a little, when he doth but cloud us, when he withdrawes from us that light of his *All-sufficiency*, then we are ready to sinke, and to faile in our duty, and to turae aside, to balke the wayes of righteousnesse. And therefore if you would have the use of this *All-sufficiency*, if you would be perswaded that all things are in *Gods* hands, beseech him to teach you to depend upon him.

*Beloved*, it is certaine, that the holiest men that are, have as much love of themselves as others, they desire their safety, as well as others, they desire to have liberty, and life, as well as others: but here is all the difference, they are perswaded that

Holy men love themselves as well as others.

God



*God is All-sufficient*, to restore all these to them, when they lose them for his sake, when other men are not so perswaded: they have a new judgment of things, they have another judgment of heavenly things, and of earthly, they see another vanity in the Creatures, and another *Al-sufficiency* in *God*, than other men see, or thā they themselves ever saw before: And this is the reason they are able to doe that which other men are not able to doe. And therefore the way to have the use of all this knowledge, is to seeke to *GOD*, to beseech him to enlighten you, that he would declare this to you, that he would leade you into this truth, and when he hath taught you, you shall be able to know all this, and to know it to purpose, So much for this point.

As we told you, there are here these two Conclusions:

First, That *the just, and the wise, and their workes, are in the hands of God.*

And secondly, That *all things come alike to all:* we will take the first as it lies, and deliver to you the same point, which is this;

That all things, all men, all their wayes, all the Creatures, with the severall workes of them, are in the hands of *GOD*: for it is thus methodically set downe; The wise are in the hands of *GOD*, and their workes, and so are the wicked, and their workes, and so are all the Creatures in his hands, with all the effects that proceede from them:

This then is the point:

That *all things are in Gods hands.*

*Doct. 2.*

All things are  
in Gods hands.

Now

Now how all things are in *Gods* hands in generall, we have declared to you before: but we will now deliver it a little more distinctly, that I may adde something to that which I have formerly taught. They are all in the hands of *God*, that is, originally in the hands of the Father, and in the hands of all the persons of the Trinity, as they joyne in the Deity, as they are *God*: but yet, if you compare this place with some other, you shall see more distinctly in what manner they are in the hands of *God*: They are, I say, originally in the hands of the Father, but yet they are more immediately put into the hands of the Sonne, as he is Mediator. Therefore compare this place with *Matth. 11. 27.* *All things* (saith he are given me of my Father, and none knowes the Sonne, but the Father: And so likewise with *Iohn 3. 35.* *The Father loves the Sonne, and hath given all things into his hands:* And with that, *1 Cor. 15. 24.* you shall see there this expression; saith the Apostle, *There shall be an end, when Christ shall give up the Kingdome into the hands of the Father.* The meaning of it is this, that though all things be in the hands of *God*, yet they are all put into the hands of *Christ*, as he is Mediator: And therefore *Psal. 2.* it is said, *Aske of me, and I will give thee the Heathen for thine inheritance, and the utmost part of the earth for thy possession:* That is, he will give them into his hands to doe with them what he pleaseth: so that (to adde this to that which we have before delivered it will be a profitable point for us to consider, that though *God* be *All-sufficient*, and hath all things

All things in the hands of the Mediator  
*Matth. 11. 27.*

*Iohn 3. 35.*

*1 Cor. 15. 24.*

*Psal. 2. 8.*

in his hands, yet hee hath put all this into the hands of his Sonne.

*Quest.*

You will say, what comfort is there in that? or to what end is it usefull for us to know, that they are in the hands of the Sonne, more than that they are in the hands of the Father?

*Answ.*

God hath put all into Christs hands, that we might be more confident,

It is to this purpose; that you may be more confident in comming to *God*, to aske any thing at his hands: for therefore hath the *Lord* done it, that you might come with the more boldnes. For *Christ* hath taken our nature, our flesh; he is nearer to us, than *God* the Father, *who dwells in light inaccessible*: hee is one whome we have knowne, he dwelt among us, hee is of the same kindred, as it were, we are flesh of his flesh, and bone of his bone. Now when we shall heare, that all things are put into his hands, as he is Mediator, as hee is the Angel of the Covenant, wee may go with the more boldnesse, wee may haue the more confidence; that as we have need and use of any thing, it shall not be denied us: for we know all is in the hands of him, whom we love, whom we feare.

When one heareth that his Prince hath put all that he hath into the hands of a friend, with whom hee is well acquainted, it must needes glad his heart, and fill him with hope of obtaining any thing that is fitting for him: As it was with *Jacob*, when *Ioseph* said to him, All this I have in mine hands, &c. It was a great comfort to *Jacob*, that one whom hee knew so well, that was flesh of his flesh, had all things in his hands. Now this is the comfort we have by it,



it, That the Father hath put all things into the hands of the Sonne, into the hands of Christ, as he is Mediatour, and this he hath done for these reasons:

First, that men might glorifie the Sonne, that men might honour the Sonne, as they honour the Father, for therefore was it that hee would not keepe all in his owne hands, but gave them up into the hands of the Sonne.

Secondly, he hath done it, that he might dispense that *All-sufficiency*, that is in himselfe, in a way befeeming himselfe, with that indulgence, and that mercy that is sutable to himselfe, and sutable likewise to our frailty. And therefore *Exodus 33.3.* the Lord said, *I will not goe up with thee, for thou art a stiffnecked people, therefore I will not goe up with thee, lest I consume thee; but I will send before thee the Angel of my presence, and he shall goe up with thee:* As if he should say, I have pure eyes, I am not able to see that which I shall see in thee, but I shall be ready to consume thee; but he is more indulgent, hee is more mercifull, hee is more able to beare, because he is made the Mediator: therefore (saith he) he shall goe along with thee, even *the Angel of my presence*: Whereby you may see, that the Lord hath put all power into the hands of the Mediatour, that he might dispense it the better to the sonnes of men.

Thirdly, he hath done it, that it might be sure to us: for if the Lord had made an immediate Covenant with the sonnes of men, there had beene little hope for us: We should have broken it, as

B b

*Adam*

*Reason 1.*  
That we might honour the Sonne.

*Reason 2.*  
To dispense his All-sufficiency.

Excd. 33.3.

*Reason 3.*  
That our estate might be sure.

Christ the Mes-  
senger of the  
Covenant,  
w<sup>h</sup>y.

*Adam* did, when the Covenant was made with him; but he hath put it into the hands of a Media-  
tour, whom he hath made the Angel, or the Mes-  
senger of his Couenant, that it might be sure to  
us, that is, that the *Lord* might perform al his pro-  
mises to us, and that we might keepe likewise the  
Condition on our part: for therfore *Christ* is said  
to be the Messenger of the Couenant, to dispense  
to us that which *God* hath put into his hands; part-  
ly, because he is able to reconcile the Father to us,  
(and therefore he is the Priest, that is entred into  
the holy of holiest, that is, *into the very heavens*, to  
make intercession for us) partly also, because he is  
able to bring us in, as a Prophet to enlighten us  
in the knowledge of him, and as a King, to sub-  
due the stubbornnesse of our hearts, and enable  
us to obey him: So that the Covenant is imme-  
diately made with him, and not with us; there-  
fore, all things being put into his hands, he being  
the Messenger of the Covenant, it is made sure  
to us, that otherwise had not beene.

That no flesh  
should reioyce  
in it selfe.

Deut 8. 18.

Last of all, the Father hath done it, *that no flesh  
might reioyce in it selfe*: so saith the Apostle, he hath  
made the Sonne to us *wisedome, righteousnes, san-  
ctification, & redemption, that he that rejoyceth might  
reioyce in the Sonne*. And therefore we see *Deut.*  
8. 18. How carefull he was to teach the *Israelites*  
this, shewing them, that they were not brought  
into that good land for their owne righteoufnes,  
but for his Covenants sake, that is, for the Cove-  
nant hee made both with them and us in *Christ*,  
which was manifested to *Abraham* and *Iacob*, but  
was in the Sonne.

The



The use that we are briefly to make of it is this, that we should take heede of comming to *God* for any part of his *All-sufficiency*, except it be in the name of his Sonne. When you heare that *God* is *All-sufficient*, you must not thinke now to goe to *God* immediately, to say, *Lord*, bestow on me such and such a thing, as I want: for in doing so, what doe we else but draw neere to *God*, as the stubble, or the waxe should draw neere to the fire? *Who is able to dwell with everlasting burnings?* He is a consuming fire to the sonnes of men, if they come to him immediately. But if you come to him in the name of the Son, into whose hands he hath put all things, he is ready to accept you, & to grant you whatsoever you aske in his name. *Lev. 17. 5.* it was death for a man, though his sacrifice was never so good, to offer it without a Priest; and it is no lesse than death to any man to come to *God* without *Christ*, that is, the *Lord* doth not give life to that man, he doth not raise him from nature, which is death enough. When we come to *God* without the Son, what doe we else in so doing, but dishonour the Son? We give him not that honour which his Father would have him to have. What doe we else but robbe him of that which he hath purchased at a deare rate? For even for this very cause did he suffer: *Therefore*, (saith he) *hee hath given him a name above all names*. What do we else but rejoyce in our selves, and forget to give all the glory to *Christ*? *Therefore* whensoever you come to *God*, stil take heed, that you forget not *Christ*, but that you come in his name.

*Vse.*  
Not to come to  
God without  
*Christ*.

*Levit. 17. 5.*



vs. 2  
To come with  
confidence in  
him.

Secondly, as we must not come without him, so wee must come with confidence and much boldnesse, if we come in his name; and that is an especiall use to be made of it, to come with boldnesse to partake of his *All-sufficiency*; for it is in the hands of the Sonne, it is in the hands of a Mediatour.

Why God doth  
not great  
things for us.

The reason why great things are not done for us, notwithstanding GOD is *All-sufficient*, is, because we come not with great faith. If we were able to beleeeve much, it would be to us according to our faith. And what is the reason that we come not with great faith, but because we come not in the name of Christ? We are discouraged in the sight of our owne weaknes, or imperfections and frailties, but if we did looke on *Christ*, and behold him, and come in his name, we would come with a strong faith, and if we did so, it would be according to our faith. When we come timorously and fearefully to *God*, when we come doubting whether we shall receive it or no, it is a signe we come in our owne name: When we come boldly and confidently, and make no question, but the thing we aske shall be granted, it is a sign that we come in the name of Christ: and if we doe so, doe you thinke hee will deny us? To what end hath the Father given him all things into his hands? Why is hee made rich with all treasures? Is it that he might keepe it, and hoard it up? No, but it is to bestow on those that his Father hath given him amongst men: when a man hath riches, *It is a vanity under the Sunne*, saith *Salomon*, to  
keepe

Note.

Why there is a  
fulnesse in  
Christ.

keepe them, and hoard them up, he were as good not to have them: as not to use them: and doe you thinke that *Christ* will have all things given into his hands for nothing? Is it not to bestow on us? Doe you thinke, that he will purchase a thing at so deare a rate, and when he hath done, make no use of it? It is said *Phil. 2. 8. 9.* That, because *He tooke upon him the forme of a servant, and was obedient to the death of the Crosse, therefore his Father gave him a name above all names:* And therefore he did thus and thus unto him. Hath he purchased this for himselfe, for his owne sake? Certainly, it was not for himselfe, for he had no need of it, but he bought it for us: and will he not make use of it when he hath done? Therefore doubt not when you come in his name, you shall receive, and that abundantly too; when wee come in the name of his Sonne, he is able to deny us nothing. Onely remember this, that you come with boldnesse. It is said *Ephes. 3. 11.* that we have this benefit by Christ, we come with *boldnesse and confidence through faith in him.*

Philip. 2. 8, 9:

Ephes. 3. 11.

If a man through the apprehension and sight of his owne righteousnesse, of his owne sanctification; that measure of it that hee hath obtained, think thus with himselfe, I have thus walked with God, I have beene thus perfect, I have thus farre kept the way, I have thus farre denied my selfe, and therefore I shall be heard: If he goe this way to worke, he shall finde many objections, much fallnesse in his heart, much unevennesse in his wayes, that will discourage him; therefore so, a

Why wee cannot be bold if we come to God in our owne name.



man cannot come with boldnesse. But, saith he, you shall come boldly: through whom: *through faith in Christ*: that is, if you come in Christ, consider that you are in covenant with him, that you come in his name, that is hee whom you present to the Father, when you aske any thing at his hands. And thus you may come with boldnesse, what objections soever there can be made, they will be all easily answered in Christ.

*Vse. 3.*  
To teach us  
thankfulnesse.

Then last of all, if it be in Christ, if it be put into his hands immediatly, then whensoever you receive any thing, let him have the sacrifice of praise, let it adde some new love, and some new ingagement, and thankfulnesse to the Sonne. The Father hath done it for that purpose, that the Sonne might be honoured, that the Sonne might be magnified, that wee might learne to love the Sonne, to serve the Sonne, as we doe the Father; and therefore whensoever we obtaine any thing at his hands, let us be thankfull to the Sonne: Labour to see his grace abounding towards us, and our hearts abounding to him in thankfulnesse, and in all the fruites of obedience. So much shall serve for this point.

Now wee come to the next Conclusion, *All things come alike to all; The same condition is to the just as to the wicked, and to the good and pure, and to the polluted, and to him that sacrificeth, and to him that sacrificeth not; as is the good, so is the sinner, hee that sweareth, as hee that feareth an oath.* Hence I gather thus much (before I come to speake of the application of these events to the sonnes of men)

That



That *All men are divided into these two Rankes, either they are good or bad, either they are polluted or cleane, either they are such as sacrifice, or such as sacrifice not*: There is no middle sort of men in the world, all are either sheepe or goates, all are either within the Covenant, or without the Covenant, all are either elect, or reprobates: *God hath divided all the world into these two, either they are the Lords portion, or the Divels portion.*

There are some Reasons of it.

One is, that *God hath made all men to be vessels of honour, or of dishonour, there is no vessell of an indifferent or middle vse.*

Againe, who are they that divide the world? *God and Sathan*: Either you belong to *God*, and are his portion, (as *Deut. 32.9. His people are his portion,*) or you are the *Divels* portion.

And so likewise may we reason from the two principles, either a man is *borne of the flesh, or of the spirit*, if he be borne of the Spirit, he is spirituall, and if he be borne of the flesh, he is fleshly. And therefore in one of these two conditions he must needs be, which I observe for this purpose.

First, you see hence then, that there are but two places hereafter for men, as there are but two rankes of men; there is no middle place, as the *Papists* affirme, there is no *Purgatorie*, or *Limbus*, either for the *Fathers* before *Christ*, or for *Children* now: As they are all in one of these two rankes, in one of these two conditions, so there are but two places into which all men are divided, some to the one, and some to the other.

*Doubt. 3.*  
All men divided into two Rankes.

*Reason 1*  
All are vessels of honour or dishonour.

*Reason 2.*  
God and the Divell divide all the world  
*Deut. 32.9.*

*Reason 3.*  
All are borne of the flesh or the spirit.

*Vse.*  
There is no Purgatory or Limbus.

Use.

To try in  
which conditi-  
on we are.

But secondly, the cheifest use that wee are to make of it, is this: If it be so, if a mans condition must be one of these two, that he is either within the dore of the Kingdome of *God*, or without, that though some are come neere the Kingdome of *God*, some are farther off among those that are without; and againe, among those that are within the doore, some are farther in, some are not so farre, some have proceeded farther into the Temple, some a lesse way; yet there are none in a middle way, but all are eyther within or without; let us then learne to consider, what our condition is, let not our perswasion and opinion of our selves hang betweene both, but let us come to this conclusion, to this disiunctiue proposition, Either I am in the number of those that are good, or that are bad, either I am within the Covenāt, or without: & so consider in which of these two conditions we are. Men are exceeding apt in this case to deceive themselves: and therefore when the Apostle hath occasion to speake of this, he premiseth that still; *Be not deceived, such and such shall not inherit the Kingdome of God*: and so in *Ephes. 5. 6.* *Let no man deceive you with vaine words, for, for such things comes the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience*: That is, men are exceeding apt to deceive themselves, to be pure in their owne eyes, whē they are not yet clesed from their filthines, to think their estate good, when it is not: & therefore, beware, take heed that it be not so with you.

What a miserable condition is it, that when a man hath beene at the paines to set up a large building,

Ephes. 5. 6.

The misery of  
those that try  
not their con-  
dition.



building, hee should then lose all his labour for want of a good foundation: that a man should do as the foolish Virgins, get oyle in their Lampes, and make a great blaze for a time, and when they come to the very point to the doore, to the gate, then to be excluded? Nay, what a folly is it for a man to deceive himselfe in this? It may be, a man out of the corruption of his nature, may be willing to deceive an other, but for a man to deceive himselfe, it is exceeding great folly. And truly, as it is said of flattery, none can be flattered by an other, till first he flatter himselfe. So no man can be deceived by another, till first he be willing to deceive himselfe. Therefor take heede of deceiving your selves.

The greatest folly to deceive our selves

There is a great backwardness in us to come to a tryall, as a crazie body will not indure the tryall of the weather; as a weake eye will not indure the light, for it is offensive to it: So when the heart is not sound, this tryall, this searching, this examining of the heart, it is tedious, grievous, and burthensome: but yet it is profitable, it is that which make us *sound in the faith*, wee must come to it sooner or latter; and it is best for us to come to it, while we have time to helpe it, if we finde things amisse. To have a great freight, and to make shipwracke in the Haven, were a great folly: and therefore we should looke to the Barke, and see whether it be sound or no: To see in what estate wee are, in which of these conditions we are.

Why we are loath to come to the tryall.

*Simile.*

You will say to me, how shall we know?



*Ansiv.*

Four trials, to know in which ranke we are.

I will name you but these foure wayes of triall, that are named here: the *Wiseman* makes this difference of men, some are *good*, and some are *evill*; some are *cleane*, and some are *polluted*; some *sacrifice*, others *sacrifice not*, some are *carelesse of an oath*, others *feare an oath*. Wouldest thou know then in which of these two ranks of men thou art? Consider then whether thou be a *good* man or an *evill* man, that is one distinction. Goodnes consists in these foure things.

**I Triall.**

Goodnesse, which consists in foure things  
Math. 7. 16, 17.

**I**

The tree must be good.

First, *The tree must be good*, as you have it in *Math. 7. 16. 17.* that is, a man is then said to be a good man, when there is a good sappe in him, when there is something in him that is good, when there are some supernaturall graces wrought in him; he that is not empty of these, he is a good man: as it is said of *Barnabas*, *he was a good man*: and how was that proved? *he was full of faith, and the holy Ghost.* See then whether thou hast an empty heart or no. You say a thing is good for nothing, when it is empty of that excellency, that should bee in it: When wine hath not that in it that belongs to Wine, you say it is naught; and so we say of all things else: When a man therefore hath not that in him that belongs to a man, that is, to a man as he was created in innocency, he is wicked and naught, a son of *Belial*: but when he hath a blessing in him, as grapes have wine in them, when he hath supernaturall grace wrought in his heart, when he hath the new *Adam* putting into his heart the sappe of grace and life, then hee is good. Therefore see whether there be some-  
what

*Simile.*

what put into thee, more then is in thee by nature, see whether thou finde the new *Adam* effectually to communicate new sap to thee, new grace and new light, as the old *Adam* hath communicated corruption; see whether thou be made a good tree or no: for it is the tree that makes the fruit good: and not the fruit, that makes the tree good: So it is the man, that justifieth his worke, and not the worke, that justifieth the man: and therefore thou must first see, whether thou be in the Covenant, whether thou hast this seale, that thou seest something put into thee, which thou hast not by nature. Every man by nature is empty: when grace is put into him, then he is said to be good. As it is good wine, when it is full of spirit, when it hath that in it, that belongs to wine; So he is a good man that hath that in him, which belongs to him, in his regenerate estate,

Secondly, Consider whether thou *bring forth good fruit*, that is, not onely whether thou doest good actions. but whether they flow from thee, whether they grow in thine heart as naturally as fruit growes on the tree, that flowes from the sap within. When a man not only doth good works, but when he is zealous of them, *It is his meat and drinke to doe them*, when they flow from him, as water from the fountaine, then he is a good man: for if the tree be good, that is, if the heart be good, a man will be as ready, and will as naturally bring forth good fruite, as the Tree, the Vine, or the Fig-tree bring forth their fruite.

The third thing you shall see in the 2 *Tim.* 2. vessels

<sup>2</sup>  
The fruit must  
be good.

<sup>2</sup>  
2 *Tim.* 2. 21.



There must be  
a readinesse to  
doe good.

vessels are said to ye good, to be vessels of honor, when they are *prepared to every good worke*: So when a man is good, he brings forth good fruit; and not onely brings it forth, but if there be any occasions to put forth the goodnesse that is in him, he is prepared for it, as a vessell is prepared for such a turne, for such a service. The word in the originall signifieth, when a man is fashioned, as a vessell is fashioned: and the meaning of the *holy Ghost*, that when a man is good, when his heart is fitted to good workes, when he knowes how to goe about them; whereas an other bungles at them, and knowes not how to doe them, hee is prepared for them: and therefore there needs no more, but to put him and the good worke together, and hee is ready to performe it.

4  
There must be  
practise of  
good.  
A<sup>c</sup>s 10.38.

The last is, When there is not only a readines, but practise upon all occasions, when a man *doth good*, as it is said, that *Iesus Christ went about doing good*. And therefore he is a good man that is a usefull man, such a man that every one fares the better for, such a man is seryiceable to *God*, and profittable to men. Before regeneration, when a man is a stranger to this goodnesse, hee onely serves himselfe, he is full of selfe-love, all his ends are to looke to himselfe, that he may be kept safe; he cares not what becomes of any thing else, so it be well with him: but when once goodnesse comes into his heart, it hath this fruit, he goes about doing good; because *grace* brings that principle into the heart that never grew there before, that is,  
the

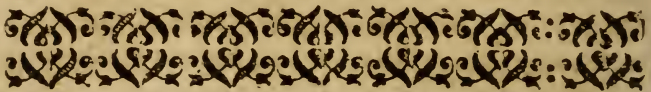


the love of *God* and man; whereas before there was nothing but selfe-love in him: which plant growes naturally in the garden of nature, when grace comes, it brings love with it, and that love makes us usefull and serviceable both to *God* and man: So that whatsoever a man hath, what gifts, what knowledge, what authority he hath, he is ready to use it for the good of others. As the Apostle saith of *Onesimus* in the Epistle to *Philemon*: *Now is he profitable to thee and mee, whereas before he was unprofitable*: So it may be said of all Saints, when once this goodnes is put into them, now they are profitable to *God* and man, they do serve *God* and man with their fatnesse, and with their sweetnesse; before they were unprofitable to others, but now they are profitable both to themselves and others.

This is the first note, by which you may know your selves: Art thou a good and usefull man, doest thou goe about doing good, doe those fare the better for thee, with whom thou hast to doe, dost thou spend the fatnesse, and the sweetnesse that *God* hath given thee, to serve *God* and man with it? then conclude, thou art in the ranke of those that are the *Lords* portion, otherwise thou art yet without the Covenant, thou art yet *in the gall of bitternesse*. The other three

I must deferre till the  
afternoone

Love makes us  
serviceable to  
*God* and man.



# THE SECOND SERMON.

ECCLIESIASTES 9. 1, 2, 3, 4.

*I have surely set my heart to all this, to declare this, that the just, and the wise, and their workes, are in the hand of God, and no man knoweth either love, or hatred by all that is before him: for all things come alike to all, and the same condition is to the just, as to the wicked, and to the good, and to the pure and to the polluted, and to him that sacrificeth, and to him that sacrificeth not, as is the good, so is the sinner, he that sweareth, as he that feareth an oath, &c.*



WE will now proceede to the second difference which remaineth; and that is this:

Consider whether thou be cleane and pure in heart, or polluted:

*There is the same condition to the pure, and to the polluted.*

Now what it is to be cleane, or to be washed, you shall see 1 Cor. 6. 11. *And such were some of you: That is, you were polluted with those sins, there named, But now (saith he) you are washed. And wherein stands this washing? He tells us it stands in these two things: Now you are justified, now you are sanctified: You are justified through the name of*  
Christ:

2 Tryall.

Purity.

1 Cor 6. 11.

What it is to  
be cleane or  
Pure.

*Christ: and sanctified through the Spirit of God.*

So then he is a pure man, or a cleane man, that is, first washed from the guilt of his sinnes, that is, that hath no sinne lying upon his Conscience, that hath not a polluted Conscience, which is a phrase used *Titus 1. Whose mindes and consciences are defiled.* Now defilement, or pollution is in the Conscience, ( *Divines say* ) as a thing that is knowne is in the faculty, or understanding that knowes it; and therefore the man that hath committed any sinne, which yet continues upon his owne score, which his conscience is yet guilty of, and for which he hath not yet gotten an acquittance from Almighty God, he is an impure man, he is yet uncleane, for *he is not yet washed from his filthines.* A man againe that hath gotten any assurance of forgiveness, so that all his sinnes are put upon the reckoning of *Iesus Christ*, and there are none that lye upon his owne score, a man who hath made all his reckonings eaven with God, and hath some assurance thereof, such a man is washed from his filthinesse. Such a phrase you have likewise in *Ezech. 36. 25. I will cleanse you (or wash you) from all your Idols:* That is, from all your Idolatry, from all the sinnes that you have committed, I will wash you, that is, with imputation, or sprinkling of the blood of *Christ.*

The second cleanness is, when a man is not onely washed with the imputation of the blood of *Christ*, and the assurance of pardon, but also when he is washed from the staine of sinne, when he is sanctified through the Spirit, when sinne is mortified

To be washed  
from the guilt  
of sinne

Titus 1.

Ezech. 36. 25.

2  
From the stain  
of sinne.



A triall of sanctification.

mortified in him, when it is as well healed, as for given. And therefore if thou wouldst know whether thou art a cleane man or polluted, consider also this, whether thou hast a cleane heart or no, that is, whether thou hast such an habituall disposition of purity and cleanness, that thou canst not endure to look upon any sinne, no more than a man, that is of a neat and cleane disposition, can endure to see filthinesse; whether thou hast such a disposition, as that although thou be sprinkled with sinne from day to day, though thou bee fowled and spotted with it, yet thou sufferest it not to abide in thy heart; thy heart workes it out, as we said to you before.

So that this you are to observe, to finde out the cleanness of a mans disposition, whether he can looke upon sinne, as an uncleane thing, as a thing from which his soule hath an aversion, as a thing that he abhorres; that is, although there be some thing in him, that loves it, that delights in it, that likes it, yet the prevailing part of the soule abhorres it. Both the cleane and polluted may forsake sinne, and may turne away from sinne, and therefore in that the difference is not seen, but the difference is in this, that thou art able to hate and abhorre sin, to looke on it as a thing that is filthy and uncleane. A Merchant, you know, will cast out his goods, when hee is in danger of his life, but he hates not his goods: So a man may cast away sinne, when it puts him in danger of sinking into hell, or of the judgements of men. It is one thing to part with sinne, and another thing to hate sinne.

*Simile.*

A

A man may withdraw himselfe from sinne, he may give it over, he may seeme to be divorced from it, and yet he may have a months mind after it, he may doe with it still, as the husband of *Michael* did, when she was taken from him, yet saith the Text, *He came weeping after her a farre off*, he longed after her still, and loved her still; So a man may part with his sinne after such a manner, that still he goes weeping after it, he would have it againe, he would faine enjoy it, if it were not for some greater danger, or some greater trouble that he exposeth himselfe unto; as you see in *Phaltiel*, it was not for want of love to his wife, that he parted with her, but it was out of a desire he had to save himself, to escape the danger of the Kings wrath, imprisonment, and death, that would have followed upon it. Therefore consider what hatred you have of sinne, and by that you must judge whether you have a cleane disposition or no. You must not thinke any man is perfectly cleane, and pure, but he is a cleane man, that suffers not any impurity to take quiet possession of his heart although he have unclean thoughts & unclean affections, (as all sinfull thoughts and affections are) though sinne may passe through his heart, as they passed through the temple, yet he suffereth it not to set up Tables in the Temple, to set up an Idol in his heart, he suffereth it not to make any breach of Covenant with *God*, to be adulterous against him; though there may be many glances, some adulterous and unclean actions, that is not the thing that breakes the Covenant, when

It is not leaving  
but hating of  
sinne that shew-  
eth purity.

A pure man  
who.



the heart is still wedded to *God*, and chooseth *God* and no other. And therefore, I say, in that it is not seene, but consider what thy disposition is, whether thou hate that sinne all the while.

An impure  
man who.

A man that is of an impure spirit, of an impure heart, when he is with impure company, when he delights himselfe in impure thoughts, then he is where he would be, he is then in his owne element, and when he is otherwise, he is where hee would not be. On the other side, he that hath an habituall disposition of purenesse and cleannes, though he may be transported to those actes of sinne and pollution, yet his heart hates it, he is not where he would be all the while; he is not upon his owne center, his heart still fights against it, and resists it; therefore consider with thy selfe, what thy heart is in this case, whether thou have a heart that hates uncleannes, or whether thou hast yet a swinish disposition, that thou lyeest in the mud, and delightest to lye in it.

Impurity an  
effect of it.

A man may fall into the mud, but he delighteth not to be there; no more will a cleane disposition delight in sinne. And you may know it by this effect, where the disposition is uncleane, there sinne abides, till it staine the heart, till it makes a man *spoted of the world*, that is, it causeth him to keep a tract in sinne, that a man may say, this is the path hee walketh in, it causeth him to wear the livery of sin, that he may be knowne by it fro day to day, it causeth the spot so to sink into the soule, that a man may see he is such man. This is to have an uncleane disposition, when uncleannesse



nesse so cleaves to his soule, that they agree together; whereas in a man that hath a pure disposition, it is not so; as 1 *Iohn* 3.3. *He that hath this hope purifieth himselfe.* The meaning is this; there is double hope; there is the hope of the hypocrite, that is a *dead hope*, that doth not set a man on worke to cleanse himselfe from filthinesse: There is againe a *lively hope*, spoken of in 1 *Pet.* 1.3. that sets a man on worke to cleanse himselfe; that is, when a man hath a true hope, a real hope to have that undefiled inheritance; he considers this with himselfe, that an impure heart, and an undefiled inheritance will not stand together; and because he hopes for it in good earnest, (it is not a false hope, it is not a dead hope) therefore he sets himselfe on worke indeed to purifie himselfe: *He that hath that hope, purifieth himselfe*, he cleanseth himselfe. Who ever therefore doth not purifie himselfe, it is an argumēt that his hope is dead which he hath of being saved, it is but the hope of an hypocrite, a hope that will stand him in no stead; for it brings forth no endeavour: that is the second thing. I must be brieve in this, because this is not the point I intend, but that which follows.

The third expression here used, is, *He that sacrificeth, and he that sacrificeth not.* This is but a *Synecdoche*, where one particular is put for all other kindes of holy duties: But the meaning is this; you shal know a man by this, in which of the two conditions he is; he whose heart is upright with God, he dares not omit any holy ordinance, hee dares not omit any sacrifice, hee dares not per-

1. *Iohn* 3.3.

Hope double.

1. *Pet.* 1.3.Dead hope  
what4 *Tryall*  
Sacrificing.What meant  
by sacrificing.

James 2. 10.

forme them in a slight and negligent manner. He againe whose heart is false, sacrificeth not, that is, either he omits the duty. or else he omits the substance and life of the duty. You know in *Iam. 2. 10* he saith there, *Hee that abideth in all, that keeps all the Commandements, and yet failes in one, he is guiltie of all:* and so you may say of the ordinances, he that keeps them, he that obserueth them, but yet failes in one, it is argument enough, that he makes no conscience of any. You shall finde this true, that whosoever he is that sacrificeth not, that is, he that prayes not constantly, he that heares not, he that reads not the Scriptures, he that sanctifieth not *Gods Sabbath*, he that partaketh not of the Sacraments, &c. he that useth not holy conference, and fasting, and prayer in its season, such a man is in an evill condition: It is given here as a note of an evill man, he sacrificeth not.

Object.

But you will say to me, May not a man whose heart is unsound, keepe a constant course in sacrificing to the *Lord*, that is, in praying to the *Lord*? May he not keepe those ordinances constantly?

*Beloved*, I answer, Hee may keepe them constantly, that is, he may doe the outside of the duty, he may performe the dutie in a formall manner, and many times men are deceived with this, it is an usuall case, (nothing more usuall in the Church of *God*) for a man to content himselfe with a perfunctory, ordinary performance, a customary performance of good duties: but herein *Sathan* deceives men, as wee deceive children, when

Answ.

A wicked man may performe duties outwardly.

Simile.



when we take from them gold and silver, that is truly precious, and give them Counters, things that have no worth in them; onely they have a good glosse upon them, which quiets them, because they be children, because they cannot put a difference betweene things of shew, and things of true worth; for even thus Sathan usually quiets the Consciences of men, with these bare formes of piety, because they are not able to discern, not able to distinguish betweene the precious duties, and the right performance of them, and betweene the formall and empty performance, which hath an outward splendour and glittering shew of performance; but in truth he cozens and deceives men with it. Therefore, I say, a man may do these duties, he may be constant in prayer, from day to day, hee may be constant in hearing, and performing all the ordinances of God, in sacrificing (as the *Wiseman* speaks here,) yet for all this, not to be one of these good men, according to this note, because hee doth not performe them in an holy and spirituall manner.

You will say to me, how shall I know that?

You shall know it thus; when the ordinances of God, are spirituallly performed, when holy duties are performed in an holy manner, you shall finde these effects in them.

First, They are a fire to heat the heart, as in *Ier. 23. My word is a fire.*

Againe, they quicken the heart; when it is dead, heavie and dull, and indisposed to any good duty, they raise and quicken it.

Cc 3

Againe

*Quest.*

*Answ.*

How to know  
when wee use  
Gods Ordina-  
nces.

I

They are as  
fire.

*Ier. 23. 49.*

2

They quicken.



3  
They edifie.

Iude 20.

Mark 4 24.

Againe, They build us up; we are gainers by them, wee grow more rich both in grace and knowledge; *Iude 20* verſe, *Edifie your ſelves in your moſt holy faith, praying in the holy ghoſt*: As if he ſhould ſay, that will edifie you: and you know what *Chriſt ſayes, Take heede how you heare: for to him that hath, more ſhall be given*: that is, he that heares as he ought to heare, every time that hee heares he growes ſomething more rich, he gaines ſome more ſaving knowledge, ſome greater degree of ſaving grace.

4  
They heale the ſoule,

Iob 15. 3, 4.

Againe, The ordinances of *God* heale the ſoule, they heale the diſtempers of it, they compoſe it and put it into a good frame of grace: as in *Iob, 15. 3, 4.* ſaith *Eliphaz* there to *Iob, Doſt thou diſpute with words not comely, &c.* with talke that is not profitable: *Surely ſaith he, thou reſtrainest prayer from the Almighty*: As if he ſhould ſay, *Iob*, if thou diddeſt pray, thou wouldeſt not fal into theſe diſtempered ſpeeches, as thou doeſt; thy heart would not be ſo diſordered, thou wouldeſt not be ſo paſſionate and froward as thou art; therefore ſurely thou reſtrainest prayer. Whence I gather, that duties performed as they ſhould be, compoſe the heart, and heale thoſe diſtempers.

5  
They make the heart fruitfull.

Againe, They make the heart fruitfull: and therefore they are compared to raine, that falls upon the earth, and comes not in vaine.

6  
They teach us to diſcerne betweene good and evil.

Againe, They teach us to diſtinguiſh *betweene good and evil*, to divide the *fleſh and ſpirit*; ſtill a man ſees ſomewhat more than he did in his owne heart, he ſees the good that is in it, and the corruption that is in it.

Laſtly,

Lastly, They cleanse the heart, yea the heart of a young man, where lusts are strong, where the staine is deepe, and will not out without Fullers sope: *David Psal. 119. 9.* saith, that the word clen-  
seth the heart, &c. *Wherewith shall a young man  
clense his heart? By taking heed to thy word.*

Now then examine thy selfe, whether thou so performest these Ordinances, and holy duties, that God commands thee, that thou finde these effects of the: If thou doest, then thou art *one that sacrificeth*, if otherwise, then thou art *one that sacrificeth not*: and therefore consider whether thy heart be warmed by them; If they be to thee as painted fire, such as hath no heate, thou dost not sacrifice, it is but an outward forme: consider if they quicken thy heart, or if it be as dead, and as backward, and as indisposed to good duties, and as prone to things that are evill, after thou hast performed them as before: If so, though thou seeme to sacrifice, yet thou art in the number of those that sacrifice not: doest thou find that they doe not divide the flesh and the spirit, that they are as a sword without an edge, that they are salt that biteth not, which doth not cleanse the heart? It is an argument thou doest not performe them as thou shouldest: for there is a sharpnesse in holy Ordinances, that makes us sound in the faith, because they discover to us the secret corruption of the heart. Doest thou finde thy lusts as strong as they were? Are they not cleansed out? It is a signe thou doest not use the scowring as thou shouldest: and so we may say of all the rest. Doest thou finde the word to fall upon

7  
They cleanse  
the heart.  
*Psal. 119. 9.*



thy heart, as the raine falls upon the earth, or as upon a stone, that it sinkes uot into, that makes it not more fruitfull? Doest thou finde that thou doest heare from day to day; & yet art not richer in grace, and in knowledge; That it cannot be said to thee, that thou hast so much more, as thou hast heard more? Doest thou finde that prayer builds thee not up, that thou gettest not some strength, some strong resolution, that thou confirmest not thy Covenant with *God*, thy purpose of abstaining from sinne, and the like, that there is not somewhat added to that spirituall building? Thou art in the number of those that sacrifice not, though thou keep a constant course in performing religious duties. So much likewise shall serue for this.

4 Tryall  
Fearing of sin.

The last expression is, *Hee that sweareth, and he that feareth an oath*. That which is said of this sin, may be applied likewise to all others, and so here is a fourth difference betwixt the good and bad. A man who is within the Covenant, hath this propertie, that he feares sinne, and dare not meddle with it, that is, hee will not neglect looking to his heart; he will not be negligent in keeping a watch over his heart, and over his wayes, but hath a continuall eye upon sinne, as we say, *Timor figens oculos, &c.* What a man feares, hee will be sure to have a continuall eye unto it.

If a man be about a businesse, and there be any thing that he feares, he will neglect his worke to have an eye upon that, whatsoever it be. If a man feare sinne, he will be very diligent in watching him.



himselfe, in taking heed that sinne come not upon him by the by, with some by-blow, that he looked not for; such a man hath a continuall eye upon sinne, he is exceeding diligent in looking to his heart and wayes, when another man neglects it, and therefore easily slips into sinne; now into an oath, now into Sabbath-breaking; sometimes to the omission of prayer, sometimes to the lust of uncleannesse, sometimes to lying and dessembling, sometimes to one sinne, sometimes to another: and the reason is, because he is negligent. The *foolish goes on, and is carelesse*, that is, he feares not sinne, and therefore he neglects having an eye to sinne.

Now that you may finde out more distinctly, what this *fear* is, consider this, he that feares, he doth not onely feare the sin it selfe, but he feares any thing that he hath suspition of, he feares any thing that is doubtful, if it be such a thing, as may be evill to him, he feares it: So a man that feares sinne, though it be not cleare to him, though he be not fully convinced that such and such a thing is a sinne, yet if hee be one that feares sinne, hee will not meddle with it. Put the case hee doubt whether the Sabbath should be so strictly kept, notwithstanding, because he is doubtful of it, he will not take liberty in it. Put the case hee doubt whether gaming is to be used, if he feares, he dares not meddle with it. As if there should be intimation given to a man, that such a cup or such a dish were poysoned, hee would not meddle with it, because he feareth it, he feareth death, he feareth sick-

He that feareth  
sinne will not  
adventure up-  
on doubtfull  
things.

*Simile.*

sicknesse, so a man that feareth sinne, if there be but a suspicion of it, though others swallow it without making any bones of it, yet he dares not; and therefore consider what thou doest in that case.

He that feareth sinne, shunnes the occasions.

Besides, when a man feares, he not onely feares the thing, but that which may make way to it: for feare, you know, sets the heart to prevent evill to come; the object of it is, *malum futurum*, whereas the object of griefe, is present evill: so it is also with those that feare sinne. Put the case sinne be farre off from a man, yet if he feare it, he will not come neere the occasions, that might leade him to it, but keeps himselfe farre from it, (as in *Exod.* 23. we are commanded, *Keepethy selfe farre from an evill matter*,) he dares not suffer his thoughts to wander, he dare not gaze upon unlawfull objects, hee dares not come into company with them that will infect him, he dares not come neere the traine, though he be farre off the blow. Thus a man is affected that feares.

*Exod.* 23.10.

He that feareth sinne, feareth it constantly

And againe, when a man is possessed with a disposition of feare, he doth not onely feare for a fit, but if it be a thing that he naturally feares, it is a constant feare, he feares it at all times. You shall find evill men may feare by fits, *Ahab* feared whē *Eliab* brought a terrible message to him, he feared and humbled himselfe. So *Pharaoh* feared, when *Moses* brought upon him those heavie judgements & plagues; but these feares of theirs were as mists which cleared up againe, that continued not: and therefore you have that expression in *Prov.* 28.

Blessed



*Blessed is the man that feares alwayes:* as if he should say, by this we shew the sincerity of our feare, that wee doe not feare by fits, but feare alwayes.

Prov. 28. 14.

Why mens fear of sinne is not constant,

The ground of it is this, hee that feareth not constantly, feares only the wrath of *God*, he feares only the evill, and therefore when that is taken away, he feares no more: but with the godly man it is quite contrary, *he feares the Lord & his goodnes* *Hof. 3. 5.* and therefore when there is an end of evil and afflictions, when the feare of that is blowne over, when goodnesse comes in the roome of it, when *God* begins to shew mercy to him, to give him health, and peace, and quietnesse; when he is rid of his sicknesse, of his troubles, crosses, & calamities, his feare doth not cease, (as the feare of *Ahab* did) but he feares *God* still, yea he feares him now more than ever. The more *Gods* goodnesse is increased towards him, the more he feares; because the more his love is increased, the more his tendernesse of Conscience is increased, the more sweetnes he findes in *God*, and therefore the more he is afraid to lose it, the more he is afraid of any breaches betweene *God* and him. This you shall finde in those that feare.

Hof. 3. 5.

Again, You shall finde a difference in the object, the thing that they feare. When the feare of *God*, and the feare of men shall come in competition, there is the tryall: When a man shall be threatned by man with death, when he shall be threatned with the losse of his goods, the losse of libertie, the losse of any thing that is precious un-

Tryal of feare, when the feare of *God* and men come together.



to him; and on the other side, *God* shall threaten eternall death. The question now is, whether of these he wil feare most? mortall man, *whose breath is in his nostrills*, or the eternall *God*, whether shall sway him most? *The feare of man*, which is a *snare* on the one side, or the feare of *God*, and disobedience to him on the other side. When thou art put upon such a strait, such a tryall, that thou must offend one of them, consider what thou doest in this case. You know what *Christ* saith, *Feare not men*, the utmost that they can doe, is but to take away life, but *feare God*, for he can cast thee into hell.

Now therefore examine thy selfe, whether thou feare men in such a case, when a good conscience is to be kept, and thererby some evill is to be undergone from men, whether thou wilt rather adventure that, or the wrath and vengeance of Almighty *God*, &c.

And, (which is of the same nature) whether a man feares the doing of evill or the suffering of evill most, whether a man feare sinne or crosses more, when they come in competition, you shall finde this, he that is most fearefull in sinne, he is most bolde in all things else: And on the contrary, hee that feares other things most, hee feares sinne least. And the reason of it is this, because a godly man lookes upon sinne as the maine evill, hee knowes that toucheth him in the maine, it toucheth him in his free-hold; and therefore, if he be to undergoe povertie, disgrace, imprisonment, if it be death, any of these things, he feares them not, (for, saith he, these are lesse evils, these touch

He that feareth  
sinne most, fea-  
reth other  
things least.

touch me not in the maine, ) but if it be sinne, he lookes on that as the greatest evill, and therefore he feares it above al things. So now by this thou shalt know what thy feare is, whether thou feare the doing of evill, or the suffering of evill.

Last of al, consider whether thou feare the word of *God*, whē there is nothing but the meere word, when there is nothing but meere threatnings, as in *Isai 66. 2. I will looke to them that tremble at my word.* If thou feare onely the actuall affliction, the judgement, the crosse, when it pincheth thee, and is upon thee, any naturall man is vble to doe that ; but the wise man sees it before he beleeves the threatning, he sees it in the cloud, before it be shed downe in the storme, he feares the word of *GOD*, and trembles at it, because he beleeveth it, when others beleve it not. Therefore consider by this, whether thou be such a one as feares sinne, whether thou hast all these properties of true feare, or whether on the other side thou art carelesse of sinne, whether thou be *one that swears, or one that feares an oath.* So much shall serve for this poinr ; *All things come alike to all, and the same condition is to the just as to the wicked, &c.*

The next point that we have to observe out of these words is this ; *For the time of this life there are the like events to the good men, as to the wicked ;* That is, though *God* be *All-sufficient*, though he make good his *All-sufficiency* to the Saints, so that *hee is a Sunne and a shield unto them, and no good thing is wanting to them,* nor any evill thing can come neere them; yet for all this, for the time of

True feare makes a man feare the word.

*Isa. 66. 2.*

*Doct. 4*  
Things fall out alike to good and bad in this life.



Eccles. 9. 11.

Chap. 8. 9. 10.

of this life, in this world, there are the like events to both, he deales with the one, as with the other. This is his common course, as the *Wiseman* expresseth it both here and in other places. In the 11. verse of this Chapter, I observe, saith he, and I see, *That the Race is not alwayes to the swift, nor the Battaile to the strong. nor Riches to a man of understanding, nor favour to men of knowledge, &c.* but he that is weake gets the battaile, and he that is more unwise gets favour, &c. So he that deserves the best, misseth it, and hee that deserves the worst, obtaines it. So likewise in the 8. Chapter, you shall see this fully, if you compare that and the latter end of this ninth Chapter together: *There is*, saith he, a man *that rules to his owne hurt*, and to the hurt of others; yet, saith he, this man continues in it, yea, he continues in it in peace, even to his grave; and not so onely, but when hee is gone, and is *come from the holy place*, that is, the place of Magistracy (which is there called the holy place) *it is all forgotten*; though he had done evill, yet hee continued in peace, and dyed in peace, and after also there was no blemish cast upon him, but it is forgotten: this I have seene, saith *Salomon*.

Againe, you shall finde it as true on the contrary side: *I have seene*, saith he, *a poore man that was wise, that hath delivered a Citty, when a great King had made forts against it*: That is, though he were a poore man, yet through his wisdom, he delivered it from a great King; *But*, saith he, *this also was forgotten*: The poore man was forgotten, and  
so



So the good Ruler was forgotten, and the evil Ruler was forgotten. And as it is said of the Ruler, so it is said of the errour which comes from the face of the Ruler; *I have seene saith Salomon, a vanity under the Sunne, that ariseth from the face of the Ruler*, that is, from the errour of the Ruler. What is that? *Folly is set in great excellency, & the Rich set in low place, I have seene servants on horsback, and Princes walking as servants on the ground*, Cap. 10. 6, 7. That is, those that were holy and good, they were rich, how poore soever they seemed to be; they were wise, howsoever the world accounted of them; though the world reckoned them as servants: And on the other side, those that were evill, they were poore, though they appeared to be never so rich; they were base, though they seemed to be never so noble; they were foolish, though they seemed to have the repute of wisdom. Now, saith he, I have seene these servants on horse-backe, sitting in great excellency, when others, though they were Princes, have beene set in low places, and have walked like servants on foot. Thus you see, *that all things come alike to all*, so the Lord disposeth it: If you looke to the condition of things, you shall see, that all bastards escape not afflictions, and againe that many sonnes have but little afflictions: You shall see againe, that not all evill men have prosperity, nor all good men are followed with adversity; but God disposeth these things promiscuously.

Chap: 10. 6, 7.

You shall see *Iosiah* a good King, slaine with an arrow,

Instances.

2 Chro. 35. 23.

arrow, when he changed his clothes, and covered himselfe, and dissembled his person even as well as *Ahab* was, you shall see no difference in the case as it is described, 2 *Chron.* 35. the same condition fell to them both, they both disguised themselves, the Archers both shot at randome, *God* directed the Arrowes to both of them, both were sicke and wounded in their Chariots, both were carried out of the Battaile, yet the one a very good King, and the other a wicked King.

You see againe, *Ioseph* was put in prison for innocency, as well as *Pharaohs* Butler and Baker were for their offences.

You see *Moses* and *Aaron* were excluded out of the land of promise, as well as murmuring rebellious *Israel*: the same condition was to the one as to the other.

If againe you looke upon the good successe of men, you shall finde it the same: You shall finde *Nebuchadnezzar* prevailing, and reigning forty yeares in prosperity, as well as you see King *David* reigned forty yeares, and *Gods hand* was with him, to blesse him in all this: All this you see under the Sunne. Onely this you are to observe, that it is but for a time, that the *Lord* doth this; he doth it not all wayes, this is not the constant condition either of the one, or of the other: And therefore you must know, ( that this truth may be cleare to you ) that *God* useth a libertie in these two things:

First, he useth a libertie in election, he chooseth one and refuseth another, and that for no other reason,

God useth a liberty in two things.

In election.

reason, because it pleaseth him.

Secondly, In his punishing and rewarding the sonnes of men, elect and reprobate, he useth a liberty in two things.

First, In the time of their afflictions and rewards.

And secondly, in the manner and qualitie of their rewards and punishments.

In the substance it selfe he useth no liberty at all; but this is an infallible rule, that will be alwayes true, *That he rewards every man according to his worke*, he rewards the good according to his worke, and he rewards the evill according to his worke: but yet, I say, with this difference, in the *time*: he useth a liberty, it may be, he deferreth the rewarding of such a man a long time; he deferres likewise the punishment of such a one a long time; with others he deales quite contrary, hee sends punishments upon them presently after the sinne is committed, he gives a reward presently after the good deed is done.

And so likewise in the manner of the punishment: there are punishments of divers sorts, some are more secret punishments, some are more scandalous, some are taken out for examples, that others may feare; others be let alone, and makes them not examples. This libertie he useth in the dispensing of his punishments; and the like hee doth in his rewards. Some he rewards openly for their well doing, that others might be encouraged. Some men he suffers to wait a long time, and there comes no present reward: they shall

2  
In punishment  
and rewards,  
in two things.

In the time.

2  
In the manner.



Not to be of-  
fended at Gods  
dealing,

have a reward according to their workes, but yet this liberty *God* useth in the dispensation of it. If this be so, then let us not be offended; let us not thinke, that *God* is not therefore *All-sufficient*, because he deales sometimes *with the righteous according to the workes of the wicked*, sometimes *with the wicked according to the workes of the righteous*; for you see he will be *All-sufficient*, he will keepe the substance of this rule, *he will reward every man according to his worke*, he will make good his *All-sufficiency* in performing his promises unto them, that belong to him; and againe, hee will make good all his threatnings to those that are enemies to him.

But now for the time of his dispensation, and administration of things, it is true, he takes a liberty to himselfe. And to make this the cleerer to you I will doe these two things.

First, I will shew you the reasons, why *God* doth thus for a time, why thus hee disposeth all things for a season.

And secondly, I will shew you this, that though he doth thus for a season, yet certainly, he is *All-sufficient to the good, it shall goe well with them, and it shall goe ill with the sinners*.

First I say, *God* doth thus for a time: And why? one reason is, That *God* may try the faith and sincerity of men: for if when men have sinned, *God* should smite presently, if whē they doe well, *God* should reward them presently, they would bee drawne to well-doing, and from evill-doing, not by sincerity and by faith; but by sence. Now the

Why *God* for  
a time dispen-  
seth things pro-  
miscuously.

Reason 1.  
To try men:

Lord therefore deferrēs it, he puts it off, *that those that are proved, may be knowne*, that what men doe out of sinceritie may appeare to be so, that men may *live by faith, and not by sense*, that men might be drawne to live by right respects, and not by sensuall and carnall respects, as they would doe, if either his punishments were presently, or his reward.

Secondly, The *Lord* doth it to spare mankind; for if the *Lord* should punish presently, men should perish from the earth. And therefore hee doth in this case, as Generals are wont to do with their Souldiers when there is a generall fault committed, they cast lots, and pick out two or three, and put them to death, that the whole Army may be saved: So the *Lord* doth, he takes here and there one, whom (it may be) he followes with open and great judgements for open sinnes: But for others againe, the generality, he suffers and lets them alone, because he would spare mankind. This reason I finde used, *Gen. 6. 3.* the *Lord* said there, when he was about to destroy man from the earth, *My spirit shall no longer strive with man, for he is but flesh*: That is, if I should continually deale with men, as I doe now, if I should take them, and sweepe them away with the besome of destruction, as I doe these, there would remaine no flesh upon the earth; and therefore, saith he, *I will not strive with them*, but beare with them patiently, though their sinnes are great and many.

Againē, the *Lord* doth it, that he might keepe  
 from

Reason 2.  
 To spare men.

Simile.

Gen. 6. 3.



Reason 3.  
To hide events  
from men.

Rom. 11. 33.

Acts 1. 7.

Reason 4.  
To bring forth  
his treasures

Quest.

from us the events of things: It is his good pleasure to reserve them to himselfe, and therefore he goes not in a constant course. When men sinne, he doth not presently punish, neither when a man doth well, doth he presently reward him, that is, he goes not in one tract, as it were, but sometimes he doth the one, and sometimes the other, promiscuously; and for this end, saith the *Wiseman*, *he hath made this contrary to that, that no man might finde any thing after him*: That is, that he might leave no footsteps behind him; as we have that phrase used, *Rom. 11. 33. How unsearchable are thy wayes, and thy judgements past finding out!* The word in the originall signifieth, that when *God* goeth, he leaves no *vestigia*, nor print behind him, so that a man cannot say, he will goe this way, he goes it not so oft, as to make a path of it; (I speake of these particular things) he doth not so dispense good and evill, punishments or rewards, that a man can say, the *Lord* will doe this. And the reason of this is, because future things, the event of things, it is his good pleasure to keepe to himselfe: as he saith, *Acts 1. 7. It is not for you to know the event of things, which the Father hath kept to himselfe*: and therefore he useth this promiscuous dispensation of punishment and reward, that he might hide these things from the sonnes of men.

Fourthly, he doth it likewise, that he may bring forth the treasures, both of his wrath, and of his mercy.

You will say, how shall that be done?

Saith



Saith *God*, if I should presently cut off a sinner, and should not forbear him, his wickednesse should not be full, I will let the *Amorites* alone, *Gen. 15. 15.* that the measure of their sinne might be fulfilled: That is, *God* purposely forbeares them, with great patience, *Rom. 9. 22.* He leaves them, and heapes mercyes and kindneses upon them, that they continuing in their sinnes, and abusing his patience, recompensing him evill for good, he might then draw out the treasures of his wrath. If he should take them suddenly and cut them off, there might be but some of his wrath manifested upon the sonnes of men; but when they runne a long course in sinning, when they make a heape of sinne, then *God* drawes out the treasures of his wrath and power, that is the very reason used, *Rom. 11. 22.* and likewise *Rom. 2. 4.* The *Lord* hath certaine treasures of wrath, as we see, *Deut. 32. 33, 34, 35.* Where speaking of the children of *Israel*, he saith, that he suffered them to grow (that is the meaning of that place) as a man suffers a vine to grow, I suffered you to bring forth grapes, I did not trouble you, nor interrupt you, but whē you should have had good wine in your grapes to refresh *God* and man, saith he, your wine was as the poyson of *Dragons*, and as the gall of *Aspes*; insteede of doing good, and being serviceable to men, when I gave you so much rest and peace. The wine you brought forth was hurtfull to man, as poyson, and as the gall and bitterness of *Aspes*, which is the most hurtfull thing in the world.

*Answer.*  
How *God* drawes out the treasures of his wrath to sinners.  
*Gen. 15. 16.*  
*Rom. 9. 22.*

*Rom. 2. 4.*  
*Rom. 11. 22.*  
*Deut. 32. 33,*  
*34, 35.*

Now, saith the *Lord*, all this I have done, that I might lay it up, *I have sealed it up among my treasures : for vengeance and recompence is mine :* That is, therefore have I suffered all this, that I might draw forth al my treasures of wrath, which otherwise would be hidden, and never opened and manifested to the world.

How God  
drawes forth  
the treasures  
of mercy to the  
godly

The like he doth to the godly, he suffers them to goe on, he suffers them to doe well, and yet for all this, hee gives them no present reward, but leaves them to the malice of men, to the hand of the enemy, and suffers them to prevaile against them, he suffers them to be in poverty, in persecution, in prison, to be taken away by death, &c. And why doth hee suffer such variety of Temptations to come to them? *Iam. 1.* because their grace, and their patience, and their faith might be more tryed, that they might have a larger Reckoning. *Math. 5. 10. Blessed are those that suffer for righteousnesse sake :* and by this meanes hee drawes forth the treasures of his mercy. If the reward should be presently, it should not be so great a reward, but when he suffers any man to do well, and then lets him waite, by that meanes hee takes occasion to be the more bountifull, as he saith to them, *Heb. 10. 36. When you have done his will, you have neede of patience :* That is, the *Lord* still deferr'es, that you might shew your patience, that you might have the honour to suffer, as well as to doe, and so he might shew forth on you, *the riches and the Treasures of his mercy.*

James 1.

Math. 5. 10.

Heb. 10 36.

Reason 5.

Lastly another reason why *God* doth it, is, because



cause the time of this life is the time of striving, of running, of acting, it is not the time of being rewarded, as *Iam. 1. 12.* *Blessed is he that indureth the time of tryall.* God puts a man for the time of this life to many trials, he puts a good man to suffer many crosses and afflictions, to see whether he will beare them or no, he gives him not present liberty, present prosperity, nor present rewards, &c. Saith he, *When he is tryed, he shall receive the crowne of glory, which hee hath promised to them that love him,* then, and not before; so I say, the time of this life is the time of striving.

This life is a time of striving.  
*Iam. 1. 12.*

You know men do not give the reward till the wrastring be done; they are not knighted till the bartaille be ended; they give not the garland, till there be an end of the combate: Therefore *Rom. 2. 5.* the last day is called the manifestation, or declaration of his just judgement. So that till then, there is no declaration of the just judgement of God, one way or other. There is not a declaration of wrath till then, nor a declaration of mercy till then; for a time therefore the *Lord* suffers them to goe on, he dispenseth the event of good and evil, of punishments and rewards promiscuously, that the sonnes of men might be tryed; but when the race is done, then he will make good his promise to the one, and his threatnings unto the other.

*Rom. 2. 5.*  
The day of Judgement the time of reward

But now, though the *Lord* doth this for a time, as you see hee doth for a season, yet remember this againe for your comfort, that it is but for a season, it shall not allwayes be so; as the *Wise-man* resolves in the Chapter before my Text:



Saith hee, howsoever it fall out, *I know it shall be well with the righteous, and it shall be evill with the wicked*: It is certaine that every man shall be rewarded accordeng to his workes: *Godlinesse hath the promise of this life, and of the life to come.* And againe, *ungodlinesse hath the curses of this life, and of that which is to come; and certainly they shall be both fullfilled.* And that it may be made cleare to you, consider this ground for it, that though the wicked prosper a while, and good men suffer affliction for a while, yet it must needs be that this must be the issue of it.

It shall not alwayes goe well with the wicked, nor ill with the godly.

I

Because God is a iust God.

First, because *the Iudge of all the world must needs be righteous*, as saith *Abraham*: As if he should say, The first standard of Iustice, the first rule, the first measure, either that must be right, or else there can be no rectitude in the world. Now that cannot be; you see there is a rectitude amongst men, there is a Iustice amongst men, there is a kinde of even carriage among the Creaures, and therefore the Iudge of all the world that gives all these rules, that sets all these measures, all things in this evennes, & that keeps up that which otherwise would fall in sunder, surely he must needs be righteous; and therefore he must needs doe well to the righteous, and reward evill to the wicked.

2

He is immutable.

Secondly, this is cleare from his immutabilitie: looke what *God* hath done in former times, hee must needs doe the same: Goe through all the Scriptures, and you shall finde that still the evill in the end were punished, and the good in the end were rewarded; he is the same *God* still, he is still

as

as holy as he was, still his eyes cannot abide iniquitie, still he is powerfull as he was; there is no change in him, nor shadow of turning. And therefore thinke with thy selfe, he that was so severe against *Saul* for breaking the Commandement, he that was so severe against *Balaam* for loving the wages of unrighteousnesse; he that was so severe against *Vzziah* for touching the *Ark*, for meddling with holy things, for drawing neere in an unholy manner to him; he that consumed *Nabal* and *Abihu* with fire from heaven, because they came with strange fire, (so doe we when we come with carnall affections to performe holy duties) he is the same, and though he doe it not to thee or the soldaine, as he did to them, (for he did it to them for example, that they might be rules for future times; that he might not onely deliver precepts, but might second them with examples) yet being the same *God*, he will doe it to thee at length, if thou fall into the same sinne; hee that stricke *Ananias* and *Saphira* with death for speaking against the truth, and against their Consciences, he will doe the same to thee, though he doe it not in the same manner, (because it was extraordinary, hee drew them out for examples,) and so I may say of rewards, it is certaine he will doe the same.

Moreover, it must needs be so, because *Gods* blessednesse stands in the execution of his owne Law, in proceeding according to it.

Take all the Creatures under the Sunne, and their happinesse standes in keeping close to that rule, that *God* hath given them: The fire is well, as long

3  
Gods blessednesse consists in executing his owne law.



long as it followes that rule, the water, and so every Creature; Man to whom the Law was given, his hapines is to keepe the Law, *In doing it thou shalt live*; The great God hath made a Law to himselfe, (that is, he hath expressed himselfe) his blessednesse consists in keeping it; and therefore be assured, that whatsoever his Law is, it shall certainly be performed. The Law you know, is this, Either thou shalt keepe these things, or thou shalt dye for it. Now a disjunctive proposition is true, we say, if either part be true; that is, if a man doe not keepe the Law, of necessitie he must be punished, or else Gods Law should be broken; but if either be fullfilled, the Law is kept: So I say, it must needs bee, that the Lord must doe that, wherein his blessednes consists. *Though a sinner prolong his dayes, and though his punishment bee long deferred, and sentence be not speedily executed, yet certainly it must needs be executed, for the Lord must needs act according to that rule hee hath set to himselfe.*

5  
God will not  
lose his glory.

Last of all, if the Lord should not doe it, he should lose his glory; If wicked men should alwayes prosper, if good men should alwayes fare ill, men would say, there were no God in heaven, to rule things, to administer things by his providence: therefore, saith he, I will bring it to passe, *that you may know that I am the Lord.* So then, seest thou a wicked man doing wickedly, and yet not punished? Hee cannot continue long, the Lord should lose his glory if hee should. Seest thou a good man that continues in his righteounesse, and



and yet he suffers adversitie and affliction, he is set in a low place, *he walkes on foot.* &c. he cannot continue so long; for the *Lord* should lose his glory, and the *Lord* will not lose his glorie, he is exceeding tender of his glory. And therefore this Conclusion must be set downe, that though for a time *all things come alike to good & bad*, though *God* dispense them promiscuously for a season, yet certainly the issue shall be, *it shall be well with the righteous, and ill with the wicked.*

Therefore (to proceede a little further) let not holy men be discouraged, because they see things goe ill with the Church; be not discouraged at it, for, it shall be well with them in due season. You shall see *Psal.* 129, 3. that the *Lord* suffers evill men to plough the Church, and to make long furrowes on the backe of it; but yet, saith he, in the fourth verse; *The Lord will cut the cordes of the wicked; Hee will cut their traces, they plow long, and make deepe furrowes; but yet the Lord at length cuts the cords of the wicked.* The horses that draw the plow, as long as the traces hold, they draw, but when they are cut they can draw no longer: So the *Lord* will doe, he suffers the Church to be plowed, when they doe not judge themselves, when they doe not plow themselves, when they doe not humble themselves, then hee sets the enemyes of the Church to plow them, and to humble their soules; and this he doth for a certaine season: but when he hath done, he cuts their traces, he cuts their cordes, and that in due season.

*Vse.*

Not to be discouraged, because of the miseries of the Churches. *Psal.* 129, 3.

As

Instances of  
the wicked pu-  
nished in due  
season.

As for example ; He suffered *Pharaoh* a long time to plow the Church, you know how long he afflicted it, you know what long furrowes he made upon it; but yet when the period was come the period that *God* had set, the fit time, then *God* cut his traces, that is, suffered him to plow no longer, but destroyed him.

And so *Haman* in the storie of *Hester*, he plowed the Church a while, till it came to the very point, to the exigent, that he should have swallowed it up, and then he was taken off from plowing any longer, then the *Lord* cut his cordes, and set his Church at libertie.

And so he did with the *Midianites*; They plowed the Church for a time, (as through the whole story of the *Judges* we see) they plowed them for a certaine season, till they were plowed enough; and when they were humbled, repented, & cryed to the *Lord*, (as you shall see every where,) then saith the Text, the *Lord* heard them, and cut the cords of the wicked, he suffered them to plow no longer. But these places will be the clearer, if you compare thē with *Isa. 28. 24.* saith the *Lord* there, *Doth the Plow-man plow all the day? Rather, saith hee, when hee hath plowed enough, (marke it) when hee hath broken the clods, then hee casts in the seed, &c.* And who hath caused the plow-man to doe this: *Is it not I the Lord?* If the *Lord* hath put this wisdome into the plow-man, that he plowes not all day, but when he hath plowed the ground enough, he staves the plowe, and sowes the seed, will not the *Lord* doe so with his Church: there-  
fore,

*Isa. 28. 24.*



fore, be not discouraged, let not your hearts faile, though you see him plowing of the Church, though he suffer the enemy to prevaile against it; for in due time the *Lord* will cut their cordes. You have a cleare place for it, *Deut. 32. 35*. where speaking of the enemyes of the Church, saith he, *His foote shall slide in due time*: (that is the expression there) that is, perhaps you may complaine, and thinke it too long, but it is not too long: if it were any sooner, it would be too soone: *In due time*, saith the *Lord*, it shall be, *in due time his foote shall slide*. Yet a little while, and he that shall come, will come, and will not tarrie, it is but a little, a little time indeed. You know that is too long, that carries beyond the appointed time, beyond that measure, that should be set to it: when the *Lord* doth it in due time, it is not too long. *Hee that shall come*, that is, hee that shall surely come, will come; and will not tarrie, that is, hee will not tarry a jot beyond the due time and season, that season, that is fittest for the Church, and for the enemyes of the Church.

And as I say for the enemyes of the Church, so I may likewise say for the righteous man, *The latter end of the righteous shall be peace*; hee may have trouble for a time, but *his end shall be peace*. Be not therefore discouraged, howsoever *God* may deale with thee by the way, yet you know what end he made with *Iob*: That expression you have in *Iam. 5. 11*. You know the case of *Iob*, and you know what end the *Lord* made with him; so I may say of every righteous man.

You

*Deut. 32. 35*

Gods time is a due time.

*Job. 10. 37*

Instances of the godly rewarded in due season.

*James 5. 11.*



You know *Iacob* had many troubles, troubles when he was with *Laban*, troubles with the *Shechemites*, troubles with his owne sonnes; yet his latter end was peace.

*David* had many troubles, when he was young, when he was under *Sauls* government, hee was hunted as a *Flea*, or *Partridge*; after he come to the Kingdome himselfe, you know he was a man troubled a great while, there was Civill Warres, after them he was troubled with his children, after that with the rebellion of his people: and yet saith the Text, he dyed full of riches, full of honour, and full of dayes: The Lord made a good end with him: *The latter end of the righteous is peace*: that is, a man that trusteth in the *God of peace*, hee shall bee sure to have peace in the end, a man that is subject to the Kingdome of peace, that is subject to the government of *Christ*, the *Prince of peace*, it must needs be, that he must have peace in the end; for *the Kingdome of God is in righteousnes and peace*, and the government of *Christ* is the government of peace, and therefore it shall be peace in the end of him, whatsoever is in the way. Therefore, let no man be discouraged, but let this comfort him.

On the other side, another man may have peace by the way, he may have prosperity for a time, he may flourish like a greene bay-tree, but his latter end shall be miserable. As it is *Psal. 37. 37. Marke the end of the righteous man, it shall be peace: but the transgressours shall be destroyed together; the end of the wicked shall be cut of.* And therefore you see what

he

The end of the godly is peace, though they have troubles in the way.

Psal 37. 37.

he sayes of them in the verse before, *I sought him,* sayes he, *and he was not to be found,* verse. 36. As if he should say, I sought him on earth, and there he was not, I sought him in heaven, and there he was not to be found, but in hell he was, there he was to be found, otherwise there is no remembrance of them. So I say, evill men, though they have peace for a time, though they have prosperity for a time, though they spread themselves as a greene bay-tree, yet their latter end shall not bee peace, but misery. Therefore, let us not be discouraged; Nor on the other side, let not evill men be secure, let them not be encouraged to evill doing, for though the Lord spare them for a time, yet certainly they shall be punished. As Luke 13. 4. (it is an excellent place for that purpose) our Saviour saith there, *Thinke not those eighteene upon whom the Tower of Siloam fell, were greater sinners, than others, that it did not fall upon: but except you repent, you shall all likewise perrish.* The meaning of it is this, when you see strange judgements come upon the workers of iniquity, though you that are standers by have had peace and prosperity all your time; and have never been acquainted with any of these strange judgements of God, have never tasted of them, say not that your condition is better than theirs; for, saith our Saviour, you are no lesse sinners than they, perhaps you are greater, (though the Tower fell on them and not on you,) therefore, saith he, *You shall perrish.* But because it is not presently done, therefore saith the Wiseman, *The hearts of men are sett*  
in

with  
able thing  
they have place  
by the way.

rejoice  
Luke 13. 4.



Psal. 50. 21.

in them to doe evill; that is because there is not present execution, therefore either men thinke there is no God, or else they doe thinke God is like themselves: *I held my peace, and thou thoughtst I was like thy selfe, Psal. 50. 21.* Ether they thinke that there is no God, or else that he is not so just a God, as wee declare him to be. So, either they thinke sinnes not to be sinnes, or else they thinke them not so hainous, that they doe not draw so fearfull judgement after them. Thus men: because the same events are to all alike, have therefore their hearts set in them to doe evill.

The execution  
not the sen-  
teace is defer-  
red of wicked  
men.

Now for answer to that, saith the *Wiseman*, though execution be deferred, the sentence is not deferred; *The sentence is past against an evill worke*, though it be not speedily executed. As if hee should say, it is a little comfort to thee when thou hast provoked God to anger, that thou art not presently punished; for the sentence is gone out against thee, thou art an accursed man, thou art condemned and shut up in Prison, it is onely the execution that is deferred; and therefore it is that he saith, because the sentence against evill doers is not speedily executed, therefore thinke with thy selfe, whosoever thou art that imboldenest thy selfe in thy present safety, it is but a deferring of the execution, thou art not in a better condition than others, onely the judgement is executed on the one sooner, on the other later.

Instances.

See it in the sinne of *Ioab*, you know he committed the sinne of murther, when he killed *Abner*, it lay a sleepe many yeares. The sentence  
went



went out from *Gods Law*, *God* and his owne *Conscience* was a gainst him, but yet it was not executed, till he was full of gray haire; *His gray haire went downe to the grave*, not in peace, but in blood.

So likewise in the sinne of *Saul*, when hee brake the oath with the *Gibeonites*, the sinne continued forty yeares unpunished, the *Lord* suffered it; the sentence went out against him as soone as it was committed, but yet it lay asleepe; The *Lord* did not execute the sentence till forty yeares after, as we see by computation: for it was all the reigne of *David* to the latter end, and most part of *Sauls* reigne.

And so the sinne of *Shimei*, the sinne was committed long before, (yet all the time of *Dauids* reigne after his restoring, though the sentence went out against him; for he was an accursed man, the *Lord* brought that curse upon him which he had pronounced against *David*) yet it was not executed till a fit season. So, I say, it is with sin, the execution is deferred, though the sentence be not deferred. Therefore saith *Salomon*, certainly *the wicked shall not prolong his dayes*.

It is a place worth considering, *Ecles. 8. 13.* *Though a sinner doe evill an hundred times, and God prolong his dayes, yet I know it shall goe well with them that feare the Lord, and doe reverence before him: but it shall not be well with the wicked, neither shall hee prolong his dayes, hee shall be like a shadow, because he feares not before God.* This conclusion he comes to: Although, saith hee, the *Lord* deferre

Eccles. 8. 13.

*Object.*

execution, yet it shall not be well with the wicked, he shall not prolong his his dayes.

But it will be objected, That many evill men doe prolong their dayes, they live long, they live till they be old, and they live in peace.

*Answ.*

Wicked men die suddenly, though they live long.

To this I answer, That though they doe live long, yer indeede properly they are not said to prolong their dayes, because that all that while they are unripe, they are not fit for death: So that they are taken before they are fitted to go hence, so they are cut off for substance indeede in the midst of their dayes. As an Apple, though it hang on the tree long, yet if it be taken before it be full ripe, it may be said not to hang long on the tree, that is, it hangs not so long as to ripen it, it is taken away in an untimely manner, it is taken away before the season of it: So it is here, though a wicked man doe prolong his dayes, yet still he is taken away before he be ripe, before the time of gathering.

*Simile.*

And it is true on the other side, that holy men, though they be taken away betimes, yet they are taken away when they have finished their dayes, he doth prolong his dayes, though he die when he is young, because he is ripe before he is taken from the tree: he is now in a fit season. And this is the meaning of that, when he saith, *Certainely it shall goe ill with him that feares not God*, though hee doe prolong his dayes, though execution should be deferred. I should adde more, as this for another; but I will but name it.

God takes not away holy men till they be ripe.

*vse 2.*

Doth one condition fall to all, both good and bad?



bad: Then you may gather hence, that all the good things, and all the evill things that befall us in this life, they are neither truly good, nor truly evill, they are but shadowes of both: for if the *Lord* send adversitie upon good men, if hee send prosperitie to evill men; If there were true evill in adversitie, *God* would never doe it; if there were any true goodnesse in prosperity, he would never doe it: but when he dispenseth these things so promiscuously, it is an argument they are not such as men account them, they are but shadowes of good things, and of evill, *Larva & spectra, &c*, that is, they are not the substance of good things, neither of good nor evill. Let not righteous men therefore say they are miserable, when they fall into any kinde of outward miserie, whatsoever the condition be, it is not evill, if it were, it should never befall thee. Againe, let not a wicked man say, he is happy, because of his outward condition; for if it were truly good, thou shouldest never enjoy it: When *God* dispenseth those things so promiscuously, it is an argument that they are neither good nor evill, that is, that there is no substance of true good or evill in them.

And so againe, if they fall out so promiscuously, then you can judge *neither of love, nor of hatred by them*: that is, a man is not to thinke, that because the *Lord* afflicts him, therefore hee withdrawes himselfe from him; or because he gives outward prosperity to another, that therefore his hand, and his favour is with him; for you see he dispenseth these things diversly, he dispenseth

Adversity and prosperity, not truly good, nor evill.

*Vse 3.*  
Not to iudge of Gods love or hatred by outward things.



them to all in such a promiscuous manner, that you cannot say, this is proper to the one, or to the other.

*Simile.*

An Hoast may entertaine a stranger with better foode then hee gives his children, with the daintest of that hee hath, yet hee keeps the best portion for his children: and *God* may doe much for those that are strangers to him, but hee gives better prosperitie to his children, though they fare hard here, though they taste no good thing a long time, yet the portion hee reserveth for them; which portion and blessed inheritance, he of his great mercy reserve for every one of us, and conferre upon us, for the meditation of his deare Sonne,

**I E S U S C H R I S T**  
the Righteous.

( \* \* )


**So much for this time.**

---

**FINIS.**

---

**THE**



THE  
THIRD  
SERMON

ECCLESIASTES 9. II, 12.

*I returned and saw under the Sunne, that the race is not to the swift, nor the battell to the strong, nor yet bread to the wise, nor riches to men of understanding, nor yet favor to men of skill, but time and chance commeth to all.*

*For man also knoweth not his time: as the fishes that are taken in an evill net, and as the birds that are caught in the snare; so are the sonnes of men snared in an evill time, when it falleth suddenly upon them.*

**I**N last time wee spake to you, we handled the first and second verses of this Chapter; whence there may bee this objection made against Gods All-sufficiency; *All things come alike to all, to the just, and to the wicked, &c.* And in-

deed when men see this conclusion, *that it is to the wicked according to the work of the just, and to the just according to the worke of the wicked*, it must needs stand as a strong objection against the doctrine of Gods *All-sufficiency*. How that objection is answered, hath beene fully declared to you: Now there comes another objection like the former.

*Object.*

Naturall strength or weaknes disposeth not man in the event of things.

Because *all things come alike to all*, saith the *Wise-man*, (but there he names onely the good and the bad, the holy and the unholy) men will be ready to say, (as every man is) howsoever holinesse and unholinesse makes not this difference in the event of things, yet the naturall strength of men, their naturall weaknesse, their naturall ability, or their inability, their wisdome or their folly, that disposeth or indisposeth men in the event of things. And therefore the *Wise-man*, when he had finished that former conclusion whereof we spake, (that there is one event to the good and bad) hee falls upon the second vanity that hee saw under the Sunne, that *all things come alike to all*, that is, not onely to the holy and unholy, but likewise to those that have naturall strength, and those that are subject to naturall weaknesse, even in this case also, saith he, *all things come alike to all*.

For *I have seene that the race is not alwayes to the swift*, but sometimes to him that is not swift; *the battaile is not alwayes to the strong*, but sometimes to him that is weak; *and bread, and favour, and riches, are not alwayes to men of understanding and skill*, but sometimes to men that are weake, and foolish, and want skill, &c.



I have chosen this Text, that I may adde this to the other, that even in those things also, *All things come alike to all.*

Then there is another caution to be used, and to be taken heed of in this doctrine of *Gods All-sufficiency*. Though *God* dispense his comforts to them that serve him with a perfect heart, yet there are certaine times to be observed by the sons of men, and if you misse of those *times that are allotted to every purpose and action*, if these be hid from men, if men take not their opportunity, though *God* be ready to dispense his blessings, to those that seeke him, yet that occasion makes men misse of them: therefore it is that hee saith in the twelfth verse, *Man knowes not his time, that is, there is a time for every purpose, and action, and if he take that time, he shall be successfull; but if that be hidden from him, and he take it not, evill times fall upon him, as the snare upon the birds, and as the net upon the fishes.*

Now for the particular opening of these words:

First, we are to consider the phrase here used in the beginning, *I returned and saw*, saith he, *under the Sun, that the race is not to the swift, &c.* That is, as if he should say, when I looked about me, and turned my selfe every way, and looked upon the whole frame of the creatures, I saw a vanity even in every corner, in every place, I saw a vanity even in the things that seeme least to be subject to vanity. Whence we will gather this point, that,

*All things under the Sunne, even the best, are subject to vanity.*

Let a man turne himselfe which way hee will,

We must observe Gods times.

*Doct.*  
All things under the Sunne are subject to vanity.

he shall finde *vanitie and vexation of spirit* in every creature, and in every condition and state, in all the purposes, in all the actions and affaires of men: *I returned*, saith he, and which way soever I looked, which way soever I turned mee, I still saw vanity. So it was with *Salomon*, and so it must needs be with us all, if our judgements be guided as his was by the Spirit of *God*.

I  
Natural things

If you looke upon the course of naturall things, you shall see a vanity in them: saith the *Wiseman*, *The Rivers come and goe, and the windes passe and come about by their circuits, and one generation goeth, and another cometh*: That is, in all these workes of *God*, in these workes of nature, which seeme not to be subject to vanitie, yet if you looke upon them, you shall finde a vanitie in them, they have no rest nor quiet, they are all subject to corruption, *One generation goes, and another comes*.

I  
They are rest-  
lesse.

2  
There is no-  
thing new.

Againe, there is no new thing in them, that if a man studie to finde out something to satisfie his minde, hee shall soone come to a bottome, and nothing will give him satisfaction; and therefore there is a vanity: for that which is restlesse can never give us rest, that which is subject to corruption can never give us that happines which is immortall and eternall; in these things there is no newnesse; *The eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the eare with hearing*.

2  
Mortall thinks  
Wisedome.

If you goe from that, and looke upon other things that seeme to be least subject to vanitie, as wisedome and knowledge: It is true, these seeme to be least subject to vanity, and the *Wiseman* ac-  
know-



knowledgeth it; for, saith he, *Wisdom is better than folly, as light is better than darknesse*: yet there is a vanity in that: for first, there is a wearinesse in getting it: Againc, there is a grieffe in having, in using and enjoying it: for a wiseman sees much amisse, but *that which is crooked hee cannot make straight*. To see *evill under the Sunne*, and not to be able to amend it, it doth but increase a mans sorrow; and that is the wisemans miserie.

Againc, saith hee, *The same condition is to the wise, as to the foolish, as the one dyes, so dyes the other*; as the one is subject to sicknesse, so is the other, as the one is subject to crosses, afflictions, and changes, so is the other: and therefore there is a vanity in that.

Now for the perfection of workes, for the doing of those things that are indeede commendable, good, and praise-worthy, is this also subject to vanity? Yes, saith *Salomon, Eccles. 4. 4. I looked, and beheld the travailes of men in the perfection of workes, and I finde this also to be the envie of a man against his neighbour*: That is, this vanity it hath in it, that a man shall not have praise and love answerable to the perfection of his worke, but he shall find the contrary, he shall have much envie for it: it shall cause the envie of a man against his neighbour.

But take places of great aothority, wherein a man hath much opportunity to doe good, as Princes, Magistrates, and Rulers; *This also is a vanity: I have scene men rulling one over another, sayes the Wiseman, to their hurt, to the hurt of the Ruler,* and

I

There is a wearinesse in getting it.

2

Griefe in using it.

3

It freeth not from misery

2

Commendable actions.  
Eccles. 4. 4.

Are envied.

3

Great places.



and to the hurt of them that are ruled. So that all things under the Sun, looke which way you will, they are subject to vanitie, as these which here he names, for a man to make himselfe strong, for a man to get wisdom, and skill, and to be diligent in his businesse, &c. For let a man use the likeliest meanes to bring his enterprises to passe, yet, saith *Salomon*, *I have scene, that the battaile is not to the strong, nor favour to men of knowledge, nor bread to the wise, nor riches to men of understanding.* So that which way soever hee turned himselfe, still there is a vanity. We will make some brieve use of it, and so come to the next point.

*Vse I.*

To see the change sinne hath made in the world.

If there be so much vanity under the Sunne, that even the best things, (those that seeme to be most free from it) are subject to vanity, then,

First, let us consider hence, what a change sinne hath made in the world: The time was, when the *Lord* looked upon all things, and he saw, that *they were all exceeding good*: but now when the *Lord* looketh upon them, and the *Wiseman* looketh upon them with the same eye, they are all *subject to vanity*. And whence hath this proceeded, but because sinne hath blowne upon the Creatures, as it were, it hath blasted them, it hath taken away the vigour, the vertue, the beauty, the excellency of them? And if sinne hath made this change, then consider, that the more sinne there is, the more these things are subject to vanity.

In every mans particular use, you shall finde this true: as in riches, a man that is sinfull shall not have comfort from them, but *vexation of spi-*

rit, hee shall finde a vanity and emptinesse in them. And so for wisdom, learning, knowledge, and skill, the more sinne, the more vanity is in them: Every man shall finde this in all the creatures under the Sunne.

As on the other side, the more grace, the more substance you shall finde in them, and the lesse vanity: for that which immediatly brings the vanity is the curse, and sinne the immediate cause of every curse: I say the immediate cause of vanity is the curse of *God*. When *God* bids such a thing wither, when hee bids it not prosper with such a man, when hee bids it doe him no good, (as he bade the fig-tree wither) that makes every thing vaine to a man, even the curse that lyes upon the creature, and sinne is the cause of every curse.

Sinne the cause of every curse.

Againe, that which gives a substance, that which gives a filling to the creatuer, that which causeth it to give downe that milke of comfort which is in it, is the blessing of *God* upon it, when *God* shall say to such a creature, goe and doe such a man good; it is the blessing which doth it immediatly, but grace is the cause of the blessing. Therefore let us looke on sinne, as the cause of all this vanity, and on grace, as the cause of the contrary; let us labour to excell in the one, and to resist the other. So much for this first use.

Secondly, if there be such a vanity in all things under the Sun, then surely hee that hath brought this vanity upon them must needs bee much more vaine. For what causeth this vanity that  
lyeth

Use 2.  
To see the vanity of man.

lyeth upon the whole face of the creature? is it not man? It came not upon the creature, (as you know) for its owne sake, but by man: why then, surely man, who hath beene the cause of all this vanity, must needs be himselfe much more vaine. Therefore if a man looke upon himselfe, let him consider this, that he shall never finde any happinesse within his owne compasse or circle; If hee will needs build himselfe upon his owne bottom, he is subject to vanitie, and more than any other creature besides: Therefore let us learne to goe out of our selves, and seek it elsewhere.

Againe, if you seek for any comfort from man, from friends, from great men, remember they are vaine, and more vaine than any other creature: as in *Psal. 62. 9.* *All men are vaine, and great men are lyers, if they bee laid in the ballance, they are lighter than vanitie:* that is, in all the sons of men there is a vanitie, and the greater they are, the more vanity is in them; not that they are in themselves more vaine, but because wee expect more from great men, therefore to us they are lighter than vanity, they are more vaine than all other men. Therefore let us neither seeke that in our selves, nor in other men: for they that cause the vanity upon the creatures, themselves must needs be much more subject to vanitie.

Thirdly, if the creature be subject to vanity, then consider what an evill choice wee make, to lose heaven to lose grace, to lose the opportunity of growing rich in good workes, for any thing under the Sunne, either for riches, or vain-glory

*Psal. 62. 9.*

Why great men  
are more vaine  
than others.

*Vse 3.*

It is an ill  
choice to lose  
heaven to gain  
the creature.



glorie and praise of men, for pleasures, or whatsoever men reckon precious, and pleasant to them under the Sunne. For if they be all vanity, what a change doe wee make? doe wee not give gold away for drosse? as our Saviour expresseth it, *Luke 16. 26.* Put the case *a man had all the world, and lose his soule*, that is if he neglect the things that belong to his salvation, and for the neglect of them shall have in recompence whatsoever the world can afford him, so that hee wants nothing that the world hath, yet, saith he, *What shall it profit him?* that is, there is a vanity in it, it will be altogether unprofitable to him. For to bee vaine, and to be unprofitable, is all one. Consider then what a foolish change men make, when *they draw sin on with cartropes*, that is, when they use their utmost strength to get these vaine things to them, with the losse of better things: what a change doe they make, although they should get the whole world, seeing all would be unprofitable, that is, they should find nothing but vanity and emptinesse, and vexation of spirit in it.

Aaine, if all things be subject to vanity, learne we then, first not to covet after earthly things; not to set our heart upon it, nor to desire it over much when wee want it. And secondly, when we have it, not to be confident, nor to trust too much to it, not to rejoyce in it too inordinarily. For it is but vanitie, there is an emptinesse in it, it will deceive us as a broken reede. Thirdly, if *God* doe take from us any of those earthly things, as riches credit, health, or friends, let us be content to  
part

Luke 16. 26.

*Vse. 4.*

Not to desire them overmuch.

2

Not to trust them overmuch

3

Not to grieve overmuch at the losse of them

part with them: For even the best of them are vanitie, subject to emptinesse, such as will not performe that which they promise, such as will deceive us when we come to use them.

Use 5.

Labour to be weaned from them, and to feare God, and keepe his commandements.

Last of all, (because this is not the point I intend to stand upon) if all things under the Sunne be subject to vanitie, (even those that seeme to be least subject unto it) then let us labour to have our hearts weaned from the world, and whatsoever is in the world, to make it our whole businesse to *feare God, and keepe his Commandements*. You know that is the maine use that the wise man makes of this whole booke; it is all but an explication of the particular vanities which he found under the Sun, and the use that he makes of it is this; Therefore, saith he, *The whole dutie of man is to feare God, and keepe his commandements*. I beseech you marke that expression, for therein wee are exceeding apt to deceive our selves: A man is content to doe something that tends to *Gods* worship, and to the Salvation of his soule, but to make it his whole worke, to have all the water to runne in that channell, to have his minde altogether intent upon it, he is not willing to doe so, but he joynes other things with it, because there is a secret leaning of the heart, and an unweaned lingering after some other vanity. It is certaine, that when the heart is weaned from all things, *under the Sun*, a man will make it then his whole businesse to *feare God, and keepe his Commandements*: but because the heart is false in this, it hath some thing else that it is set upon. Some men thinke that

Men content to serve God in part.



that wisdom and knowledge, increase of skill in such a particular Science, Trade and profession, that that is not subject to vanity, and so it may be his heart is set upon that; and this is enough to keepe a man from making it his whole dutie to feare *God*, and keepe his Commandements.

Another man perhaps neglects this, but to gather in an estate, to strengthen himselfe that way, to bottome himselfe well upon a good estate, this hee thinkes is not subject to vanitie, as other things, and this therefore his heart is set upon; though hee see vanitie in some other things, yet this his heart is set upon: and this is enough to keepe him from making it his whole dutie to feare *God*, and keepe his Commandements. And thus wee might goe through many instances. Let every man therefore search his owne heart; (for when a man takes not this whole dutie, some thing or other deceives him, a vanitie that hee yee see not.) I say, the best things be subject to vanitie; if which way soever the *Wiseman* turneth himselfe, they were subject to vanitie, it is fit wee should learne then to make it our whole dutie to set all our thoughts and affections upon this, how wee may *grow in grace*, how wee may *feare God*, and keepe his Commandements.

Lastly, a man may by this try himselfe, whether he hath done it, or no: For as *Salomon*, when he grew wise, after his repentance, he saw a *vanity in all things under the Sun*: so a man, when his heart is once changed, he will see a vanitie in all things. If there be any thing wherein thou seeest not a  
vanitie

*Vse 6.*  
Of tryall.  
To see vanity  
in all earthly  
things.



vanitie, it is an argument thou art not yet a new creature. *Paul saith, Now know we no man after the flesh: for whosoever is in Christ, is a new creature: as if he should say, when any man is a new creature, he looketh upon all things under the Sunne with another eye, hee judgeth of them with another judgement, and therefore if thou finde it otherwise, if thou looke upon the world, or upon any thing in the world, as upon things that are precious, that is a signe that Satan hath bewitched thee. You know it was one of the witcheries that he attempted upon our Saviour, Hee shewed him all the world the Kingdomes and the glorie of it: and so hee doth to every man more or lesse, hee shewes him some thing or other, and if a man doe not see the emptinesse and vanity of them, but sees a glorie in them, he hath yeilded to Satan who hath bewitched him, and prevailed ouer him: and therefore when you looke on every thing under the Sunne, riches, credit, wisdom, skill, knowledge, if you looke on all as on flowers, if you see a vanity and an emptines in them, that is a signe you are now changed, that you are now turned to God by unfained repentance, that you see a vanity in all things under the Sunne. So much for this point.*

*I returned and saw under the Sunne, saith he, that the race is not to the swift, nor the battell to the strong, nor yet bread to the wise, nor riches to men of understanding, nor yet favor to men of knowledge, but time and chance commeth to all.*

The

The next point that wee are to observe in these words, is this; that

*Men of the greatest abilities, men of the greatest sufficiencies, are often disappointed of their hopes and ends.* This is a *vanity under the Sunne*, and not so onely, but men that are more weake, and insufficient, doe obtaine their ends and hopes. For you must understand it reciprocally, the battell is not alwayes to the strong, therefore it is sometimes to the weake; riches are not alwayes to men of understanding, therefore they are often to men that have no understanding.

The opening of this point will be best done in shewing the reasons and grounds of it, why it comes to passe that men of the greatest abilities, have not alwayes successe answerable to that sufficiency that is in them.

And first, one cause of it is, because there is no creature, that is, or ever shall bee strong in his owne strength: *In his owne strength shall no man be strong, 1. Sam. 2. 9.* A creature in it selfe hath not so much abilitie, although it be never so well furnished, as to bring any enterprise to passe. There is more required than the simple strength of the creature, be it never so strong, because in every enterprise there are many wheeles, many things that must concurre to bring it to passe. Now a creature is not able to see all the wheeles, that are in every businesse, or if he doe see them, he is not able to turne every wheele, but this belongs to *God*. And therefore without his concurring with the creature, be the creature never

*Doct. 2*  
Men of greatest abilities disappointed of their ends.

*Reason 1*  
No man strong in his owne strength  
1 Sam. 2. 9.



1 Sam. 2. 3.

so strong, he shall not bee able to get the battell, be he never so swift, he shall not be able to winne the race; bee hee never so great in skill and understanding, hee shall not get favour, nor riches. This you may see, 1 Sam. 2. 3. where *Hannah* gives this counsell in her song, *Speake no more presumptuously, neither let arrogancy come out of your mouth; for the Lord is a God of knowledge, by him enterprises are established: As if shee had said, if any man say hee is able to bring an enterprife to passe, hee speakes presumptuously, hee takes more to himselfe, than hee is able to performe: The Lord is onely a God of knowledge, that is the reason of it; and therefore by him onely, and not by any mans strength, enterprises are established. The Lord is a God of knowledge: As if shee had said, men have not so much knowledge and wisdom, as to looke through a businesse, to see all the circumstances of it; to behold all the ingredients in it, all the wheeles that must concurre to bring it to passe: The Lord onely is a God of knowledge, and therefore by him enterprises are established. And this was that I said, that the creatures insufficiency, was partly, because they are not able to see all: And partly againe it is, because though they doe see all the wheeles that goe to make up an enterprife, yet they are not able to turne them: As you may see Psal. 33. 16. *The king is not saved by the multitude of an host, neither is a mighty man deliuered by his great strength: A Horse is a vaine thing to save a man, hee shall not deliver any by his great strength. Though a man doe see, and though he**

I  
The Creature  
is ignorant,

2

It is weake.  
Psal. 33. 16.

can



can say, such a wheele is necessary, yet it is not in his owne power to use it.

An host is a great meanes to get a battaile, yet, saith he, be an host never so strong, that is not enough. But what if hee have valiant men and souldiers? Yet that will not doe it, a mighty man is not delivered by his great strength. I, but what if hee have horses and chariots? &c. Let the instrument be what it will be, *A horse is a vain helpe*, that is, except the *Lord* concurre with that host, and turne that great wheele, except hee be with those valiant men, except hee concurre with the strength of the horse and of the chariot, all this is not able to doe it. Therefore, I say, this is one reason, why the battaile is not to the strong, nor riches to men of understanding, because the creature of himselfe is not able to doe it, in its owne strength, excluding *Gods* helpe, he is not able to bring an enterprise to passe.

This likewise may bee added to that, that, though the creature should have a strength, though a man should have all thing ready, that hee should bee furnished with preparations of all sorts, so that nothing should be wanting to bring an enterprise to passe, yet at the very time, at the very instant, when the thing is to be done, it is not in his power to make use of them, because at that very time, *God often takes wisdom from the wise*, and courage from them that are otherwise valiant; hee takes from them their abilities, even at that time hee takes off the chariot wheelés, even when they are driving of them; which plaine-

3

God can take away the use of the strength they have.

Amos. 2. 14, 15  
16.

ly proveth, that the Creature of himselfe is not able to doe it: As we see, *Amos 2. 14, 15, 16.* saith hee, *The swift shall perish from the swift, and the strong shall not strengthen his forces, neither shall the mighty save his life, hee that handleth the bow shall not stand, and he that is swift of foot shall not deliver himselfe, neither shall he that rideth the horse deliver himselfe, and he of mighty courage among the strong men shall fly away naked in that day:* That is, Be they never so strong, be they never so swift, never so full of courage, at the very time when they have occasion to use it, the Lord will take away that swiftnesse, hee will take away that courage, he will take away that wisdome, and suggest it, it may be, to the adversary; and how then shall they prevaile? So that though a man were never so well prepared to bring an enterprize to passe, as when a man purposeth in his heart, and hath laid all things ready, this will I speake, yet *the answer of the mouth comes from God*, whatsoever his preparations and purposes be. So in the actions and affaires of men, though he make his preparations never so strong, yet at the very instant *God* often takes courage from those that are most valiant, and suggesteth it to those that are most cowardly; hee takes away wisdome, when they have most occasion to use it, and gives it to the adversaries, that otherwise are more foolish than they. This is the first cause of it.

Reason 2.  
Men misse  
their times.

A second cause is this; because there is a certaine time and opportunity, that a man must take to bring an enterprize to passe; and though a man  
be



be never so strong, and never so wise, yet he may misse of those opportunities, and so he loseth the battaile, he loseth the bringing to passe of his enterprife. And this we see is the reason that is rendered, *Eccles. 8. 5, 6. The heart of the wise is to know the time, and judgement, because to every purpose there is a time and a judgement; therefore the miserie of man is great upon him*: That is, to every action, and to every purpose, there is a certaine opportunity; and be a man never so well fitted, yet if he misse of that opportunity, he shall not bring his enterprife to passe; *Therefore saith he, the miserie of man is great upon him*: for hee neither knowes himselfe what that opportunity is, neither can any man tell him, as it is in verse 7. And because it is not within the power of a man, it is not within his compasse to find out these seasons and opportunities for every purpose and action; hence it is, that though they bee never so well prepared, though they have never so much sufficiency, and ability to bring such an enterprife to passe, yet they misse of it, because they discern not of the time.

Eccles. 8. 5, 6.

Thirdly, this comes to passe, because *God* hath appointed a certaine variety and change of condition to the sonnes of men; and there is no mans wisdom, riches, or strength, that is able to defend him from *Gods* appointment. I say, *God* hath appointed a certaine change of condition to all the sonnes of men, he hath appointed such crosses and afflictions, he hath appointed such times, (as the *holy Ghost* speaks) to passe over their heads,

*Reason 3.*  
From the changes appointed by God.



and all the wisdom, and strength, that a man hath, is not able to turne *God* from his purpose, it is not able to evacuate, & to frustrate his decrees, but they shall come to passe. And that is the meaning of this in the text: (for I take this reason out of the Text.) The translation is, *But time and chance cometh to all*: It were, I suppose, better translated, (and agrees with the originall,) *For time and chance commeth to all*. Now by time in the Text is meant that variety of condition, that *God* hath appointed to every man under the Sunne, as *David* useth the word, *Psal. 31. 15. My times are in thy hands*: My times, that is, the variety of conditions, the changes of my life, the good and evill, the prosperity and adversitie that befalls me, saith he, they are not in the hands of my enemies, nor in my owne hands, but they are in thy hands. I say, there the word is so used, and so we are to understand it in this place; for time comes to all, saith he; that is, when *God* hath appointed such changes to the states of men, if riches, if strength, if wisdom, diligence, or skill, were able to turne the counsells of *God* another way, if it were able to anticipate them, or to divert them, then the battaile might be to the strong, &c. but saith he, it is not so; What *God* hath appointed, they cannot alter. you shall see it in many examples.

*Instances.*

*Saul* was well established, but when *God* had appointed a change of his Kingdome, that it should go from him to *David*, you see he brought it to passe: Though he were as strong as a *Lyon*, as *David* testifieth of him, though he had many chil-

children to inherit the Crowne, though the people clave fast to him, (you doe not finde that ever they rose up in rebellion against him) yet when *God* had appointed such a time to passe over him and his house, all that strength, all that finnes and preparation that was in him, and his family, to continue the Kingdome to his posterity, it could not turne aside *Gods* Counsell, but it came to passe.

*Ely* had a great family, there were many Priests of his line; yet when *God* had said hee would cut off from *Ely* his whole family, and would turne the Priesthood to another, you see how he found out meanes to bring it to passe; how many Priests were kild in one day by *Doeg* in the time of *Saul*? And afterwards, when *Abiathar*, one of that posterity, was tooke in by *David*, yet he was cast out by *Salomon*, through an accident that fell out in his adherence to *Adonijah*:

*Abab*, the *Lord* had said he would cut him off and his posterity, though he had seventy sonnes; you might wonder how it should come to passe, that none of these sonnes should inherit the Crowne, and yet all were cut off, and not a man left, by the hand of *Iehu*. When *God*, I say, hath appointed variety of changes, times, and conditions to the sonnes of men, mans strength is not able to divert his Counsell; and therefore the *battaile is not to the strong, &c.*

The last reason is likewise here used, and *chance commeth to them all*: That is, though a man be never so able, never so sufficient, never so well pre-

Reason. 4  
From sodaine accidents.

pared to bring an enterprife to passe, yet some accident may turne it some other way, an accident that hee can neither foresee nor prevent: Therefore saith the *holy Ghost*, though hee be never so wise, chance may happen to him, he can neither foresee all the accidents that come to passe, or, if he should, he knowes not how to prevent them.

*Ahab*, for ought we see, went well enough to the battaile, *Iehoshaphat*, and he; yet, saith the text, a man drew a bow at adventure, &c. (which accident he could not foresee,) the man ayimed no more at *Ahab*, nor understood it no more than the arrow that he shot, but it was a meere accident directed by *God*, that he could not foresee.

*Haman* thought hee had made his preparation strong enough to bring his enterprife to passe, to overthrow the *Iewes*; there came an accident betweene, the King could not sleepe, he calls for the booke of the *Chronicles*, and turnes to that place where *Mordecai's* discovery of a treason was recorded, and so *Mordecai* was advanced, &c. This was a chance that befell him; although he were never so wel fitted to bring his enterprife to passe, yet this he could neither foresee, nor prevent. Many such instances we might give.

So you see now the reason of this, that men of the greatest sufficiency and ability, men that have made their preparations most perfect, yet they do not alwayes attaine to their hopes and ends: And contrariwise, men that are more weake and unable, which have not made such preparations, they obtaine their hopes and ends.

The



The use wee make of it, is:

First let men learne from hence, not to boast of any outward strength, of any wisdom, in that their foundation is made strong under them, that they are well bottomed, that they are thus compassed about with friends, and estate, &c. For you see, though a man intends to get by all things, yet the event and successe comes not to passe accordingly, but oft they faile and disappoint him. Therefore let not men boast of them, be a man never so strong, never so wise, yet hee may as soone faile as he that is weake, and most foolish.

See an example of it in *Asa*, 2 *Chron.* 14. 6, 7, 8. You may see there how he built the Citties, he had made him strong Bulwarkes: There was not a King of *Iudah* that wee reade of, that had strengthened himselfe more than he; he had five hundred and fourescore thousand valiant men, all well armed and appointed to bare the shield and speare: (the text sets it downe very particularly, that wee might see *Asa's* safety, his strength, and his security, if you looke upon the creature) yet, saith the Text, the *Ethiopians* came against him with ten hundred thousand men. Whence I gather this; That there is no man so safe and so strong, but he is still subject to danger; and that partly by reason of the vanity of the creature. For all the strength that a man hath, it is but the strength of the creature; and the creature is made of such brittle ingredients, that of it selfe it is ready to moulder away and faile. There is not  
in

*Vse.*

Not to boast  
of outward  
things.

2 *Chron.* 14.  
6, 7, 8.

in the creature it selfe any stability, they are but houses of clay, the best of the creatures; that is, they are made of mouldring mettall, they are ready to vanish of themselves, and if they were not, yet there is something stronger. Let a man be never so strong, ( who is the best of all the creatures, ) yet man is but as the grasse, and as the flower of the grasse. The grasse of it selfe oft times fades, though no sithe come neere it, but if it doe not fade of it selfe, yet it is cut downe: so there is none so strong, but there may be stronger. *Asa* was strong, but he met with one that was stronger than he, the *Lubims* and *Ethiopians*; and yet as strong as they were, they met with one that was stronger than they, because *God* did helpe him, and assist him: so then let no man boast of himselfe.

No safety  
from outward  
things.

If wisdom would keepe a man safe, *Salomon* had never fallen as he did. If possessions would keepe a man safe, *Ieroboam* and *Ahab* had never been ruined, as they were. If the favour of Princes could keepe a man safe, *Haman* had not had that miserable end that he had. If courage, fortitude and valour could keepe a man safe, *Ioah* and *Abner* had continued safe: but you know how they both fell. So that you see nothing under the Sunne is able to keepe a man safe. Therefore let not a man boast in any thing that he hath, be he never so well appointed, let him have all the creatures agree together, to make a hedge about him, yet afflictions, crosses and troubles will finde some gap or other into that hedge, to breake in upon

upon him. All things that he hath are subject to mutability; Riches take themselves wings, and fly away: that is, though a man thinke they are sure, hee cannot see how he could easily be dispossessed of them; yet, saith hee, they are as a flocke of birds, that sit in a mans ground, he cannot promise himselfe any certainty of them, because they have wings, and will fly away; such are riches. And so credit; be a man never so innocent, let him give no occasion at all, let him keepe himselfe never so blamlesse, and *unspotted of the world*, yet his credit is not in his owne keeping, *Honor est in potestate honorantis, &c.* Honour is not in a mans owne power. You know though *Ioseph* was very innocent, yet he was blamed, and so *David* and *Christ*. And as it is said of honour, so it may bee of all the rest, wealth, and friends, and whatsoever a man hath; let no man boast himselfe because he is a strong man, because he is of understanding, because he is rich, because he is of ability in his busines, because he is a man of skill, for by these things he shall not obtaine his hopes and ends.

*Simile.*

Nay, my *Beloved*, let me be bolde to adde this. If a man begin to thinke him selfe safe for these, and to grow Confident upon them, and say thus with himselfe and his owne heart, well, now I am thus and thus rooted, I am now compassed about with these and these helpes, I see not now how I should be removed; let him know this, that *God* will so much the rather blow upon him, that he will so much the rather dissettle him, and take him off,  
that



God delights  
to crosse men  
in carnall con-  
fidence.

I

To maintaine  
his owne right

1 Sam. 17. 47.

that he will so much the rather *turne away his face,*  
*and he shall be troubled.*

I say, *God* will doe it so much the rather, partly,  
because that successe of things is his, and when a  
man will begin to challenge it to himselfe, *God*  
will begin then to looke to his owne right, and  
challenge his owne priviledge. You shall finde in  
1 *Sam.* 17. 47. *David* gives this reason, why hee  
should prevaile against *Goliath*, it is not I, but the  
*battell*, saith hee, *is the Lords*: As if he should say,  
if the battaile were mine, or thine, it may be, *Go-  
liath*, thou mightest prevaile against mee, it may  
be thou mightest overcome mee, but the battaile  
is the *Lords*. So we may say in this case: The event  
and successe of things, the good and evill that  
comes to a man, upon that preparation and en-  
deavour that he makes, it is the *Lords*, and not a-  
ny mans, nor any creatures. Therefore when a-  
man challengeth it to himselfe, and boasts of it,  
and thinkes I will doe this, the *Lord* will not do  
it, the battaile is his: and as it is said of the bat-  
taile, so all things else are his; and therefore he  
will not dispose them according to mans prepa-  
ration, but disposeth of them according to his  
owne purpose.

2

To shew his  
power.

Againe, *God* will doe it the rather, that he might  
shew forth his own power, & discover the Crea-  
tures weaknesse, especiall when a Creature shall  
pride it selfe in any of these outward things, as  
*Asabel* did in his swiftnesse, it was the cause of his  
overthrow; and indeed *God* usually takes men in  
such things, when they begin to boast, I shall now  
have

have the battaile, because I am strong. These things, I say, are commonly their ruine. The policie of *Achitophel*, the haire of *Absolom*; and so many a mans wealth, many a mans wit, that thing wherein their strength lyes, wherein they boast themselves, *God* causeth to be the meanes of their ruine: hee takes them in these things, that hee might discover his owne power, and the vanity and weaknesse of the Creature.

Againe, The *Lord* doth it so much the rather, when men grow in confidence of their owne strength, that he might manifest his owne providence; and therefore he puts in many accidents, which turne things another way. It is true, when men goe well prepared to the battaile, and doe overcome, there is a providence of *God* in that, as well as when they get the battaile by some chance or accident; but by reason of the infirmite of man, by reason of the injudiciousnesse that he is subject unto, they doe not so much acknowledge this providence in an ordinary course, as they doe in accidentall things, that are done by occasion, by sodaine intercurrent causes, that we are not able to foresee. Therefore, I say, *God* delights to doe it so much the rather, when men are prepared and say with themselves, What should hinder? what should keepe mee from bringing such an enterprize to passe? *God* therefore puts in some accident, and turnes it another way, that his providence might bee seene and acknowledged. Therefore let none boast themselves, that this and this will I doe, because I am strong;

for

The things men boast of are oft the cause of their ruine.

3

To shew his providence.



for *God* will turne all a contrary way. So much for the first use.

*Vse 2.*  
Not to be discouraged in want of preparation.

Secondly, as men are not to boast themselves, when they are strong; so likewise if the battaile be not alwayes to the strong, but at some times also to the weake, let no man be discouraged because he is weake, because he is unprepared, because hee is not so well furnished to bring such an enterprize to passe. For as there are certaine times that *God* will have to passe over men for their evill, (that be a man never so strong, as he hath appointed his change and condition, so it shall come to passe) so also there is a certaine time that *God* hath appointed for other mens good and advancement: when a man is weake and low, his weaknesse and folly, and inability, shall no more frustrate, turne aside, and prevent his advancement, when *God* will bring it upon him, than the strength or wisdom of the other shall turne away *Gods* decree, and prevent the counsell of *God* against him.

I  
Because weaknesse cannot frustrate *Gods* purpose.

2  
*Gods* hand is then most seen.

Besides, when man is weake, *God* puts in an accident, that he may have the praise of of his providence, that men may say he hath done it; whereas if things went in ordinary course, they might ascribe it to the second causes.

3  
*God* hath more glory in that case.

Againe, the *Lord* rather delights to doe it, even when men are weake, because therein his glory is most seen, hee delights to manifest his power in our weaknesse. And therefore *Paul*, when hee saw this, he saith, he will rejoyce in his infirmities: That is, he thought his infirmities would be



a very great advantage to him, partly, because they would keepe him humble, that is one reason. And partly, because he thought that *God* would the rather put forth his power, because hee was weake, that he should the rather have *Gods* power to uphold him. Therefore, I say, let not men be discouraged for their weaknesse, be the adversaries never so strong, and their resolutions never so fixed, yet they shall not prevaile, if *God* have purposed otherwise.

You see how peremptory *Iezabels* speech was, *God doe soe and so, &c. if I make not Eliah as as one of Prophets of Baal by to morrow this time:* yet you see he was safe notwithstanding this.

God defeats  
mans purpose

Thus was it also when the *Jewes* had vowed with themselves the death of *Paul*, he was in great danger, there was forty to one, and their resolution was so strong, as it could not be altered; yet *God* kept him safe, hee prevailed, and they were disappointed.

So *Elisha*, when the King thought to have taken off his head, though hee had the power of a King, and his purpose was firme, that it should come to passe, to a full height, there was no doubt made of it, yet *God* kept him safe.

Therefore let us be encouraged on the other side that are weake, *God* is able to hide us, he is able to strengthen us, to give us advantage and successe, when we are unable to helpe our selves: for as it is true, *that the battaile is not alwayes to the strong, nor favour to the wise, &c.* So it is true on the  
the

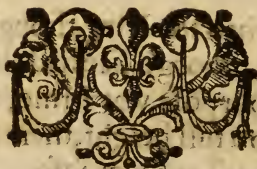
the other side, that many times when men are not strong, when men are not wise, when they mannage not their businesse with that prudence, warinesse, and circumspection that they should doe, yet oftentimes they have successe, when the other want it.

(\*\*\*)

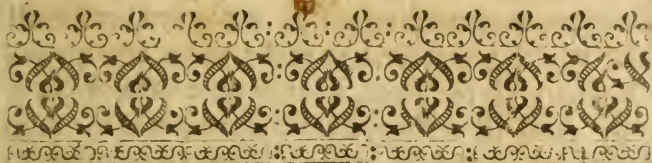
---

**FINIS.**

---



**THE**



# THE FOURTH SERMON

ECCLESIASTES 9. II, 12.

*I returned and saw under the Sunne, that the race is not to the swift, nor the battell to the strong, &c.*



Ou know where we left, we proceed to that which remaines.

In the third place, If men of the greatest sufficiency and ability may often be disappointed, that the battaile is not alwayes to the strong, nor the race to the swift: This should teach us then not to be lifted up, but to be thankfull in our best successe; and on the contrary, not to be overmuch dejected, but to beare it patiently; when things speed ill. If any man have good successe in any businessse and enterprise, hee is not to attribute it to his owne strength, to his owne wisdom, since that, as you see, so often failes.

*Vse 3.*

Not to be over  
ioyfull or sor-  
rowfull for  
good or ill suc-  
cesse.



The Lord must  
be acknowledged  
in good  
successe.

Why wee are  
more forward  
in prayer, than  
in praise

The creature hath not power enough in it selfe to bring an enterprife to passe, it can neither see all the wheelles that tend to make up an enterprife; or though it see them, it is not able to turne them all. And therefore, if it be done, it is the *Lord* that doth it, and the praise is onely to be given to him.

This is a necessary point. It is useuall with us to be very earnest with *God*, when a businesse is to bee done; but wee forget to praise him afterwards. And whence procedes this, but from a secret attribution of what is dona to our own wit, to our owne strength, to our owne pollicy, to other occasions? Whereas if it were acknowledged, wee should be ready to give him the praise of all that we doe.

1 Sam. 18.

*David* was a wise man, yet you shall finde, 1 Sam. 18. hee did not therefore carry himselfe wisely in all his affaires, because he had a habituall gift of wisdome, but, saith the text, *Because the Lord was with him.* The *Lord* was with him, to guide him in every action, to direct him what to doe upon every particular occasion; and thence it was, that he carried himselfe wisely in all his affaires.

*Cyrus* was a valiant man, and a potent, yet the Scripture attributes it not to his strength, that he prevailed as he did, but saith, that hee was *Gods Shepheard*, he was his instrument, it was *God* that used him, it was *God* that wrought this worke for him.

*Nebuchadnezzar* was a mighty potent Prince,  
and

and prevailed which way soever he turned himselfe, yet *God* tells him, it was he that gave him dominion and victory wheresoever hee went.

And as it is true on this hand, so it is likewise on the other, when a man hath ill successe in any busines, let him not say, it was because he did not mannage it wisely, because he had such an enemy to oppose him, or because such an accident fell out to crosse him: no, that is not the cause: The reason is here rendred; *For time and chance happens to every man*: That is, if there be any such accident, if there be any crosse event falls out to hinder him in his enterprise at that time, it is in *Gods* disposing, it is *God* that hath done it. And therefore you see, in the evill events that have upon any occasion befallen the Church, if you observe the phrase of Scripture, it is not attributed to them, but to *God*. When the spirit of *Pul*, and *Tiglapellezer*, were stirred up against the people of *Israel*, saith the Text, *1 Chron. 5. The Lord stirred them up against the people*; it was not they that did it, but it was the *Lord* that stirred them up.

So likewise he poured forth his wrath by the hands of *Shishak*: And as *David* expresseth it in his owne case, *God hath bidden Shimei curse David*. So it is in many other places. Therefore let not men sit downe discouraged, vexing themselves, and eating up their hearts with griefe. Let not men say, If such an accident had not beene, I had prevailed: for it is this *time and chance*, that turnes the event of busineses, which is from the *Lord*, and not from man, therefore labour to be thank-

The Lord must be acknowledged in evill successe.

1 Chron. 5. 26.

full to him in the best successe, and not to sacrifice to your owne wits, or to give him thanks in a formall manner, but heartily to acknowledge him: And likewise to be patient in all the crosses and troubles that befall us. So much for this third use.

*Use . 4*  
Not to make  
flesh our arme.

Fourthly, and lastly, if men of the greatest abilities be so often disappointed, that *the battaile is not to the strong, nor the race to the swift, &c.* Then learne wee hence, not to *make flesh our arme*, not to trust in any strength of our owne, in any wisdom of our owne, or other men; for if this would doe it, if the strength of any man, if the policy of any man were able to bring any enterprise to passe, it would alwayes doe it: If it were the swiftnesse of him that runs, that could get the race, if it were the strength of him that fighteth that could obtaine the battaile; I say it would alwayes doe it. And therefore seeing it falls not out so, but the events are turned a contrary way, that is a signe it is not in them, but in something else. Therefore I say, take wee heed of making flesh our arme, of saying thus with our selves, because wee have these preparations, because we have these meanes therefore our worke shall succede: for that is not so. For we see often in experience, when a man comes to a businesse with much confidence, out of a reflection upon his owne ability to doe it, for the most part it succedes ill: As on the other side, when a man comes with feare and diffidence in himselfe, for the most part he prospereth best. And you have a rule for it, *Ier. 17.5. Cursed is hee that*

Selfconfidence  
makes things  
succed ill.

*Ier. 17.5*



that makes flesh his arme: Cursed is he; that is to say, God hath ingaged himselfe, when a man wil make flesh his arme, to blow upon his enterprises, and to cause them to wither.

Againe, *Blessed is hee that trusts in the Lord:* that is, God is tyed by his promise to give successe in such a case. Therefore that use we should make of it, not to trust to our owne strength, to our owne wisdom, nor to other mens. For, what is it, when wee have other men that are strong, and wise, and potent to rest upon? Are they able to bring it to passe? You shall finde that expression, *Psal. 31.* a place that I touched in the morning upon another occasion; *David* tells us there, that *great men sate and shake against him,* and consulted together to take away his life; but, saith he, *my times are in thy hands:* As if he should say, my times, & the disposing of all my affaires, good & evill successe to me, they are not in their hands, be they never so potent, they are not in the hands of *Saul*, they are not in the hands of *Doeg*, they are not in the hands of all mine enemies, but *Lord, my times are in thy hands.* So then, if wee could learne this lesson aright, we should not be discouraged, when the most potent men are set against us, nor be much incouraged when they are for us. That in *Isa. 51. 12.* is excellent for this purpose; *Who art thou saith hee, that fearest mortall man, whose breath is in his nostrills, and who shall be made as the grasse,* That is, if such a man be never so potent, yet, saith hee, consider his breath is in his nostrills. and hee shall be made as the grasse:

*Psal. 31.*

Men have not the disposing of times and affaires, but God

*Isa. 51. 12.*

that is, in truth he is of no power. But the reason now why men doe feare, why men are discouraged in such cases; you shall finde in the verse following: Who art thou, saith he, that doest this, *and forgettest the Lord thy Maker, who made heaven and earth, who stretcheth forth the heavens, and laid the foundations of the earth?* You never finde a man that feares a great man, a potent man, but the true ground of it is, because *he forgets the Lord his Maker*: if he did remember the mighty God, he that stretcheth fourth the heavens, and that layes the foundations of the earth, man would appeare a mortall man. You may take it for a certaine generall rule, a mans heart is never possessed with feare upon such an occasion, but when he forgets God, the great God; he would never else feare a great man. On the other side, he would never be confident in such occasion, but when he remembers not the Lord. Therefore learne we neither to feare them, when they are against us, nor to trust them when they are for us.

We usually pittie the case of Merchants, for, say we, their goods hang on ropes, they depend upon uncertaine windes; but certainly hee that trusts in man, is in a worse condition; for he rests upon the affections of a man, that are more uncertaine than the wind. What so brittle, and so inconstant. We see that for the most part they are carried to doe us good or evill with by-respects, with something touching themselves, they are turned to and fro, as the Weather-cocks & Mills are, that when the winde ceaseth, and when the waters

Forgetfulnessse  
of the Lord  
makes us feare  
men,

The affection  
of man uncer-  
taine.

*Simile.*

waters faile, stand still; they are driven to doe for us so long as such respects lead them, and no longer. And therefore to trust in men, it is not the safest, it is not the wisest way. See this in some few examples. *David*, how inconstant did he find the people, and apt to rebell against him? and so *Moses*: yea *David* himselfe, though he was an holy man, yet how inconstant was hee, inconstant to *Mephibosheth*, one that was innocent, one that had never done him any wrong, one that had never given him occasion? How inconstant was he to *Joab*, when he had prevailed in the battaile against *Absolom*? How quickly was he out of grace and place, when he had saved *David*'s life, and recovered the Kingdome, and *Amasah*, that was but a reconciled enemy, put into his roome? These and many such like examples you shal find. *Abner*, how inconstant was hee to *Ishboseth*? even for a word spoken against him, & a word that he gave him occasion enough to speake, a word that he need not have beene so much offended at, hee falls off from him for it: and this is to trust in man; I say, either in a mans owne wisdome or strength, or in any other mans. This place shewes what a great folly it is. *The battaile is not to the strong*: That is, let a man be never so well compassed about with strength, and wisdome of men, let him put himselfe and his friends into the number, yet he is not safe; but let him trust in *God*, and he is safe in midst of dangers. *Sampson* and *Ishboseth*, whē they were in the midst of their friends, when they were a sleep, they were circumvented.

*Instances.*  
Of the inconstancy of mens affections.

A man is not safe among friends without *God*, and trusting in *god* he is safe in dangers.



*David* on the other side, when he was a sleepe in the midst of his enemies, when there was an hoast pitched against him, yet, saith he, *I laid me downe and slept*: Why? *Because the Lord sustained me*. So that both for our safety when wee are in danger, and likewise to have our workes wrought for us, to trust in *God*, and not to trust either in our owne wisdome, or in the wisdome, or strength of man, that we shall finde constantly to be the best way.

God workes  
our workes  
ns when we  
trust him.

When *David* abstained from going up to battell against *Nabal*, when he tooke the counsell of his wife, and when he abstained from putting violent hands upon *Saul*. you see how *God* wrought it for him; he gave him *Nabals* wife, he gave him *Sauls* wives, and his houses, and his Kingdome into his hands; this he got by trusting him. But when men will take their owne wayes, when they will goe about enterprises with their owne wisdome, *In his owne wisdome and strength shall no man bee strong*: *God* hath said it, and he will make it good upon all occasions. the conclusion therefore is, if the battell be not to the strong, nor the race to the swift, &c. *If men of the greatest ability are often disappointed of their hopes and ends*, then wee should not make flesh our Arme, but trust in *God*, both for safety in danger, and to bring our enterprises to passe. And so much for this point. We now proceede.

*Neither doth man know his time.*

This is added, partly as a second vanity which *Salomon* saw under the Sunne, and partly as a reason

son of the former: For, saith he, though men be strong, and wise, yet there is a certaine season to doe things, that they may mistake, which causeth them to faile: *For man knowes not his time:* and from hence he drawes his Consequence, because men know not their times, *Therefore they are snared in an evill time*, because they know not the good time, when good actions should be done, therefore evill times come upon them suddenly, that is, they take them unawares: and this he illustrates by two similitudes; *They come upon them*, saith hee, *as an evill net comes upon fishes, and as the snare upon the fowles.* So that in these three propositions, you shall have the full meaning of these words: and these therefore wee will handle distinctly.

First, that there is a time allotted to every purpose, and to every busines.

Secondly, that it is very hard to finde out that time.

And thirdly, because men cannot finde this time, but mistake it, therefore evill times come, upon them suddenly; that is, crosses, afflictions and destruction comes upon them suddenly, even *as the snare upon the fowle, and as the net upon the fishes.* And that this is the meaning of this place, and that these three points are included in it, you may see best by comparing it with another of the like sense, *Ecles. 8. 4, 5, 6, 7. Where the word of the King is, there is power, and who shall say to him,*

*what doest thou?* That is, it is a dangerous thing to admonish Princes: who shall say to a prince,

what

Ecles. 8. 4, 5,  
6, 7.

what doest thou, saith the wiseman? There is a time wherein we may admonish Princes safely, although they be exceeding powerfull, although they have it in their owne power. *to take away the shirrit, &c.* as hee saith afterwards, yet there is a time.

*Quest.*

*Answ.*

But how shall a man know that time?

Saith he, *He that keepe the Commandement, shall know no evell thing, and the heart of the wise shall know the time and the judgement:* That is, he shall know when to give a seasonable admonition to a Prince, or to a great man: *For,* saith he, *to every purpose there is a time and a judgement:* That is, there is a time and a discretion, (that is the meaning of the word in the originall) when any action is to be done, there is a certaine exact time: If you goe before it, or if you come after it, there is much danger in it; if you hit upon the just time, you are like to be successfull in it: for to every purpose there is a time and a judgement, *Because the misery of man is great upon him:* That is, it is the Lords pleasure to appoint such a certaine time to every purpose, and to every action, that hee might discover to men that vanity to which they are subject, and likewise that hee might inflict his judgements upon them: The misery of man is great upon him, because every purpose hath a time.

*Quest.*

*Answ.*

But how shall this be proved?

He proves it by this; for, saith hee, *Hee knowes not what shall be:* for who can tell him what shall be? As if hee should say, If a man did know this time, hee were safe enough, hee were free enough



nough from misery; but since hee neither knowes it himselfe, nor is there any that can tel him, therefore the misery of man is great upon him. Thus you see that in both these places these three points are included, and these I will runne over, and so make use of them.

First, *There is a certaine time that God hath allotted to every purpose, and to every businesse; If you take that time, you may succcede in it, if you misse it, it is exceeding dangerous. As you shall see, Eccles. 3. To all things there is an appointed time, to every purpose under heaven: There is a time to be borne, and a time to die, a time to plant, and a time to plucke up; a time to slay, and a time to heale, &c. A time to weepe, and a time to laugh. All these particulars mentioned by Salemon, may be divided into these three rankes; for all naturall actions, as well as those that are voluntary, and done by consultation, there is a time that God hath set.*

Againe, for all lighter actions, as well as for actions of moment, there is a time,

Againe, for all private actions, as well as for those that are publike, there is a time; that is, not a time which man in prudence will chuse out, but a time which God hath appointed, a time which God hath set downe: If a man hit upon that time which God hath allotted, he shall succcede in it, otherwise hee failes. So you see, *Acts 17. 26. Hee hath made of owne blood all mankinde to dwell upon the face of the earth, and hath assigned the times that were ordained before, and the bounds*

Propos. 1.  
There is a time allotted to every action,

Eccles 3;

1  
To all naturall actions.

2  
For lesse actions.

3  
For private action.

Acts 17. 26.

The changes  
of men, Citties  
and Common-  
wealths, ap-  
pointed by  
God. ✓  
Iob. 14. 5, 6.

Simile.

Acts 13. 35.

of their habitations: That is to say, the times of every man, the times for every mans state and condition, the times for the severall changes to which every man, every Common-wealth, and every City is subject, these times God hath assigned, he hath ordained them before, and they are as bounds that cannot be passed. The like you see *Iob 14. 5, 6. Are not his dayes determined, and the number of his moneths with thee, thou hast appointed his bonds that he cannot passe:* (Marke it) As if he should say; there is not a man comes into the world, but God hath appointed him certaine bounds, he cannot passe the number of his moneths: That even as a man deales with an hireling, for that similitude hee useth presently after in the next verse, ) hee agrees with him for such a time; So long you shall worke and no longer: So, saith hee, God hath appointed every man so many moneths, so many yeares he must doe him service, some ten yeares, some twenty yeares, some forty yeares: As you see it is said of *David, Acts 13. 35. When he had served his time by the Counsell of God.* As if hee should say, There is an appointed time that *David* had to do him service in, hee did him service as a King. And so in the same Chapter it is said, *John Baptist, when he had finished his course, &c.* That is, There was a certaine race that he was to run, he could not come short of it, nor he could not go beyond it. So that both to the actions of men, to every purpose, to every action & businesse that is done in the life of a man, there is a certaine time appointed, there is  
acer-

a certaine time that *God* hath allotted, and as a man observes this time, so it is better or worse with him.

But before I come to the second, let me shew you the reasons in a word, why *God* hath appointed these times, *God* hath set these times: That is, *God* hath appointed such times for businessses, for every purpose; partly, because they cannot be done in another time: and therefore it is said to be an allotted time; If you take another time, you may labour, and labour in vaine: As you see *Eccles.* 3. 9. after he had said, *There is a time for every purpose,* he addes this, *And what profit hath hee that workes of the thing wherein he travailes?* As if hee should say, if a man misse of these times, what profit is there of his worke, though he travaile never so diligently in it, if he misse his time, if he pitch not right upon his time, *God* workes not with him, there is no concurrence with him; so hee labours in vaine.

Secondly, there is an allotted time, because *God* in his providence, in all his workes, he doth, what he doth in measure, in number, he weighs every thing, and makes it beautifull: now every thing is beautifull in its season; out of its season it is not beautifull. And that is another reason that he likewise here renders, verse 11. *He hath made every thing beautifull in his time:* therefore there is a time allotted to every action, and to every purpose: because if it misse of this time, it is not beautifull, there is a deformity, there is an obliquity in it, the beautie, the preciousnesse, and the comeliness of it is lost.

Thirdly

*Reason. 1*  
Things cannot be done in another time.

*Ecces.* 3. 9.

*Reason 2.*  
Things are beautifull in their time



Reason. 3

It is Gods prerogative to appoint the time.

Acts 1.7.

Thirdly, *God* hath appointed a certaine time, he hath allotted a time to every action, out of his owne royall prerogative, hee will not have men to know the times; but the times must be of his allotting, he hath appointed a time to every thing wherein his great soveraignty over the creatures, and over all things appears: and therefore you shall see, *Acts 1.7.* *It is not for you*, saith hee, *to know the times and seasons*, neither to know them, nor appoint them: for, saith hee, those the *Lord* keeps in his owne power: and therefore it is hee that hath allotted a time to every thing. It is hee also that concealeth and hideth them from the sonnes of men. And this is the first point; That to every action there is a time appointed.

Propos. 2.

It is hard to finde out the time.

Secondly, to finde out this time is exceeding hard, because it is not in the power of any man to know it, except *God* guide him to see it, there are not principles in man, there is not in him sufficiency of wisdom, to finde out the fitnessse of time, except *God* guide him to pitch upon that time.

Now if the *Lord* were pleased to reveale to men these severall times, allotted to actions, it were an easie thing to finde it out: but hee hath kept them to himselfe, and that for these two Causes.

The Lord keepeth times secret to himselfe

I  
To teach us watchfullnes.

One is, That men might watch; for if men knew the times, they would be loose, and neglect till the time came: Therefore, saith hee, seeing thou knowest not the time when hee will come, whether at night, or at what time of the night, whether

whether at the dawning, or at the Cocke-crow-  
ing, whether at the first watch, or at the second;  
therefore watch: As if he should say, If men knew  
the time certainly, they would sleepe till that  
time, and then they would be awake; but *God*  
will have men watch.

Secondly, *God* hath appointed these times, and  
reserved them to himselfe, that men might learne  
to feare him, that they might learne to keepe a  
continuall dependance upon him; for if the times  
were in our owne hands, we might mannage our  
businesse with our owne strength; but when they  
are in *Gods* hands, *Wee know not what to morrow*  
*will bring forth*: Therefore *James* saith, *Say not,*  
*I will doe such a thing I will goe to such a place, and*  
*stay there a yeare, and buy and sell;* for, saith he, it is  
not in your hands, your life is not in your owne  
hands to effect this businesse: if you doe live, it is  
not in your hands; and therefore *you ought to say,*  
*if the Lord will.* And therefore to keep men in this  
dependencie upon him, *God* hath reserved these  
times unto himselfe.

The third, and last proposition is, That because  
men misse of these times, therefore *their miserie is*  
*great upon them*: partly, because they do not effect  
the thing they go about, when they misse of their  
time, for the *Lord* workes not with them, when  
they hit upon a wrong time: partly also because  
they failing in their duty, not taking the good  
time that *God* hath appointed, he in his most just  
judgement sends upon them *evill times*, that *sud-*  
*denly come upon them, even as a snare upon the birds.*

Reason 2.

That men may  
learne to feare  
the Lord, and  
depend upon  
him.

James 4.

3 Proposit.

Beaue men  
misse the time,  
they fall into  
mifery.



As you see when birds are feeding quietly, and fearing nothing, then an evill snare comes and takes them: So it is with men, when they have missed their times, when they thinke they are safe, when they speake peace to themselves, when they thinke that danger is farthest off, then *evill times come suddenly upon them*. This you shall see best in examples.

*Instances.*  
Of missing the  
right time.  
*Gebezi.*

*Gebezi*, when he tooke a gift of *Naaman*; The Prophet his Master reproves him in these words; *Gebezi*, saith he, *Is this a time to receive gifts?* As if he should say, To take a gift in it selfe is not amisse, but this is not a time for it: for *Naaman* was but a stranger, Againe, he was but a beginner in beleving in the true *God*, and therefore to take a gift of him, that was not a time. It was the manner (you know) to bring gifts to the olde Prophets, not for reward of their Prophecies, but for the maintenance of their estate: so *Saul* brought to *Samuel* a gift: and therefore in some cases it might have beene seasonable. But, saith hee, is this a time to take a gift of such a man, upon such an occasion, at such a season? And what misery came upon *Gebezi* for missing his time? Saith his Master, *The leprosie of Naaman the Assyrian shall cleave to thee*; that misery came upon him,

*Haggai 1.*

So you shall see *Haggai 1.* The people did a lawfull action, but they missed of the time; Thus saith the Lord of Hosts, *This people say, the time is not yet, when the Lords house should be built: Then came the word of the Lord by the ministry of the Prophet Haggai, saying, It is a time for your selves to dwell in seeld*



seeled houses, and this house lie waste? Therefore now saith the Lord of hosts, you have sowne much, but you have brought in little; you eate, but you have not enough; you drinke, but you are not filled; you cloath you, but you are not warmed; and hee that earneth wages, he puts it into a broken bagge. It was a lawfull thing for them to build houses to dwell in, and enjoy; but, saith he, *Is this a time to dwell in your seeled houses?* As if he should say, You have missed of the time. And what then? You see therefore their misery was great on them: *You have sowne much, but you have brought in little, &c.*

*Jacob*, I was lawfull for him to have sought the blessing, but because he missed of the time, you see his misery was great upon him; How many sore yeares of travell had he under his uncle *Laban*? And this was because he missed of his time.

*Jacob.*

On the other side, *David*, that did hit upon his time, *God* promised him a Kingdome, and he stayed his time, you see he had it with good successe, he had it in such a manner, as was fit for him; for he stayed his time.

*Rehoboam* is another example, when he consulted with the olde men; They tolde him, that if he would serve the people at that time, they should be his servants for ever: but he followed the counsell of the young men, and you see what fell out upon this, the missing of his time; for that was the counsell that the olde men gave him, if thou wilt serve them at this time, &c. As if they had said, *Rehoboam*, thou thinkest it will be disadvantage to thee, if thou let the raine loose upon them, and

*Rehoboam*

not restraine and curbe them in the beginning, but thou missest of thy time: There is a time for meeknesse, and a time for roughnesse, there is a time for clemencie, there is a time againe for severitie; but this is not a time for *Rehoboam* to use severitie in the beginning of his Reigne: Therefore you see *his misery was great upon him*, he lost ten Tribes by this meanes.

*Israolites.*

So likewise, the people of *Israel*, when they sought a King for themselves, it was lawfull for them to seek a King, for *God* had appointed from all eternity *David* to be their King; and if *Saul* had not bene their King, *David* had bene King at the same season that he was: but their error was in the time, they would have a King, when *Samuel* reigned over them, when *God* was pleased to judge them by the hand of the Prophets more immediately than by the hand of the King: for hee saith, that himselfe ruled over them: and therefore *God* tells them, because they would needes have a King now, because they would anticipate him (they would have a King before *God* had appointed them a King;) therefore this curse should goe with their King, hee, saith hee, shall doe thus and thus to you, *He shall take your sonnes, and put them unto his Chariots, hee shall take your daughters, and make them Apothecaries, hee shall take your Vineyards, and your Olive trees.* Thus your King shall doe to you, because you have missest your time, your *miserie shall be great upon you.*

The like you shall see in the Children of *Israel*,  
*Num.*



Num. 14. the people might lawfully fight against the *Canaanites*, you know, they were brought forth for that purpose; yet because they missed of their time, they would doe it at that time when they were not appoynted, *Moses* tells them, if they would needes goe up, they should fall before their enemies, & accordingly it fel out so; for they missed of their time. I need not runne through more examples, *Iosiah* and *David*, if you lay these two examples together, you shall finde, *David* went not out to warre when he should, and the other went when he should not, and so missed of their times; and you see what miserie it brought upon them: upon *David* it brought the greatest miserie of all other, which was the giving of him up to such finnes as that of murrher and adultery, that brought all the evill that he suffered afterwards. And *Iosiah*, it cost him his life: for hee went out unseasonably, mistaking the time which *God* had allotted for such an enterprise. So you see now there is a time allotted to every purpose, to every businesse. And it is heard to know it, for *God* keepes it to himselfe, he reveales it when it pleaseth him, he pitcheth one man by his providence by the secret guidance of his Spirit, upon a right time, when another misseth it; I meane not that it is alwayes done in mecry, but in the ordinarie disposition of time, to them that know him not: for when a man pitcheth upon the time, it is hee that guides him. Thirdly, *Because men misse of their time, the misery is great upon them*, it comes upon them: that is, some evill times come upon

Num. 14.

Iosiah.

David.

Note.



*Use.*

Not onely to  
looke to out.  
actions, bus  
the time of  
them.

ACTIONS not  
done in their  
time have a  
deformity in  
them.

Watch our  
times in the  
things God  
commandeth;  
as,  
Admonition.

Thankfullnes.

them suddenly, it comes upon them like a snare.

Now briefly, the use wee should make of it is this, That wee bee carefull not onely to doe the actions that belong to our Callings, either our generall Calling, as we are Christians, or our particular Calling, in our ordinary busines, it is not enough to doe them, but to look narrowly to the time. It is a Rule among Divines, that an action is not good, except it have all the Circumstances good. An action may be evill upon missing any one, therefore the time is an ingredient into the goodnesse of the action, were the action never so good, if the time be missed, it makes the action evill, when we doe it out of its season, when we doe it not in his time. As it is said of words, when they are *in season, they are beautifull*: So it is true of every action, when it is done in its owne season, it is beautifull; if it be not, there is some deformity in it, some obliquity, and by consequent, some sinfulness, if it be a mortall action, or somewhat that brings evill after it, if it be an action of another nature. Now the action wherein wee are to looke so narrowly to our times, are of three sorts.

Some are the actions that *God* hath commanded us to doe: Wherein, it is not enough for us to do the workes, but we must observe the times. To admonish is a good action, and it is Commanded us, but to do it in an unseasonable time, either unseasonably to him that admonisheth, or to him that is admonished, it spoiles the action. To be thankefull for mercies, and to pay our vowes,  
it

it is a good action; but yet if the time be missed, and we give not thanks in due season, if you pay not your vowes, but deferre them, he that deferrers his vow, though the action be good in it selfe, yet if the time be missed, he proyokes God to anger, and sinnes against him. It is a lawfull thing for us to doe the workes of our Calling, and to doe them diligently; yet if wee doe them unseasonably, and incroach upon the time allotted to prayer, wherein we ought to renew our repentance, and to set our hearts straight and right before God, now it is not done in season, it displeaseth God, it is an action done out of its time. To mourne and rejoyce, are both good actions, but if they be done out of their season, they are both exceeding evill and sinfull: wee see how carefully *Nehemiah* tells them, they should not have mourned; for (saith he) this is a time of rejoycing, for this time to rejoyce, (it is your strength) *for the joy of the Lord is your strength*, therefore now weepe not, mourne not, but rejoyce. Againe, at another time to rejoyce, is as great a sin, as then to mourne, as we see, *Isa. 22. 12, 13*. When the Lord calls to mourning, if now you give your selves to killing of sheepe, and slaying of oxen, &c. your sinne shall not be purged from you till you die. I need not give you instances in this case. These are one sort of actions. All the duties of our Calling must be done in season.

The second sort of actions, that wee are to observe this time in, they are such as belong to others, that tend to the good of others, the good

Vowes.

Workes of our calling.

Mourning and reioycing.

*Isa. 22. 12, 13.*

Watch opportunities in actions that concerne others.



By speaking  
for them.

of the Church, the good of the Common-wealth the good of particular men: There is a time when (it may be) a mans voyce, or suffrage would have turned the scale of a businesse, that concerned much the Common-wealth, or the societie where he lives: but when that opportunity is past, it can be recalled no more. There is a time when a mans speaking may doe much good, and his silence is sinfull, and doth much hurt, by the losse it brings. Such times and seasons are to be observed, such opportunities there be. There is an opportunity of preventing a mischief to a Common-wealth, or to a Kingdome, when we neglect that opportunity, it causeth *the misery of man to be great upon him*, as we heard before. So for particular Cases: There is a time and a season, and an opportunity of comforting the bowels of the Saints, of relieving and entertaining strangers, of doing good to parents, of educating and bringing to *God* Children and servants, such as are committed to our charge: This is but a short time and opportunity, which when it is past, can be recalled no more. The missing of these times and opportunities, is that which causeth the miserie of man to be great upon him. You know, at the day of judgement, because men did not such and such actions, because the lost their opportunity, they did not visit the prisoners, they did not cloathe the naked, nor feede the hungry, therefore this eternall misery falls upon them; Much more temporall miseries, upon a man, a Kingdome, or a King.

By beleeving  
of them.

The



The last sort of actions wherein we are to observe a time, they are such as belong to our owne safety: There is a time that if a man speake, *hee makes himselfe a prey to the wrath of men.* And therefore *the prudent*, at such a time, *shall keepe silence*, saith *Amos*. And there is a time wherein if a man doe not speake, hee makes himselfe a prey to the wrath of *God*. And not to hit upon a right season in such an action of speaking and shewing himselfe, or not doing it, it brings miserie either from *God*, or man.

*There is a time for a man to give and to spend, and a time againe, for him to spare and gather*, if he misse of this time, if hee will not give when he ought, if he spare when he ought to give, it brings a misery upon him, he shall be a loser by it.

In all particular actions, often times *God* opens a doore to us of advantage to our selves, to our children, to those that depend upon us, if it bee taken. You have the opportunity, if you stay till it be shut up againe, there is a misery that followes it, it is a thing that concernes your owne safety, but these are but lesser matters. There are times of greater Consequence than these,

There is a time when *God* offers grace to a man. Now to refuse it, to misse of that time, *it causeth the misery to be great, yea to be eternall upon him:* Luke 19. 22. *Oh Ierusalem, if thou hadst knowne the things belonging to thy peace in this thy day, but now they are hid from thine eyes.* As if hee should say, This is the time, *Ierusalem*, when if thou wilt take the offer thou maist, if thou didst know thy

3

Watch in editions concerning our owne safety.

Speaking for God:

Sparing and giving.

Entertaining offers of grace.

Luke 19, 42.

time, if *God* would reveale it to thee, thou shouldest be safe enough, thou mightest escape this misery; but *God* hath hid it, that thou seeest not this time, therefore thou and thy children shall perish.

Making our Election sure.

The time of mans health, and of his peace, of his life, quiet, and rest, is the time of making sure his Election, a time of *growing in grace and knowledge*, and of *growing rich in good workes*. He whose eyes *God* opens to see this time, he makes use of it, he layes out those talants hee hath to such a purpose; but when *God* hides it from a man, it is his undoing, *An evill time*, the time of death comes suddenly upon him, as a snare upon the fowle.

The time of youth, the time of education is the seede-time of our life after, he whom *God* hath enlightened to see this time, and to consider it, he is not negligent in it, hee layes up the ground and foundation of his future life in it, Such like times there be.

You shall see an example of them in *Saul*, and in the people of *Israel*; *Saul* had a time to make sure the kingdome to himselfe, and the kingdome of heaven to himselfe; but because he lost his time, *God* would give him no more, he had opportunity no longer, but it was cut off from him. You know hee lost the Kingdome, by not staying the time that *Samuel* appointed him, he stayed to the very point of the time, but he stayed it not out. The seaventh day *Samuel* came according to his promise; but he thought he would not have come because he stayed so late, but this was the losse of  
the

*Saul's* misery  
for missing  
his time.



the Kingdome to him. *God* intimates thus much to him there, that if he had discerned his time, he might have saved his Kingdome, but because he did not see it, that misery came upon him, hee lost the Kingdome from himselfe, and from his posterity for ever.

The *Jewes* likewise, there was a time when *God* would have received them, and averted that fearfull judgement that came upon the whole Nation, when they were carried away captive; but when they had passed that time, we see *God* is resolved to destroy them; there is no more hope then. *Ierem. 11. 14.* *Thou shalt not pray for this people, I will not heare their cry in the day of their trouble: Thou shalt not pray for them, thou shalt not lift up a cry, a prayer for them.* It is twice repeated, because the *Lord* was resolved, the time was past, and they saw it not, *Therefore their misery was great.*

*Ier. 11. 14.*

But you will say to me, (to conclude with that) How shall a man doe to know that time, to know the time, and the season, that *God* hath allotted to every action, since it is of so much moment, and the missing of it brings so much misery upon men?

*Quest.*

I will runne through some directions very briefly: Consider what the cause is, that men misse of their time, and you shall find by that the meanes, how to finde it out. The cause why men misse it, is:

*Answ.*

How to know the time that *God* hath allotted to actions. The causes of missing the time.

First, Inability to discern, man himselfe knowes it not, and no man else can tell it him.

I  
Vnability to know it.

So



Directions to  
finde it.

I

Not leane to  
our owne wis-  
dome.

Prov. 3. 5.

So then it is in *Gods* owne power to reveale it. Therefore to finde out this time, let a man doe these two things, to have ability to discerne the times.

First, let him not leane to his owne wisdome but trust in *God*, that is, let him goe and aske counsell of *God*. Even as *David* did, *Shall I goe up to Hebron, or shall I not?* So in all such doubtfull Cases goe to *God*, shall I doe such a thing, or shall I not? Shall I doe it in such a season, or shall I stay another? We see what *Salomon* saith, *Prov. 3. 5. Trust in the Lord with all thy heart, and leane not to thine owne wisdome, in all thy wayes acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy way:* The meaning is this, let a man in his heart rest upon *God*, and trust in him, and say thus to him, *Lord*, I confesse, I know not the times, I know not whether this be a fit season, or another, *Lord*, I leane on thee, I beseech thee discover the times to mee. When the heart indeede rests on him, there is a promise, *Trust in the Lord with all thy heart, (that is) trust in him in good earnest, and hee shall direct thy way:* That is, there shall be a secret guidance from his Spirit, that shall pitch thee upon a right time, There shall a secret thought come in thy heart, (which shall be as if a man stood behinde thee) that shall whisper to thee, and say, *This is the way, this is the time, turne this way, and not that:* So *God* directs us, if we trust in him, and rest on him, If wee goe to him, and pray him, and beseech him to guide us.

2  
Walking in  
Gods wayes

Secondly, it is not enough onely to pray to  
him,

him, but there is another thing added to it, to walke in his wayes, not to steppe out of his wayes, but to keep the Commandements, when we have any businesse to doe, goe to the straight path, step not out to any inordinate course, but keepe the Commandements, and the Commandements will keepe thee: This you shall finde, *Eccles. 8. 5.* *He that keepes the Commandement shall know no evill thing, and the heart of the wise shall know the time, and the judgement; for to every purpose there is a time and a judgement.* You see though it be very hard to find, and a man knowes it not of himselfe, nor can any tell him, yet this promise is made, *He that keepes the Commandement, and the heart of the wise, that is, the godly man, He shall know the time, and the judgement.* It is a sure rule, If we be obedient to Christ as a King, we shall finde him to be to us as a Prophet: If you will resigne up your selves to keep his Commandements, that Propheticall office of his, (which is to guide us in the way,) hee will performe to us. So I take that place to be understood, *Acts 2. I will power out my spirit upon all flesh, and your young men shall see visions, and your olde men shall dreame dreamas, &c.* It begunne to be fullfilled in that extraordinary gift of Prophecie that was powred upon the Apostles, but yet, saith he, I will powre it upon all flesh: that is, it shall be such a Spirit, as shall teach you to see those mysteries that were hid from the beginning of the world, and such a Spirit as shall guide you and direct you, it shall teach you what you ought to doe, what way you ought to choose. This, I say,

th e

Christ teacheth those as Prophet, that are subiect to him as a King.

Act. 2.



the Lord will doe, if wee walke in his wayes. If wee will be stepping out of his wayes, wee shall get many knockes, and many falls too, many troubles, many afflictions shall sticke by us, while wee live. You know the Children of *Israel* went not a foote, but as they were guided by the Cloud.

*Jacob*, in his journey, would neither goe to *Laban* without warrant, nor come from him without it. *David* in all that he did, he asked counsell of the Lord; Shall I stay in such a City, or shall I not stay? Shall I goe up to warre to such a place or shall I not goe? As I said before) Shall I goe up to *Hebron* or shall I not goe at this time? This walking in the wayes of *God*, is that which the promise is made unto. You shall find, *Psal. 25. 12.* *What man is hee that feares the Lord? Him will hee teach the way that hee shall choose: As the promise is made to trusting in him; for then he will direct him in his wayes: So, What man is hee that feares the Lord, and keepes his Commandements? Him will he teach the wayes that he should choose.* And this is the first direction. The first cause why men misse is, Inability to discern the time and the season: therefore let them take this course, and *God* will reveale it to them.

*Psal. 25. 12.*

2 Cause.  
Passions and  
distempers.

A second cause why men misse of these times, that *God* hath allotted to every action & purpose, is, some passion and distemper to which they are subject, for passion causeth indiscretion, in the ordinary course of things: you see, passion makes a man misse of his time, it makes a man doe things



unreasonably ; whereas were the heart quiet, the judgement would be cleare too, to see what were fit, and what unfit.

As it is in the common Converse with men ; so it is in these great actions , to choose the time that *God* hath allotted to every action, and purpose. If there be any carnall, worldly, sinfull distemper in the heart , you are apt to misse of the time ; for every passion and distemper is like drunkenness, it casts a man asleepe. Now, he that observes the times , must watch and watch diligently, and a man that is distempered, is not fit to watch, and to observe. And therefore *Christ* saith *Luke 21. 34.* *Take heede that your hearts be not overcharged with surfeiting and drunkenness, and the cares of this world, lest that day come upon you at unawares :* As if he should say , the reason why you misse of the times, why that *great day* comes upon you unawares, why you doe not that dutie that you ought within the compasse of the time that *God* hath appointed ; it comes from hence, some excessse in the use of lawfull Comforts : So you have two Causes given there :

Either , when men inebriate themselves too much with the present Comforts of this world, when they exceed in them, when they take more than they ought, though the things in themselves be lawfull.

Or secondly, they take so much care for worldly things, that it breedes a distemper in them; that is, it distracts their mindes, for by that a man may know when his cares are inordinate, when they breede

Passion like drunkenness.

Luke 21. 34.

How to know when cares are inordinate.

breed distractions in the minde : as wee see in *Martha*, *Christ* found not fault, because shee was carefull to provide; but because her care went so farre that it troubled her, that she could not attend upon spirituall duties, there was the fault, *Martha's thoughts were troubled about many things* : when such distempers grow on us, it causeth us to misse the time. If wee would then keepe our times, if wee would know the times allotted us, take heede of excesse, take heed wee affect not too much outward comforts, that our hearts bee not too much set upon any outward blessings, be it what it will be.

Take heede againe, that wee take not too much care for any thing, that mee minde not too intently worldly businesse, they will cause us to misse our times. This is the second Cause.

3 Cause.  
Doing impertinent things

1 Cor. 7.

Worldly matters impertinent in comparison of heaven.

Thirdly, to do impertinent things, is that which causeth men to misse the time, that is allotted to every purpose, and to every busines. When a man is occupied about things that he ought not, hee misse dooing of those businesse that he ought to doe. Therefore, *1 Cor. 7.* the Apostle gives this Rule, saith he, whatsoever you have to do, if you be to *buy*, doe it *as if you bought not*; if you be to *marry*, doe it *as if you did it not*. And generally use *this world, as if you used it not*. That is, all the actions belonging to this world, be not too much occupied about such impertinent things as they be: Impertinent things to the maine businesse, for which you came into the world: *For I would have*

you



you, saith he, *with out care*; for he that is *unmarried* cares for the things of the Lord, and I would have you cleave to the Lord without separation: The meaning is this: The reason why men misse their times that God hath appointed them, is, because men are too intent upon impertinent things, which interrupts their care to serve the Lord. And therefore wee are to passe by them, and not to put our full intention to every worldly businesse, but reserve the maine intention of our thoughts for *the things of the Spirit*, for not to take over-much care for them is that which will make us carefull to doe things in their time.

The next impediment is *selfe-Confidene*, when a man trusts himselfe, and will be his own Counsellour: And therefore the way to hit of a right time is, to take Counsell with others; *In the multitude of Counsellors there is peace.*

Lastly, the cause of the missing of the time, is, *negligence*, when men are idle, slacke, and indiligent in doing those things that belong to them, that is the cause of missing their time. And therefore you have that counsell in the words next before my text (since the time is short, there is but a day for you to worke in, and the night comes, when no man can work:) that is, *In the grave, there is neither worke nor invention, &c. And therefore doe with all thy might that which thou hast to doe.* The doing what wee have to doe with all our might, and with all our diligence, is that which quickens

us,

4 Cause.  
Selfe-confidence.

5 Cause.  
Negligence.

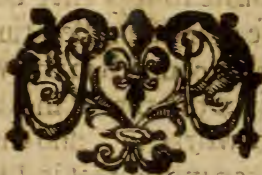


us, and keepes our hearts in a holy preparation  
 to take the times, and not to over-slippe and  
 overpasse them. These things I should  
 have enlarged, but I had rather  
 shorren them thus, than  
 holde you longer,  
 &c.

---

**FINIS.**

---





# THE TABLE.

<b>A.</b>	<b>Page.</b>		<b>Page.</b>
<b>Abide.</b>		<i>Afflictions</i> the execution of the law.	394
<b>VV</b> Here sinne <i>abides</i> in the heart, it is unbound.	222	<i>Afflictions</i> not effectuall without the spi- rit of bondage.	395
<b>ABRAHAM.</b>		See scandall.	
The tryall of <i>Abrahams</i> faith.	357	<i>All-sufficient, All-sufficiency.</i>	
The ground of <i>Abrahams</i> faith.	359	<i>All-sufficiency</i> of God, wherein it consists.	
Child of <i>Abraham</i> what.	388		
The Gentiles receive the promise in <i>Abrahams</i> , how.	ibid.	The doubting of Gods <i>All-sufficiency</i> , the cause of our unevenness.	3
<i>Actions,</i>		God is <i>All-sufficient</i> .	4
The meanest <i>action</i> of our life must not be neglected.	183	Gods <i>All-sufficiency</i> in himselte in six things.	27
No man to bee judge by a particular <i>action</i> .	210	Differrence betweene <i>All sufficiency</i> in God and the creature.	38
See step.		The <i>All-sufficiency</i> of God to us.	ibid.
<i>Accident.</i>		Tryals of our trusting Gods <i>All-suffici- ency</i> .	42
Sudden <i>accidents</i> disappoynt men of their ends.	571	A signe of doubting of Gods <i>All-suffici- ency</i> .	94. 163
<i>Aduersity.</i>		Gods <i>All sufficiency</i> to forgive sin.	97
<i>Aduersity</i> is not truly evill.	551	Gods <i>All-sufficiency</i> to sanctifie us.	117
<i>Affections.</i>		Gods <i>All-sufficiency</i> to provide outward things.	116
The Lord guideth the <i>affections</i> .	60	To beleeve Gods <i>All-sufficiency</i> needfull in difficulties.	172
<i>Affections</i> pitched on the creature, what it discovers.	163	An exhortation to beleeve Gods <i>All- sufficiency</i> .	176
The <i>affections</i> of man inconstant.	586	It is a hard thing to bee perswaded of Gods <i>All-sufficiency</i> .	488
Instances of the inconstancy of <i>affecti- ons</i> .	587	How God dispenceth his <i>All-sufficiency</i> .	501
<i>Afflictions, Afflicted.</i>		See <i>providence, perfect, selfe-love.</i>	
Gods children <i>afflicted</i> , when the wicked flourish, why.	82	<i>Is Allow.</i>	
<i>Afflictions</i> nurture Gods children.	83		

# THE TABLE.

<i>Allow.</i>	
A godly man <i>alloweth</i> himselfe in no sinne.	253
<i>Amend, see Heart.</i>	
<i>Apostacy.</i>	
The ground of <i>Apostacy.</i>	22
<i>Armie.</i>	
All the Creatures are Gods <i>Armies.</i>	34
<i>Assurance.</i>	
Draw neere with full <i>assurance,</i> why.	472
<i>Attributes.</i>	
The <i>attributes</i> of God are for the good of his children.	78
We thinke of Gods <i>attributes</i> comparatively.	111
A perfect heart seeth God in his <i>attributes.</i>	314
By what meanes wee have interest in Gods <i>attributes.</i>	332
<i>Aime.</i>	
An unsound man <i>aymeth</i> not at God, but himselfe.	260
See <i>upright, end, degree, unsound.</i>	
<b>B.</b>	
<i>Bad.</i>	
All things come alike to good and <i>bad</i> in this life.	529
<i>Blessednesse.</i>	
<i>Blessednesse</i> of God, wherein it consists.	541
<i>Blessing.</i>	
Gods <i>blessings</i> tarry not long with evill men.	154
To take comfort of Gods <i>blessings,</i> better than to heape up.	155
All <i>blessings</i> in Christ.	554
See <i>outward.</i>	
<i>Blood.</i>	
<i>Blood</i> of Christ hath a double power	350

The Covenant confirmed in the *blood* of Christ. 368

The testimony of the *blood* of Christ 396

*Boast, boasting.*

*Boasting* excluded by faith. 366

Not to *boast* of outward things, 573

Men often *boast* of that which is their ruine. 575

*Bold.*

None can bee *bold* with God in misery, but his children. 401

None are *bold* with God in afflictions, but Saints. 403

No *boldnesse* with G G D in our owne name. 505

*Bondage.*

The spirit of *bondage* goes before receiving of the spirit. 394

The Law doth not worke without the spirit of *bondage.* *ibid.*

The spirit of *bondage* makes afflictions effectually. 395

The spirit of *bondage* teacheth to know Christs love. *ibid.*

The spirit of *bondage* in a different measure on men, and why. 396

He that never had the spirit of *bondage,* hath not the spirit of adoption 407.

The spirit of *bondage,* how to know wee have had it. 409

The spirit of *bondage* sent to prevent finnes to come. 410

The spirit of *bondage* returnes not after conversion. 425

The spirit of *bondage,* what. 426

*Bread* b. see *waies.*

*Build.*

The World *builds* up Christians. 7449

*Cares.*



# THE TABLE.

<p style="text-align: center;"><b>C.</b></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Cares.</i></p> <p>Cares, How to know when they are inordinate. 609</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Casuall.</i></p> <p>The providence of GOD in casuall things. 161</p> <p>God effects things by casuall things, why. 162</p> <p>See <i>providence.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Ceremonies.</i></p> <p>The Ceremonies of the Jewes cloathed the Covenant of Grace. 384</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Change.</i></p> <p>Sinne hath made a great change in the world 558</p> <p>God hath appointed changes to men. 569</p> <p>Changes of Citties, men, Commonwealths. 592</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Chuse, Choice.</i></p> <p>Chusing in Gods wayes a note of un-soundnesse. 305</p> <p>An ill choice to lose heaven for the creature. 560</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Christ.</i></p> <p>Offices of <i>Christ</i> communicated to every Christian. 355</p> <p>All promises accomplished in <i>Christ</i>. 387</p> <p>Promises made to <i>Christ</i>, what. 387</p> <p>How to know whether wee bee in <i>Christ</i> or not. 392</p> <p>Men come not unto <i>Christ</i>, till other meanes faile. 408</p> <p>Wee must not come to God without <i>Christ</i>. 503</p> <p>When wee doubt of forgiveness, wee forget <i>Christ</i>. 114</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Church.</i></p> <p>The miseries of the Church resembled. 90</p>	<p>Wee should not be dismayd at the troubles of the Church. 98, 143</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Circumcise.</i></p> <p>Circumcision inward what. 369</p> <p>Saving knowledge circumcise the heart. 427</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Command.</i></p> <p>Gods Commands not impossible. 216</p> <p>Integrity of the Commandment, what. 230</p> <p>Gods Commands should bee kept exactly for three reasons. 248</p> <p>Nothing mooves a perfect man, but Gods Command. 287</p> <p>Gods Command joynd with our owne respects ofte n. 291</p> <p>How to know when Gods Command moveth to actions. 292</p> <p>How to know when his Command moveth us principally. 294</p> <p>Enmity betweene a carnall heart and Gods Command. 334-338</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Comfort.</i></p> <p>Whence comfort ariseth. 16</p> <p>What makes men live without comfort. 58</p> <p>How to guide our comfort. 61</p> <p>God conveyes comfort by the creatures 71, 153</p> <p>GOD comforts extraordinarily when meanes faile. 72</p> <p>GOD communicates comfort to the Saints. 74</p> <p>Different comfort in the creatures. 75</p> <p>The comfort of Christians springing. 83</p> <p>God gives not alway comfort according to the meanes. 93</p> <p>Comfort from outward things uncertaine. 152</p> <p>Comfort not sowed in the creature by God. 566</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Counsell see GOD.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Covenant.</i></p> <p>Gods Covenant to make us faithfull. 91</p>
---	--

# THE TABLE.

<p>An exhortation to enter into <i>Covenant</i> with God. 107</p> <p>The parts of the <i>Covenant</i>. 373</p> <p>The <i>Covenant</i> mutuall. 217</p> <p>God enters into <i>Covenant</i> with all that are faithfull. 317</p> <p><i>Covenant</i> twofold. <i>ibid.</i></p> <p>The condition of both <i>Covenants</i>. <i>ibid.</i></p> <p>A threefold difference betweene the two <i>Covenants</i>. 318</p> <p>We have interest in all Gods attributes by the <i>Covenant</i>. 332</p> <p><i>Covenant</i> of Grace hard to unfold. 351</p> <p>The <i>Covenant</i> made with <i>Abraham</i>. 354</p> <p>The <i>Covenant</i> confirmed by 4. things. 367</p> <p>Repentance and Faith a part of Gods <i>Covenant</i>, and ours too. 389</p> <p>How to know whether we be in the <i>Covenant</i>. 390.405</p> <p>An evidence of being in the <i>Covenant</i>. 393</p> <p>When a man may be said to enter into the <i>Covenant</i>. 398</p> <p><i>Covenant</i>, when it is broken. 458. 460</p> <p>What it is that makes the <i>Covenant</i>. 458</p> <p>Instances of breaking the <i>Covenant</i>. 465</p> <p>The miserie of those that are not in the <i>Covenant</i>. 480</p> <p>See <i>Goodnesse, spirit, life, love.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Content.</i></p> <p>Christians should be <i>content</i> with meane place. 131</p> <p>Believing of GODS All-sufficiency breeds <i>content</i>. 168</p> <p>To be <i>content</i> with Gods provision for us. 170</p> <p>See <i>G O D.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Continue.</i></p> <p>Why good men <i>continue</i> not in the evill they doe, nor evill men in the good they doe. 212</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Confidence.</i></p> <p>All things are put in Christs hands, that</p>	<p>we might be <i>confident</i>. 500</p> <p>Wee must come to God with <i>confidence</i> through Christ. 502</p> <p>God delights to crosse men in carnall <i>confidence</i> for three reasons. 576</p> <p><i>Confidence</i> in our selves makes things succede ill. 584</p> <p><i>Confidence</i> in our selves makes us misse the right time. 611</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Conversion.</i></p> <p>How <i>conversion</i> is wrought. 277</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Condition.</i></p> <p>Nothing but faith can bee the <i>condition</i> of the <i>Covenant</i>. 363</p> <p>We should try in what <i>condition</i> of men we are. 508</p> <p>See <i>faith.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Corruption, see Relapse.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Course.</i></p> <p>The constant <i>course</i> of a man comes from inward principles. 211</p> <p>A constant <i>course</i> in sinne, a signe of breaking the <i>Covenant</i>. 464</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Crooked, see Heart.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Creature.</i></p> <p>The excellency of the <i>creature</i> borrowed. 27</p> <p>The comfort in the <i>creature</i>. 28</p> <p>The power of the <i>creature</i> from God. 31</p> <p>The <i>creature</i> cannot helpe to eternall happinesse. 34</p> <p>The <i>creatures</i> Gods servants. 33</p> <p>The <i>creature</i> helpes but in particular things. 34</p> <p>The <i>creatures</i> Gods instruments. 35</p> <p>There is not sufficiency in the <i>creature</i>, proved by many things. 44. 135</p> <p>The <i>creature</i> at Gods disposing. 48</p> <p>The <i>creature</i>, though present, helpes not of it selfe. 56</p> <p>Wee know not the emptinesse of the <i>creature</i>. 62</p> <p>The <i>creature</i> can doe but little comparatively. 66</p>
--	--



# THE TABLE.

The creature what it is without God. 72  
 The creature cannot amend that which is amisse. 145  
 Two things acknowledged in the creature. 155  
 The creature hath power to hurt wicked men. 481  
 The creature cannot hurt the Saints. 466  
 The creature ignorant. 566  
 The creature weak. *ibid.*  
 See *curse*.

## Crucified.

Faith seizeth on Christ crucified. 471

## Curse.

A curse upon the creature. 45  
 Sinne the cause of every curse. 559

## D.

### Damnation.

A Christian his journey travaileth from damnation. 186

### Dealing, see *Vnsound*.

### Death.

The Law is the ministrat[i]on of death, how. 319  
 See *hypocrisie*.

### Deceive.

To deceive a mans selfe, the greatest folly. 509

### Degree.

A Christian aymes at the highest degree of holinesse. 259

### Delight.

The delight of a Christian is in God. 461

### Desire.

Desire of the Soule double. 127  
 Desires evil, to bee purged, not satisfied. 128  
 Desires evil when they bee satisfied, a signe of Gods wrath. *ibid.*  
 That which we desire not alwaies good for us. 129

## Divide, Division,

*Devision* breeds dissolution. 160

The intention divided doth things remissely. 279

All men divided into two rancks. 507

God and the Devil divide the world. *ibid.*

## Devices, see *G O D*.

## Difference.

Difference in Christians whence it is. 452

## Difficult.

Duties difficult cannot be done without beleevyng Gods All-sufficieny. 172

## Diligent.

What makes a Christian diligent. 296

## Dismayed, see *Church*.

## Disappoint.

Men of greatest ability often disappointed. 265

## Devill.

The first sin of the Devill, what, see *divide*. 9

## Double see, *Heart*.

## Doubting.

Instances of doubting in difficult cases. 27

## Dounkenesse, see *Passion*.

## Dutie.

Some men performe no duties to God. 6  
 Duties performed remissely. *ibid.*  
 Christians ready to good duties. 433  
 Duties may bee performed outwardly by wicked men. 520  
 Duties difficult, what required to performe them. 172

## E.

## Easie.

The wayes of GOD easie to a renewed heart. 118



# THE TABLE.

<i>Election.</i>	
God useth a liberty of <i>election.</i>	532
<i>Element.</i>	
Holinesse the <i>element</i> of a Christian.	298
<i>Empty.</i>	
When a thing is said to be <i>empty.</i>	62
See <i>creature.</i>	
<i>Enemy.</i>	
Spirituall and temporall <i>enemies</i> subdued by Christ as King.	380
<i>End.</i>	
Hell the <i>end</i> of evill mens course.	188.
How farre it is needfull to thinke of the <i>end</i> in every step of our life.	196
<i>End</i> of the godly and wicked.	546. 547
<i>Enmity.</i>	
<i>Enmity</i> betweene a carnall heart and Gods Command.	334. 344
The first <i>Covenant</i> breeds <i>enmity.</i>	318
<i>Event.</i>	
Gods hands must be seene in <i>events.</i>	95
Looking to <i>events</i> in doing duties, an evill signe.	170
<i>Events</i> hid from men:	536
<i>Events</i> not disposed according to mens strength or weaknesse.	554
<i>Events</i> not alway according to naturall strength or weaknesse.	550
<i>Execution.</i>	
The <i>execution</i> of wicked men deferred.	540
<i>Excelled, Excellency.</i>	
<i>Excellency</i> different in God and the crea- ture.	73
Salomon <i>excelled</i> in two things.	146
<i>Exalts.</i>	
Instances of men <i>exalting</i> themselves.	283
Of men <i>exalting</i> God.	ibid.
<i>Evill.</i>	
Gods All-sufficieny to keepe us from <i>evill.</i>	42

Adversity not truly <i>evill.</i>	551
<i>Equall.</i>	
Gods Command of seeking him <i>equall.</i>	47
<i>Eye.</i>	
The lusts of the <i>eye.</i>	428

## F.

### Faith.

<i>Faith</i> the nature of it.	12
<i>Faith</i> its perfect worke.	302
<i>Faith</i> in the promises purge the heart.	360
<i>Faith</i> the condition of the Covenant.	357
<i>Faith</i> draws other graces, how.	362
<i>Faith</i> makes the promise to us.	364
<i>Faith</i> best answers the Covenant.	ibid.
<i>Faith</i> receives the Covenant as a gift.	365
<i>Faith</i> , how to know it is true.	391
True <i>Faith</i> is operative.	ibid.
<i>Faith</i> , as it receiveth, is alike in all.	415
See <i>crucifixe, holnesse, life, righteous.</i>	

### Faithfull.

<i>Faithfulness</i> accepted in mean things	432
Nothing ours in using Gods blessings, but our <i>faithfulness.</i>	133
God enters into Covenant with the <i>faithfull.</i>	317
See <i>Covenant.</i>	

### Falls.

The Saints gaine by their <i>falls.</i>	250
---	-----

### Family.

The World Gods <i>Family.</i>	80
-------------------------------	----

### Favour.

Nothing can make us happy without Gods <i>favour.</i>	85
We were better want, than have things without Gods <i>favour.</i>	150

### Feare.

<i>Feares</i> vaine draw us from God.	14
<i>Feare</i> double	116
Dutie performed out of <i>feare.</i>	432
He that <i>seareth</i> , will not meddle with things	

# THE TABLE.

<p>things, doubtfull. 525</p> <p>He that feareth, will shun occasions. 56</p> <p>He that feareth shame, feareth constantly. <i>ibid.</i></p> <p>Why feare of sinne in many lasteth not. 527</p> <p>Hee that feareth sin most, feareth other things least. 528</p> <p>Feare of man whence it is. 529</p> <p>Events hid from men, that they may feare God. 595</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Festers, see Lusts.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Fit.</i></p> <p>Holy men doe not dye till they bee fit. 550</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Flesh.</i></p> <p>Flesh, the lusts of it. 430</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Flourish, see Afflicted.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Folly.</i></p> <p>Folly the vanity. 148</p> <p>What folly is. 151</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Follow.</i></p> <p>Wicked men may follow God for a time. 304</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Forgive.</i></p> <p>Forgivenessse of sinne hard to beleve. 109</p> <p>God forgives without comparison. 110</p> <p>Forgivenessse of finnes a matter of power. 112</p> <p>How to get assurance of forgivenessse. 333</p> <p>We should beleve forgivenessse, though we find sinne and emptinesse in our selves. 114</p> <p>Assurance of forgivenessse breeds not carelesnesse. 115</p> <p>Forgivenessse of sinne a part of the Covenant. 374</p> <p>See <i>All-sufficiency.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Force.</i></p> <p>Wicked men come to God by force. 403</p> <p>See <i>GOD.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Free, see Service.</i></p>	<p style="text-align: center;"><i>Froward, see Impurity.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Fulnesse.</i></p> <p>There is a fulnesse in God. 157</p> <p>Why there is a fulnesse in Christ. 304</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b>G.</b></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Gain.</i></p> <p>The Saints <i>gain</i> by their slips. 250</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Gifts.</i></p> <p>God dispenseth his gifts differently. 132</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Glory.</i></p> <p>A Christian travelleth to glory. 184</p> <p>Good men carefull to give GOD his glory. 356</p> <p>God will not lose his glory. 542</p> <p>When God hath most glory of his deliverances. 378</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b>G C D.</b></p> <p>God, why men turne from him. 17</p> <p>God, the way to magnifie him. 26</p> <p>God must be seene in that men doe to us. 49</p> <p>God rules the devices of men. 52</p> <p>God his Counsels firme. 53</p> <p>God, we cannot looke for too much from him. 63</p> <p>God, we should bee content with him alone. 67</p> <p>God, his presence supplies all wants. 75</p> <p>God, all comfort in the creature from him. 76</p> <p>God must bee looked too in our waies. 84</p> <p>God, no strength can prevaile against him. 100</p> <p>God seene in his greatnes makes other things appeare little. 101</p> <p>God, all outward things are his. 126</p> <p>GOD, Two things draw us from him. 227</p> <p>God not sought for himselfe of unsound men. 268</p> <p style="text-align: right;"><b>GOD</b></p>
--	--



# THE TABLE.

God exalted by a sincere heart. 281  
 God, when he is cast away by a man. 466  
 See *Creature, delight, subresse, follow.*

## Good, Goodnesse.

Good, the Author of it only God: 29  
 Gods all-sufficiency to fill us with good. 43  
 The creature can doe neither hurt nor good. 46, 65  
 Gods command for mans good 3 instances in. 105  
 Goodnesse of God to make a Covenant with man. 330  
 Wee looke upon the promises of God as good. 412  
 Goodnesse of a man wherein it consists 510  
*ibid.* 511  
 Tree good. 511  
 Fruit good. 512  
 Readinesse to good: *ibid.*  
 Practise to good. 551  
 Prosperity not truely good. 551  
 See *bad, desire.*

## Grace.

Grace cannot bee left as an inheritance 153  
 Grace is that a Christian travelleth unto 184  
 Grace powerfully cōmunicated by Christ 214  
 Grace, wicked men may doe much without it. 303  
 Grace, men should be valued by it. 337  
 Grace increased by knowledge. 445  
 Grace whence the want of it is. 446  
 See *interruption.*

## Griefe.

Griefe, whence it ariseth.

## Greatnesse, see G O D.

## Guiding.

A perfect heart lookes to God *guiding* it. 315

## Guilt.

To bee washed from the guilt of sinne, what. 515

## H.

### Halting.

Halting double. 193  
 Halting, the cause of it. *ibid.*

### Hand.

All things in Gods hands. 498  
 All things in the hands of the Mediator, how. 499  
 Hand of God, when it is seene most. 578

### Happinesse.

Happinesse desired by every man. 9  
 Happinesse, the creature cannot helpe to it. 34  
 See *savour.*

### Hating, Hatred.

Hating of sinne a signe of purity. 517  
 Hatred or love not knowne by outward things. 551

*Heape, see Blessing.*

*Hell, see End.*

*Helpe, see Creature.*

### Heart.

Heart, how to keepe it perfect. 23  
 Heart of a Christian proportionable to the command. 217  
 Heart unsound, what. 223  
 Heart single and double. 225  
 Heart perfect, a signe of it. 226  
 Heart honest what. 227  
 Heart whole, what. 229  
 Heart crooked, how discovered. 234  
 Heart, a Christians daily care to reforme it. 263  
 Heart renewed, how. 333  
 Heart, God onely knowes the severall turnings of it. 490  
 Heart, God only can amend it. 491  
 Heart imperfect, see *kiss.*

*Hypocrite.*



THE TABLE.

<i>Hypocrite, Hypocrisie.</i>		<i>Impossible.</i>	
<i>Hypocrisie</i> commonly discovered before death.	224	GODS commands not impossible,	216
An <i>Hypocrite</i> may do much without faith	391	<i>Immutable.</i>	
<i>Holinesse.</i>		God is immutable.	
<i>Holinesse</i> the element of a Christian,	268	<i>Impure, Impurity.</i>	
What hinders men from <i>Holinesse</i> ,	342	Forwardnesse a fruit of impurity,	310
<i>Holinesse</i> followes faith.	345	Impure man, who.	518
<i>Hope.</i>		Impurity an effect of it.	Ibid
<i>Hopes</i> vaine draw men from God,	514	<i>Instability</i>	
<i>Hope</i> double,	519	Instability double.	11
<i>Hope</i> dead, what,	Ibid	<i>Instrument.</i>	
<i>Honour.</i>		The Creatures GODS instruments.	35
<i>Honour</i> Christ, why,	501	Men GODS instruments.	48
<i>Honour</i> of two sorts,	140	<i>Integrity.</i>	
Christians exalt God in their <i>honours</i> ,	285	Integrity.	218
<i>Humble, Humilty.</i>		Integrity of the heart,	219
God leaves imperfection to <i>humble</i> us.	121	Integrity of the command,	Ibid
<i>Humilty</i> the nurse of graces,	Ibid	Integrity of the means.	230
God first <i>humbleth</i> & then comforteth	352	<i>Interruption.</i>	
<i>Humilty</i> , a consequent of the Spirit.	423	Interruption in the graces of the Saints.	301
<i>Hurt.</i>		True grace interrupted, how.	306
The Creatures have power to hurt evill men.	481	<i>Joy.</i>	
The creatures cannot hurt the Saints.	483	<i>Joy</i> , the ground of it in persecution,	77
I		<i>Joy</i> , the cause of it,	495
<i>Idolatrie.</i>		<i>Joy</i> , the authour of it,	Ibid
<i>Idolatrie</i> in every sinne committed.	15	See Peace.	
<i>Idolatrie</i> to overlove the creature,	156	<i>Journey.</i>	
<i>Ignorance, see Creature.</i>		<i>Journey</i> , a Christians life like it in five things.	184
<i>Impertinent.</i>		The end of being here, is to goe a <i>journey</i> ,	193
Doing things <i>impertinent</i> , makes us misse our time.	610	<i>Judge.</i>	
<i>Imperfection, Imperfect.</i>		God is a iust Judge,	540
Imperfections, why they be left in us	119	See A ction,	
Imperfections left to <i>humble</i> us,	121	<i>Judgement.</i>	
A naturall man <i>imperfect</i> ,	273	Judgement of a perfect man changed.	276
See abide lusts.		<i>Iustitie, Iustification.</i>	
		The wicked iustified by men, how	210
		Promises of iustification a part of the Covenant,	468
		K k	K

THE TABLE.

K

<i>King.</i>	
Christ, as <i>King</i> , what hee doth.	376
<i>Know, Knowledge.</i>	
Knowledge of God and our selves, one means of it,	121
Knowledge gained by the eye and by the care,	144
Know things aright a propertie of perfectnesse.	276
Knowledge of the truth its perfect worke	207
Knowledge, the giving of it, a part of the Covenant,	375
Knowledge, a signe of being in the Covenant,	426
Knowledge double.	427
Knowledge saving, two properties of it.	Ibid
Knowledge, an exhortation to it.	444
Knowledge requisite where there is grace	466
Knowledge mortal better than wealth	455
Knowledge saving, the benefit of it.	456
Knowledge without practise, the ground of it.	493

L.

<i>Laughter.</i>	
Laughter the vanity of it,	249
<i>Law.</i>	
Law, how it is the cause of sinne,	344
Law put into the heart what,	431
Law without and within the minde,	379
The promise not made to the obedience of the Law for three reasons	384
Terrours at giving of the Law, what they signified	Ibid
Law, the end of giving it,	385
<i>Lawfull, see Occasion.</i>	
<i>Leading, see Truth.</i>	
<i>Letter.</i>	
The first covenant, the ministrations of	

the Letter. 318

*Liberty.*

The power of God in mans liberty,	51
GOD useth a liberty in two things,	532
<i>See Election.</i>	

*Life.*

The Covenant of grace the ministrations of life.	320
Life holy comes from faith,	349

*Light.*

An unsound heart wants light.	261
<i>Looke, see God.</i>	

*Love.*

<i>Love</i> to God increased by believing forgiveness.	116
<i>Love</i> spirituall eates out carnall delights.	Ibid.
The Covenant of grace the ministrations of <i>love</i> .	320
Duties performed with <i>love</i> a signe of faith.	391
Wicked men come not to God out of <i>love</i> .	405
<i>Love</i> to God and Christ a consequent of the Spirit	418
<i>Love</i> , whence it ariseth.	Ibid.
<i>Love</i> of the creature sinfull, how to know it.	460
The Saints <i>love</i> themselves as well as others.	497
<i>Love</i> makes serviceable to God and man	513

*See Bondage.*

*Low.*

Things many times succede best when we are <i>low</i> .	86
God can satisfie in a <i>low</i> condition.	132

*Lusts.*

<i>Lusts</i> , satisfiing of them the ground of it.	21
<i>Lusts</i> at Gods command.	123
<i>Lusts</i> , why they are suffered to remaine in Gods children.	124
<i>Lusts</i> ,	124

# THE TABLE,

<p><i>Lusts</i>, why men despaire of overcoming them, 125</p> <p><i>Lusts</i> prevaile over an imperfect heart, 126</p> <p><i>Lusts</i> compared to fetters, 199</p> <p><i>Lusts</i>, the cause of unquietnesse. 211</p> <p><i>Lusts</i> cannot bee overcome by mans strength, 348</p> <p><i>Lust</i> subdued by Christ, as King, 376</p> <p><i>Lusts</i>, the roote of them, 4:8</p> <p><i>Lusts</i> referred to three heads, Ibid:</p> <p><i>Lust</i>, God can heale the strongest, 439</p> <p>See eye.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;"><i>Minde.</i></p> <p>Double-minded man, who. 11</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Misery</i>, see <i>Time.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b>N</b></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Nature, Naturall.</i></p> <p>GOD alters no Law of <i>Nature.</i> 146</p> <p>The workes of GOD in <i>nature</i>, what they should teach us. 96</p> <p><i>Nature</i> of things changed by GOD. 118</p> <p>The creatures leade answerable to their <i>Natures.</i> Ibid.</p> <p><i>Naturall</i> man knoweth not spirituall things. 275</p> <p>See Imperfect.</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Neere</i>, see <i>Ways.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Neglect, Negligence.</i></p> <p><i>Neglect</i> of the least actions a note of un-soundnesse, 243</p> <p><i>Negligence</i> causeth us to misse the right time, 611</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>New.</i></p> <p>Nothing <i>new</i> but grace. 145</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b>O</b></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Oath.</i></p> <p>The New Covenant confirmed by an <i>Oath.</i> 367</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Obedience.</i></p> <p><i>Obedience</i>, the parts of it. 23</p> <p><i>Obedience</i> to GOD, nothing lost by it. 25</p> <p><i>Obedience</i> imperfect, comfort in it. 102</p> <p><i>Obedience</i>, God can make us yeeld it perfectly, if he will. 103</p> <p><i>Obedience</i>, we give nothing to GOD by it, 106</p> <p><i>Obedience</i>, an effect of saving knowledge, 450</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Occasion.</i></p> <p>Law full things to bee forborne, when they be the occasions of <i>Sinne</i> 204</p> <p>Occasions ourward, forable 212</p>
<p style="text-align: center;"><b>M.</b></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Madnesse.</i></p> <p><i>Madnesse</i>, an effect of it, 146</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Meanes.</i></p> <p><i>Meanes</i> ill used to bring things to pass. 20</p> <p><i>Meanes</i> good used, Ibid:</p> <p>God can doe great things by weak <i>meanes</i>, 84</p> <p><i>Meanes</i> blasted by GOD when wee trust them, 94</p> <p><i>Meanes</i> used by GOD that wee thinke not of. 168</p> <p><i>Meanes</i>, looking much at them, a signe wee beleve not GODS All-sufficiency 166</p> <p><i>Meanes</i>, our pace in GODS wayes must answer them, 208</p> <p>See comfort, integrity.</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Meditation.</i></p> <p><i>Meditation</i> of the Law, a helpe to keepe it, 475</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b>MELCHIZEDECK.</b></p> <p><i>Melchizedeck</i> his blessing of <i>Abraham</i>, 355</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Mercy</i> see <i>Covenant.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Messenger.</i></p> <p>Christ the <i>Messenger</i> of the Covenant, why. 502</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Might.</i></p> <p>A perfect man serveth GOD with all his <i>might.</i> 295</p>	<p style="text-align: center;"><i>Offence.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;">K k 2</p>



THE TABLE,

<i>Offence,</i>	<i>Path.</i>
Offence must not be taken at Gods dealing, 534	Pathes that men walk in, sinne, and righteousnessse. 104
<i>Office.</i>	Path in a Christians iourney threefold, 190
The excellency of Christs priestly office. 374	Christ the path how, Ibid.
The excellency of his propheticall office. 375	The Spirit the path how, Ibid.
Office of Christ as King 373	Path how to finde it, two wyses. 192
See perswade.	<i>Peace.</i>
<i>Opportunity.</i>	Peace, Christ gives it as King. 378
Opportunity present must be taken, 434	Peace spirituall a part of the Covenant, 380
Opportunity present, motives to lay hold on it. 436	Peace outward a part of the Covenant. 381
<i>Oppresse, see Promise.</i>	Peace, God speakes not alway, to his people, and why, 415
<i>Ordinances.</i>	Peace a consequent of the Spirit, 421
Ordinances, a perfect heart seeth God in them, 315	The creature at peace with Gods children 482
Ordinances, how to know when we use them aright by seaven things, 521	Peace wicked men may have for a time. 485
<i>Outward.</i>	Peace the end of the godly, 546
Outward good things are the Lords, 126	<i>Perfect, Perfectnesse.</i>
Outward things, seaven inconveniencies in them, 151	Perfectnes more or lesse from whence it is 175
Outward enemies, victory over them, a part of the covenant, 379	perfectnes God perswades unto it, and by what argument, Ibid
Outward blessings a part of the Covenant, 440, 476	Perfect men have interest in Gods All-sufficiency. 214
Outward things how to neglect them. 496	Perfectnesse a signe of it, 226
Outward things, not to iudge men by them, 551	Perfect man his rule, 232
Outward things, not to ioy or grieve over much for them, 561	Perfectnesse, how to try it, 235
Outward things wee should be weaned from, 562	Perfectnes, sixe properties of it. 236
<b>P</b>	<i>Persevere.</i>
<i>Passion.</i>	Why Christians persevere in all conditions, 496
Passion causeth men to misse the right time. 608	<i>Perswade.</i>
Passion like drunkennesse. 609	The office of the holy Ghost to perswade. 488
<i>Patience.</i>	God onely able to perswade. 489
Patience its perfect worcke, what, 300	See All sufficiency,
	<i>Plaine, see Wayes.</i>

THE TABLE

<p style="text-align: center;"><i>Place.</i></p> <p>The creatures continue where GOD hath placed them. 154</p> <p>See content,</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Pleasure.</i></p> <p>Christians exalt GOD in their pleasures. 285</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Power.</i></p> <p>Power of GOD questioned in doubting of forgiveness, 111</p> <p>Power of GOD to forgive sinnes, 112</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Prayse.</i></p> <p>Prayse, seeking it from men, the cause of it. 19</p> <p>Prayse, grace brings it, 141</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Practise.</i></p> <p>Practise of good, 112</p> <p>See knowledge,</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Prayer.</i></p> <p>Spirit of prayer. 403, 417</p> <p>We are more ready to prayer, than to give thanks, and why. 582</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Presse.</i></p> <p>Presse hard to the marke, a property of perfectness, 258, 262</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Preparation.</i></p> <p>Preparations outward not to be discouraged for want of them, 578</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Principle, see Course.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Pride.</i></p> <p>Pride of life, 429</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Promise.</i></p> <p>Promises of the new Testament better than of the old, 329</p> <p>Promise to Abraham, difficulties in it, 353</p> <p>Promises all accomplished in Christ, 360</p> <p>Promises made sure to us by faith, 364</p> <p>The covenant on Gods part is a promise, 365</p> <p>The covenant confirmed by promise, 367</p> <p>Promise made to Christ, what, 387</p> <p>Promises made to us are passive. Ibid</p>	<p>Promise of GOD two things in it, 397</p> <p>Promise how wee looke on it, 412</p> <p>Promises who they are made to, 413</p> <p>Promises wee should apply them to comfort us, 467</p> <p>Promises of the covenant threefold, 468</p> <p>Promises should be expected by us, 476</p> <p>Promises, instances of applying them, 478</p> <p>See Christ.</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Profit.</i></p> <p>Holy men exalt GOD in their profit, 245</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Priesthood.</i></p> <p>Priesthood of Christ, the excellency of it, 358</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Prophet.</i></p> <p>Whom Christ teacheth as a prophet, 607</p> <p>What Christ teacheth us to know as Prophet, 174</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Promiscuously.</i></p> <p>GOD dispenseth things here promiscuously for foure reasons, 534</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Prosperity, see Good.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Providence.</i></p> <p>Providence of GOD proved by his All-sufficiency, 158</p> <p>Providence of God proved by four things 159</p> <p>Providence of GOD seen in casual things 161</p> <p>Providence of GOD observed by upright men, 314</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Purgeth.</i></p> <p>Faith purgeth the heart. 346</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Purpose.</i></p> <p>Purpose of God firme, 578</p> <p>Purpose of man defeated by GOD. 579</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Purgatory.</i></p> <p>Purgatory refused, 507</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Purifie, Puritie.</i></p> <p>Purity what. Pure</p> <p>Pure heart casts out sinne, 220</p> <p>A perfect heart purifies it selfe, 247</p>
--	--

T H E T A B L E.

To purifie a mans selfe, a consequent of  
the Spirit. 419  
To be pure what, 514  
Pure man who. 517

Q.

*Quietnesse.*

Quietnesse of spirit an effect of sincerity. 309  
Lusts hinder quietnesse, 311

R.

*Ranke, see Divide.*

*Reason.*

Gods commands are grounded on reason, 32.64

*Regenerate.*

Regenerate men, the cause of their un-  
vennesse. 7

*Reproches.*

Reproches, why we are so sensible of them 19

*Rejoyce.*

Rejoyce in our selves we must not, 502

*Repentance.*

Repentance, a part of the covenant on  
both parts, 387  
Repentance, the act of it ours, the power  
Gods. 389

*Remisnesse.*

Remisnesse in Gods cause a note of un-  
sounnesse.

*See Divide.*

*Redemption.*

The works of redemption perfect in parts 215

*Renew.*

How to get the heart renewed, 333

*See Esie.*

*Relapse.*

An unsound heart cannot but relapse, 248  
A holy man may relapse into sinne, 250

A holy man gets ground by his relapses. 1bid

Differences between the relapses of Chri-  
stians and others. 1bid, 4.

Relapses discover hidden corruptions. 252

*Reject, see God.*

*Reward.*

Reward, a Christian may lose part of it. 265

Rewards God useth a liberty in them, 533

The day of iudgement the time of re-  
wards 539

*Respect.*

To respect Gods commands what 290

How other respects besides Gods com-  
mand should move to actions. 293

*Readinesse, see Duty.*

*Righteous.*

Faith makes righteous. 13

*Rich.*

Rich in mercy what. 112

Riches of two sorts. 140

Gods favour maketh rich. 337

*Runne, see wayes.*

*Rule, see Perfect.*

S.

*Sabboth.*

Sabbath for mans good. 105

*Sacrament.*

Sacrament sealeth both parts of the Co-  
venant. 180

Sacrament, what God offers in it. 1bid

Sacrament, the Covenant renewed in it. 438

*Sacrifice.*

Sacrificing what meant by it. Eccle 9. 1, 2 519

*Safrie.*

Safety, none out of Gods wayes. 202

Safety, a part of our wayes. 207

Safety none in outward things. 574

Safety onely in God. 587

*Sa'va.*



THE TABLE

<p style="text-align: center;"><i>Salvation.</i></p> <p><i>Salvation</i> is that a Christian travaileth unto, 184</p> <p><i>Salvation</i>, on what ground we looke for it, 350</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Sanctification.</i></p> <p><i>Sanctification</i>, what course the Spirit takes to worke it, 453</p> <p><i>Sanctification</i> a part of Gods Covenant 473</p> <p><i>Sanctification</i>, a triall of it, 516</p> <p>See All-sufficiency.</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Satisfie, see Desire.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Scandall.</i></p> <p><i>Scandall</i> must not betaken at GODS dealing with the Church, 338</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Seale.</i></p> <p>The Covenant confirmed by <i>seales</i>, 368</p> <p><i>Seales</i> of the covenant signes of our faith 369</p> <p>The spirit of GOD a <i>seale</i>, 416</p> <p>See Covenant. <i>See.</i></p> <p>A perfect heart <i>seeth</i> God, and how, 314</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Seede.</i></p> <p><i>Seede</i> of the serpent, who, 352</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Selfe-love.</i></p> <p><i>Selfe-love</i> inordinate healed, how, 146</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Seeke, Seeking.</i></p> <p><i>Seeking</i> to God, what it imports, 169</p> <p><i>Seeking</i> a mans selfe, the cause of it, 178</p> <p>A disposition in the Saints to <i>seeke</i> God, 463</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Serve, Service.</i></p> <p><i>Service</i>, God needs it not from us, 103</p> <p><i>Service</i> of Satan hurtfull, 106</p> <p><i>Service</i> of Satan, a Christian travaileth from it, 168</p> <p><i>Service</i> of God, a Christian would not be free from, 462</p> <p><i>Serve</i> God many doe in part, 562</p> <p>See Might, Love.</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Servant, see Creature.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Shrinke, see Vnsound.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Sight.</i></p>	<p>A found heart approves it selfe in Gods <i>sight</i>, 234</p> <p>A found heart will endure the triall of Gods <i>sight</i>. 235</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Sincerity.</i></p> <p><i>Sincerity</i> required in all duties, 1</p> <p><i>Sincerity</i>, the ground of it, 2</p> <p><i>Sincerity</i>, the nature of it, 10</p> <p><i>Sincerity</i>, all that wee doe is nothing without it, 218</p> <p><i>Sincerity</i> and uprightnesse, what, 219</p> <p><i>Sincerity</i> shewed by five expressions, Ibid.</p> <p><i>Sincerity</i>, sixe effects of it, 281</p> <p><i>Sincerity</i>, a tryall of it, 293</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Sin.</i></p> <p><i>Sin</i>, the nature of it, 10, 15</p> <p><i>Sin</i>, the cause of it, 15, 16</p> <p><i>Sin</i> killed by grace, 115</p> <p><i>Sin</i>, that which a Christian travaileth from, 186</p> <p><i>Sin</i>, the pathes of it many, Ibid.</p> <p><i>Sin</i> resisted by a found heart, 254</p> <p>One <i>sin</i> may breake the Covenant, 465</p> <p>See Curse, Feare, Emptiness.</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Single, see Heart.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Slownesse.</i></p> <p><i>Slownesse</i> in Gods wayes, the cause of it, 198</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Soundnesse</i></p> <p><i>Soundnesse</i>, what, 223</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Soule.</i></p> <p><i>Soule</i> not satisfied with finite things, 35</p> <p><i>Soule</i> not filled but with God, &amp; why, 46</p> <p><i>Soule</i>, when God fills it, other things appeare little, 77</p> <p>The <i>soule</i> is best many times in a low condition, 339</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Spare.</i></p> <p>God disposeth things promiscuously to <i>spare</i> men, 535</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Spirit, Spirituall.</i></p> <p>God must have the strength of our <i>spirits</i>, 62</p> <p><i>Spirit</i> of man stablished by God, 97</p> <p style="text-align: right;">The</p>
---	--

THE TABLE.

The covenant of grace the ministrations of the <i>Spirit</i> .	320	Our strength out of our selves why.	473
The <i>Spirit</i> given more abundantly since Christ,	329	No man strong in his owne strength,	565
<i>Spirituall</i> things better than temperall,	336	God takes away strength when men shold use it,	567
<i>Spirit</i> , adouble infusion of it,	347	See <i>Spirit</i> .	
<i>Spirit</i> , the giving of it a part of the Covenant,	383	<i>Sunne</i> , see <i>Vanitie</i> .	
<i>Spirit</i> , tryalls whether wee have it or no,	394	<i>Sufferings</i> .	
How to know wee have the <i>Spirits</i> witness,	403	<i>Sufferings</i> , why they bee easie to the Saints,	59
The testimony of our owne <i>Spirit</i> ,	399	What makes Christians suffer hardship,	166
Our <i>Spirit</i> enlightned cannot deceive in its testimony,	Ibid	<i>Sure</i> .	
<i>Spirit</i> of God the testimony of it,	400	How things come to be <i>sure</i> to us.	501
<i>Spirit</i> witness after blood and water,	401	<i>Success</i> .	
What it is that accompanieth the <i>Spirit</i>	410	<i>Success</i> good or evill should not move us much,	581
<i>Spirits</i> testimony who have it;	417	<i>Success</i> in good and evill, weemust acknowledge God in it,	582, 583
<i>Spirit</i> sixe consequents of it,	Ibid	<i>Suddaine</i> .	
Tryall of having the <i>Spirit</i> .	420	Wicked men dye <i>suddainely</i> , though they live long,	550
<i>Stablish</i> , see <i>Spirit</i> .		<b>T</b>	
<i>State</i> .		<i>Testament</i> .	
<i>State</i> present best for us,	24	<i>Testament</i> olde and new sixe differences betweenethem,	326
See <i>Content</i> .		<i>Thankfulnesse</i> .	
<i>Staine</i> .		All things are in Christs hands to teach us	
<i>Staine</i> of sinne washed what,	515	<i>Thankfulnessse</i> .	507
<i>Straight</i> , see <i>Wayes</i> .		<i>Thirsting</i>	
<i>Step</i> .		<i>Thirsting</i> double,	227
Every action in our life a step	182	<i>Thirsting</i> after Christ required,	413
Actions fitting to our callings, <i>steps</i> ,	183	<i>Tithe</i> .	
Every <i>step</i> in our way should be pondred,	195	<i>Tithe</i> a signe of homage,	356
<i>Stepping</i> out of Gods wayes brings miserie,	200	<i>Time</i> .	
<i>Striving</i> .		Wicked men may follow GOD for a <i>time</i> ,	404
This life is the time of <i>striving</i> ,	539	<i>Time</i> accepted, once past, unrecoverable,	437
<i>Strength</i> .		Gods <i>time</i> is the due time.	545
We stand in Gods strength.	124	We must observe GODS <i>times</i> .	555
		<i>Times</i>	

THE TABLE.

Times not at mans disposing	585
Times allotted to each action.	591
Things beautifull in their time.	593
Gods pre togative to appoint the time	594
It is heard to find out the right time I bid	
Time missed bringeth misery.	595
Instances of missing the time.	596
Time must be looked to in our actions, & leaven, mentioned,	600
Miserie of Saul for missing his time.	604
Causes of missing the time.	605
Directions to finde the time.	606

*Try, Tryall.*

Difference in the same <i>tryall</i> betweene Saints and others.	483
The miserie of those that <i>try</i> not their condition.	508
<i>Tryall</i> , why wee are loath to come to it.	509
<i>Tryals</i> of a mans condition foure.	510
Things dispensed promiscuously by God to <i>try</i> men.	534

*Trouble*

Wicked men in trouble runc from God.	404
See Church.	

*Treasures,*

By what meanes God bringeth forth his <i>treasures</i> .	537
<i>Treasures</i> of mercy bestowed on the godly, how.	358

*Trust.*

Nothing must bee ioyned with God in our trust.	86
Instances of, trusting God.	I bid
We should trust God alone and why,	90
Why one man <i>trusts</i> God, and not another,	292
See workes,	

*Truth.*

Leading into the <i>truth</i> ,	493
---------------------------------	-----

*Turne, see GOD*

V

*Value, see Grace.*

*Vanity*

<i>Vanity</i> of earthly things,	70.149
Why we see not <i>vanity</i> in earthly things two causes	156
<i>Vanity</i> of the creature taught by Christ alone,	429
All things under the Sunne subiect to <i>vanity</i>	555
<i>Vanity</i> of great men,	560

*Vile.*

Seeing our selves <i>vile</i> a signe of beleeving Gods All sufficiency,	168
Good men <i>vile</i> in their owne eyes, why.	423

*Vneuenesse.*

<i>Vneuenesse</i> in oui wayes, the ground of it,	468
---	-----

*Vnsound.*

<i>Vnsoundnesse</i> one note of it,	25
All Gods dealings will not keepe an <i>vnsound</i> man from sinne,	249
An <i>vnsound</i> man fayles in his ayme,	259
<i>Vnsound</i> men thinke well of God by fits,	271
<i>Vnsoundnesse</i> discovered by remisnesse in Gods worke,	298
<i>Vnsound</i> men shrinke in sometryalls,	300
Chusing in Gods wayes a note of <i>vnsoundnesse</i> ,	305
See heart, interruption,	

*Vpright.*

<i>Vpright</i> man his ayme,	232
------------------------------	-----

VV

*Wages, see Safetic.*

*Wayes.*

How to know wee have chosen GODS wayes,	194
A length in GODS wayes	197



THE TABLE.

<i>Wayes of God straight,</i>	199	ward things.	339
<i>Instances of stepping out of GODS wayes</i>	201	<i>Will.</i>	
<i>Wayes of GOD the plainest,</i>	202	God guideth mens wills.	50
<i>A breadth in GODS wayes.</i>	203	To be filled with the will of God.	289
<i>Way, broder to us then to the Iewes I bid</i>		<i>Willing, see perfect.</i>	
<i>Our care must be to bee found in Gods wayes.</i>	205	<i>Wise, Wisedome.</i>	
<i>Danger of being out of Gods wayes</i>	206	<i>Wisedome mortall the vanity of it.</i>	147
<i>Wee must runne in Gods wayes.</i>	208	<i>Wise men die as well as foolish</i>	155
<i>See case, step, walke.</i>		<i>Wisedome directs a mans way.</i>	Ibid.
<i>Walke.</i>		<i>Wisedome better then folly.</i>	Ibid.
<i>A Christian life like a walke.</i>	181	<i>A perfit heart esteemes the Gospell wise-dome.</i>	272
<i>walking what meant by it.</i>	182	<i>Wisedome spirituall humbleth a man.</i>	275
<i>walking in Gods wayes.</i>	606	<i>Wisedoms spiritual foure marks of it</i>	Ibid.
<i>Washed see Guilt</i>		<i>Wise dome in Salomon twofold.</i>	340
<i>Want.</i>		<i>Wisedome magnified by Salomon why.</i>	450
<i>Why the Saints Want many good things they desire,</i>	127	<i>God onely wise.</i>	489
<i>See good.</i>		<i>Not to leane to our owne wisedome</i>	606
<i>Watch.</i>		<i>Workē</i>	
<i>The times hid from us to make us watch.</i>	594	God workes out workes, when.	588
<i>Wee should watch our selves in actions concerning others.</i>		<i>World, see Divell.</i>	
<i>Wee should watch our sines in actions concerning our selves.</i>	600	<i>Word see feare.</i>	
<i>Water.</i>		<i>Writing</i>	
<i>The witnesse of the water.</i>	398	<i>Writing the Lavv in the heart explained three wayes.</i>	322
<i>Weaknesse</i>		<i>Writing the Law in the heart the manner of it.</i>	324
<i>weaknesse discovered in looking to out-</i>		<i>Writing the Law in the heart the order of it.</i>	325

---

FINIS.

---









